SWALLOWED STAR

BOOK 07

I Eat Tomatoes

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Swallowed Star

(*The Legend Of Spacewalker*)

(*Tun Shi Xing Kong*)

(吞噬星空)

by

I Eat Tomatoes

(*Wo Chi Xi Hong Shi*)

(我吃西红柿)

Synopsis

Year 2056, in a city in the Yuan Jiang Su Jin area.

On top of a ruined, shattered six story residential apartment sits a teenager wearing a combat vest, militaristic trousers, and alloyed battle boots.

On his back is a hexagonal shield and equipped is a blood-shadow battle knife.

He sits there silently on the edge of the roof. At this time, the sparkling sky was shining and there was a refreshing breath within the air that blew towards him.

However, there was only silence within the ruined, deserted city, with an occasional howl that makes your heart skip a beat.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by the team @ Wuxia Translations, Translation Nations, and Qidian International.

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 701: Mad Explosions

Nurturing a plant life form was a very extravagant thing to do, like nurturing the cloud contact vine to sector lord level 9. Even if one scrimped on it, it would still require 10,000-20,000 mixed elements, and for one as high a level as Luo Feng's the cost could reach up to 100,000 mixed elements!

100,000 mixed elements, just how much was that?

An undying general's average wealth was only about 10,000 mixed elements, a human sector lord warrior's average wealth was only at 10 mixed elements!

It may seem like the Flame wind organization was huge, owning so many slave planets. However, one had to know that one galaxy was usually not even worth 1 mixed element. Even the entire Black Dragon Mountain star field was worth only about 300,000 to 1 million mixed elements Luo feng's expense on the cloud contact vine alone was worth the entire starfield!

One could only imagine the costs!

Without proper funding, it was best not to mess with the plant life forms. The more normal a plant life form was, like the metal vine with its limited capabilities as a universe level 9 metal vines was already rarely seen. For them to actually break through to domain lord or sector lord, the costs would be even more than that of the cloud contact vine evolving!

Metal vine reaching sector lord level 9! The costs must have been extreme!

Sha Luo flower reaching sector lord level 9! Obviously this was also a high leveled Sha Luo flower.

Nurturing the two must have cost over 100,000 mixed elements!

Even a normal undying wouldn’t be able to have such wealth.

"He is just the boss of the flame wind organization. For his wealth to reach tens of mixed elements alone should be considered not bad. How did he nurture two plant life forms?" Luo Feng was shocked. "And from the Virtual Universe Company’s information back then, Pan Xi relied on the metal vine to take over the slave planet. However, back then, it was only at star traveller level 9, who’d expect it to be sector lord level 9 now."

...

"Sha Luo, capture him." Pan Xi communicated mentally while controlling the sector lord level 9 Sha Luo Flower.

He had acquired the metal vine by chance when he was young, it was the crutch that changed his fate.

The Sha Luo Flower was something he bought when he grew to power. He nurtured it from young and was his strongest trump card.

As he had remained low profile all this while, even though he had used it several times before, he always killed off all his enemies. Hence, the fact that he had a metal vine and Sha Luo flower both at sector lord level 9 had been a secret, even the Virtual Universe Company's information system couldn't know.

No matter what, the Virtual Universe Company couldn't reach the level of all knowing.

Just like how when Luo Feng chased down the 102 hundred million targets back then, with a few managing to hide in some desolate planets. Luo Feng was unable to locate them in the end.

The many bright colored flowers of the Sha Luo flower were as fast as lightning. In less than 0.001 seconds, they had passed over tens of km and were wrapping around Luo Feng.

Luo Feng dodged as quickly as he could, staring at the devil like flowers, simultaneously shouting mentally to Babata, "Babata! Quickly!"

"Coming!"

Rumble!

The Yun Mo planet ship that had been floating beside Dylan fiercely accelerated, the blood colored triangular ship, its sides alone were sharp enough to easily slice through a planet. Even

against asteroids, it's speed would hardly be affected.

F9 grade metal engravings support by the Virtual Universe Company!

How powerful was that?

Hua!

Hua!

Almost like a blade cutting through grass, as the ship flew at the Sha Luo flowers, they instantly spread open. The fully bloomed flowers were incredibly huge, easily swallowing up the entire Yun Mo planet ship. It's dense sharp teeth bit down. However, after a while, it exploded open, as the ship had cut right through the flower while its speed was hardly even affected at all.

At 290,000 km per second, its terrifying speed pierced right through!

Slashing through the plants!

As it brushed past, the Sha Luo flowers were instantly sliced apart, it let out all sorts of howls and the powerful ripples of noise resounded within space. One could visibly see these noise ripples warping the space about. The Sha Luo flower tried to dodge... however with its huge size, and the cloud contact vine wrapping about it, how could it?

The metal vine wanted to dodge too, however it was deeply entangled by the cloud contact vine.

Hua! Hua!

The Yun mo planet ship arced and slashed through large amounts of vines, heading towards Pan Xi.

"How can this..." Pan Xi stared wide eyed, almost in disbelief at the powerful ship.

Hu!

The metal vine wrapped about him tightly and tugged him strongly, allowing him to dodge the slice of the ship.

"Babata, continue!" Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed in space.

"Haha, understood."

Babata continued to control the entire ship to rush Pan Xi down, this triggered a feeling of nostalgia for him, almost like when he had followed Hu Yan Bo back then. However compared to then, the ship now was much more powerful. While it’s slicing abilities were already astounding back then, slashing through asteroids like tofu, it was even stronger now after the Virtual Universe Company had upgraded it.

Its defenses were so powerful even an emperor level undying would have to work really hard to break through.

Normal undyings wouldn’t even dare get close to it.

Naturally...

Undyings had great dodging speeds. Actually, even sector lords could dodge very well, at least much faster than a ship’s dodging ability.

"Big trouble, his cloud contact vine is actually stronger than my metal vine, and the cloud contact vine is huge and extremely sturdy. Even if it cannot win against my Sha Luo flower, it can still hold it in place. The moment it’s restrained...both the metal vine and Sha Luo flower became targets." Pan Xi’s expression changed.

Hua!

Hua!

The Yun Mo planet ship flashed past like lightning time and again. Its sides acted like a huge axe slashing through, as large amounts of vines were chopped off. Large amounts of flowers were chopped off, with the cloud contact vine restraining them, the two plants were completely demolished.

"Haha!"

"Gagaga."

Babata's piercing cackling laughter resounded throughout the control room of the Yun Mo planet ship.

After being sliced through many times, the two plant life forms were heavily damaged and their strengths greatly diminished. Afterall, they were both not reputable for their cell regeneration.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The automaton ship was summoned out by Luo Feng too.

The two ships together fiercely attacked and fired off at the plants, finishing off the already weakened Sha Luo flower and metal vine. With Babata's precise calculations, the attacks mostly all landed on these two plants, hardly ever hitting the cloud contact vine.

Even if it was hit, while the cloud contact vine's offense wasn't as strong as the Sha Luo flower, its regeneration was much stronger.

...

After a flurry of attacks, especially with the automaton ship as the main force, with a force akin to a full undying's attack, the Sha

Luo Flower and the metal vine were blasted into nothing, along with Pan Xi within!

Over!

"It’s ended." Luo Feng stood in space and smiled at the scene, simultaneously closing off the synchronized broadcast with the virtual universe network.

Mission complete!

"Waa..." Babata and his subsidiary AI controlled both ships and flew towards Luo Feng.

"Luo Feng, that was too thrilling, I haven’t felt like this in a very long time. This Yun Mo planet ship is seriously overpowered, its acceleration and instantaneous direction change is over 80% stronger than before. Along with the engravings on it, its slicing power is seriously absurd, slicing through the Sha Luo Flower and metal vine was too easy."

Luo feng smiled, communicating mentally, "Upgrading the Yun Mo planet ship cost me 100s of thousands of mixed elements. And this is with my primal region member discount! Do you think their upgrade would be a joke?"

...

Luo Feng flew forward while communicating mentally with

Babata.

After Pan Xi's death, his internal world crumbled and large amounts of items floated about. Scanning with his spirit energy, Luo Feng didn't discover any special items. However...he still kept everything within his world ring. Due to him having two sector lord level 9 plants, Luo Feng felt...that Pan Xi should have some secret.

"Dylan, mission complete, let's go." Luo Feng said.

"Using two ships and the cloud contact vine, your power was pretty strong." Dylan smiled, "When your cloud contact vine reaches sector lord level 9, with its regenerative abilities, and sturdiness...normal sector lords would find it hard to free themselves from it. First, you constrain them and then use the Yun Mo planet ship to slice through them, hehe..."

Luo Feng laughed too.

Sou!

The Yun Mo planet ship floated in space and opened its cabin doors.

"Luo Feng, please enter the ship." Babata's voice was passionate as it resounded within the entrance.

"Haha."

Luo Feng and Dylan laughed and flew in.

After entering the ship, Luo Feng finally checked his extravagant buy, the world ring with a diameter of over a hundred million km, the one he bought back then in Wu Long starfield.

The reason why a sector lord's internal world was small was because their main core couldn't withstand it.

And as one could use valuable materials to create the world rings, they weren't limited to the main core, hence they could create huge worlds.

...

Within the world ring.

A vast land over a hundred million km, with the continent as the main center piece, the endless continent had rocks, mud etc. Of which a piece of mud was the mosha clansman.

Shua!

The piece of mud became a black energy flow and with a warp, it became a black clothed Luo Feng.

When Luo Feng was attacked back then in Wu Long starfield, he

had pondered hard, as he needed to take the main core with him, hence...he finally thought of a plan. Buying an extra large world ring and letting the mosha clansman take the main core, changing to a piece of mud and hiding within the endless space.

Whether it was the space ring or the world ring, both had to be scanned with spirit, undying or world energy.

And the scanning radius depended on the person's abilities.

For example!

In a world, a weak warrior could scan with his spirit energy several hundreds of km, while the strong could scan 100s of thousands of km. It all depended on their strength.

Only two places allowed for easy limitless scanning.

One was an internal world.

The second was the god country!

Scanning one's own internal world, with a thought, one could easily scan the entire area.

Scanning one's god country, it was similar to the internal world.

And the world ring was an independent world. Even if Luo Feng entered this world, he'd have to rely on his spirit energy to scan it well.

A world with a diameter of one hundred million km.

The bigger the world, the higher the gravity.

The higher the gravity, the smaller the scanning radius!

"If I encounter an enemy I cannot defeat, and the earth body is killed, I'll pretend like I was killed. Even if they acquire the world ring and scan it properly! With such terrifying gravity, and the same level of strength, they'd probably only be able to search 1/10,000 the area compared to the area on earth." Luo Feng thought, "One hundred million km in diameter, only a knight would be able to search through it all."

"And such a rough scan wouldn't be able to detect the mosha clansman's transformation. Only through deep scanning of every stone, every grain of sand...hehe, a world with a length and width of one hundred million km, to carefully scan through everything, it wouldn't be easy at all."

"As long as they didn't know my secret beforehand, who'd know I'd be hidden within?"

Changing into a piece of mud within such a large world.

Who’d expect it?

Who would be able to find him?

"Hm, let’s see just what Pan Xi had. I feel that he should have some secret." Black clothed Luo Feng looked at the distant flat lands, large amount of items were placed messily over there, it was all the items he had just collected.

…

Black clothed Luo Feng stood on the land surrounded by a mess of items, some were rather valuable. However, how high was Luo Feng’s perspective?

"All of these items added together wouldn’t even be worth 20 mixed elements."

"Seriously!"

Luo Feng shook his head and scanned 3 items.

Two space rings and one world ring.

"There might be something in the rings?" Black clothed Luo feng picked up a world ring and carefully scanned it, but was not able to discover anything.

"Could it be in the space ring, or did he really not have any secrets?" Luo Feng pondered. He carefully scanned the two space rings. The two rings were small within, one of them with only a diameter of several hundred meters while the other was even smaller with a diameter of only 100m.

After searching, he discovered nothing but small items within.

"Damn."

"I'll put everything in my internal world and scan them." Luo Feng thought, immediately retrieving all the items in the two space rings and one world ring."

After which he placed them in his internal world.

In his internal world, he was the dictator!

"There's really something special after all. I thought it was just large amounts of useless things, and this was just a very normal card. If it weren't in my internal world, it would be extremely hard to find anything special about it!"

Black clothed Luo feng's eyes gleamed, immediately entering the internal world, allowing the main core to revolve about and float about in the world of the world ring.

Chapter 702: Luo Ke Holy Water

Internal world.

Black clothed Luo Feng stood amidst the large amount of items. In his hand, he held a well carved silver card. Even though he had checked through Pan Xi's items in the world ring before, it was impossible for him to detect anything special. However, in his own internal world, he was the king within. Hence, his sensing abilities were much stronger, he immediately detected something different about this silver card...

"This is actually a card that stores a world within, I didn't even feel it before, what exquisite craftsmanship." Black clothed Luo Feng exclaimed softly.

Chi!

A thread of his world energy forcefully invaded that silver card. Within it even held a part of Pan Xi's memories, however without Pan Xi himself to support it, it was but a memory. It was quickly broken through and Luo Feng left his imprint within.

Luo Feng's world energy entered the silver card's world.

This was a tiny world with an area of only about 100km, other than a flat land and a river in the center of the world with a diameter of about 10 km, there wasn't anything else. The water was ice cold and cold air filled the entire world.

"What’s this?" Black clothed Luo Feng frowned.

The entire world, under careful examination seemed very normal, the continent was normal, but only the river seemed special.

However Luo Feng couldn’t recognize it.

...

"Babata!"

"Babata!" Black clothed Luo Feng’s consciousness connected to his own space ring and called out to Babata.

Other than the earth body itself which had Babata in him, the Yun Mo planet ship, black clothed Luo Feng, golden horned beast and the automaton ship all functioned with the AI that Babata had created. This subsidiary AI could be said to be Babata’s clone, Babata could control it.

It had all of Babata’s stored memories, only it lacked a living quality, it could only be considered the best of AIs.

Of course!

Normally when Luo Feng was in the Yun Mo planet ship,

Babata's main body would enter the ship and take over the control of the ship.

"Master." The AI said very respectfully.

"Come scan this, have you seen a river like this before?" With a thought, black clothed Luo Feng's consciousness entered the world.

Cold!

Even though he was an energy life form, he still shuddered slightly. This 100km area world was extremely cold, and the cold air all emanated from the river.

"Hm?" Black clothed Luo Feng suddenly felt a lot more comfortable, his life crystal seemed to have been provided some warmth.

"Master, I've seen this before." The AI shouted excitedly.

"Ah?" Black clothed Luo Feng asked, "What is it?"

"This is Luo Ke Holy water." The AI said. "Back then, the master had taken part in an auction, of which 1 cubic km of Luo Ke holy water was auctioned. Back then it was stored in a small world bracelet, I even remember its selling price was 8.9 million mixed elements."

Black clothed Luo Feng stared wide eyed.

My god!

8.9 million mixed elements? 1 li km?

"Pan Xi!" Black clothed Luo Feng turned fiercely and stared hard at the river, carefully scanning the entire area.

It's shape wasn't exactly round, it's largest diameter was 16.2 km, and the smallest at 10.3km. Also, the depth of the river was 3.2km. With black clothed Luo Feng's scanning abilities, he instantly measured it's entirety accurately. It was also the entire amount of the Luo Ke Holy water...712 cubic km!

How much was that?

According to the auction price, how much was it worth?

6.337 billion!

"6.3 billion mixed elements?" Luo Feng was stunned, completely stunned.

Was this a treat from heaven?

A beggar had suddenly found a gold mountain?

A punk from earth was suddenly informed by the Ganwu universe county's leader...you are my long lost son, I'll give the entire universe country to you!

It was this exact feeling.

Stunned!

"6.3 billion mixed elements, my god, I've really struck it rich. This is truly a huge fortune." Black clothed Luo Feng roared within.

"Luo Fu Qi board?"

"Yun Mo planet ship?"

"Void flame gold?"

"Purple 100 net leaf?"

Black clothed Luo Feng shivered. The wealth from before all added together was only about 10 million mixed elements. This was akin to a normal official level undying's wealth. Even if the soldier armor he acquired was very expensive, it was not usable by others. The rest of humanity probably couldn't use it. However this Luo Ke holy water was different, it was something that went

through auctions in humanity.

1 li km, that alone sold for 8.9 million mixed elements!

This river of his was worth over 6.3 billion mixed elements!

"Luo Ke Holy water, it's named after a legendary being of humanity Luo Ke from an extremely ancient time when the universe had just been born." The AI explained, "Back then he discovered this water unexpectedly. He found out that it had extraordinary life energy, it can be used to nurture plant life forms and heal the body. All in all, anything that can absorb life energy can use it, it has many uses, hence its price is also very high. The level of life energy it contains is extremely high, much more powerful than a life fruit. It has a very good effect of undying plant life forms, hence many undyings want to buy it."

Black clothed Luo Feng's eyes gleamed as he nodded, almost like a chicken pecking at rice.

Fortune.

He had struck it big.

A normal official level undying's wealth was only about 10 million mixed element, even an official pinnacle, probably only had 1 hundred million mixed elements max.

6.3 billion mixed elements, how much was that? That was

probably all of an emperor level undying's wealth! Of course for a being like True Yan that was close to becoming a knight...he was much more wealthy than normal emperor level undyings. To True Yan and Sky feather emperor, they wouldn't even flinch when tossing out treasures worth over millions of mixed elements.

"Master." The AI said respectfully. "Your treasures from before are mostly items used by official level undyings. This Luo Ke holy water however...is already the depths of an emperor level undying."

"The depths of an emperor level undying?" Luo Feng laughed.

This was a good comparison.

At different levels of strength, the difference was stark. A powerful emperor level undying could easily decimate a group of official level undyings, and the wealth they could acquire was also shocking. Naturally, they had extreme amounts of wealth! However even so, many emperor level undyings would probably have to take everything they had to buy this river of Luo Ke holy water.

"Hahaha..." Black clothed Luo Feng laughed loudly, "Looks like we cannot underestimate normal people at all."

"Even though Pan Xi was a big slave trader, he seemed normal, and many official level undyings wouldn't even give him a second look. Who'd have thought, he had Luo Ke holy water?" Black clothed Luo Feng laughed loudly. "He sure was cautious, even the

Virtual Universe Company didn’t know he had such a thing!"

The vast universe was extremely mysterious.

It had countless life forms, those with such encounters were definitely plenty.

If Luo Feng could have such things, others naturally did too!

Pan Xi did have such a miracle. Actually, he himself didn’t know that this was Luo Ke holy water, however as he used it to nurture his Metal vine, he was shocked to discover that it helped it evolve too easily. It evolved at an alarming rate, finally stopping only at sector lord level 9. And the amount of Luo Ke holy water he used on the Metal vine was but a small portion of it.

After which he used it to nurture the even more powerful Sha Luo flower, easily making it reach sector lord level 9!

He immediately understood...

This Luo Ke holy water was a treasure!

It took tens of thousands of mixed elements for a Sha Luo flower to reach sector lord level 9. However, he simply used a small bit of the Luo Ke Holy water and it did the trick. How much would the entire river be worth? Thinking of such a huge sum...he naturally felt fearful, he was clear that if he revealed just a little of it, the powerful undyings, even the maybe the Ganwu universe country

leader may act on him.

He was fearful!

Hence he hid it well and remained low profile, he kept it as his true trump card when he evolved. He also occasionally sipping some as he trained, speeding his training up. Hence even without a teacher, he was still able to breakthrough to sector lord level. This was the miraculous use of the Luo Ke Holy water.

"There are many miraculous encounters in the universe!"

"And the treasures are different in levels too. When I acquired the Yun Mo planet ship, the Luo Fu Qi board, the Purple 100 net leaf etc, they were all official level undying treasures. And now this...is truly a top class emperor level undying treasure." Black clothed Luo Feng's eyes gleamed, "6.3 billion mixed elements, billions!"

He couldn't help but get more excited as he thought about it.

...

Within the Yun Mo planet ship.

Luo Feng sat in his resting room, he couldn't help but smile excitedly.

"I’ve struck it rich."

"When I got lucky before, it was mostly in training. Like getting the beast god statue etc, these were all treasures I worked hard to get. And this, is truly good luck...almost like a treat from the heavens. My god, I never expected to have such a day. Haha..." Luo Feng was extremely pleased and carefree.

How carefree?

"With this river of Luo Ke holy water, I will have deeper pockets. I’ve been spending so much, without earning anything. Sooner or later I’d be left with nothing." Luo Feng smiled. "Now however, with this river..."

"Hm."

"Cloud contact vine." With a thought, he immediately placed the cloud contact vine within the world ring.

After which he kept the vine within his internal world.

After that, he placed it within the little world’s Luo Ke Holy water river.

World within another world...

"With this river, it’ll be very easy for the cloud contact vine to

reach sector lord level 9. Luo Feng thought. "Hm, however it won't be that easy to breakthrough to undying! Otherwise, after so many years, Pan Xi's metal vine and Sha Luo flower would long have broken through to undying. However with the help of this holy water, it'll probably help the cloud contact vine's chances a lot more in breaking through."

Luo Feng was extremely elated.

"Luo Feng, Luo Feng." Babata shouted, "There's mail."

"Mail?" Luo Feng was stunned.

Ah.

Looks like there was an outcome from the completion of the 1st level of the highest point mission.

Chapter 703: Knight's Visit

Luo Feng connected to the virtual universe network.

Virtual universe, Yu Xiang mountain's primal region, Luo Feng's villa.

"Teacher?" Luo Feng was shocked to see a silhouette within his living room, it was the golden armored ape man True Yan emperor. When True Yan saw Luo Feng, he smiled, "You've finally come."

"You are looking for me teacher?" Luo Feng asked curiously.

Babata who sat on Luo Feng's shoulder said with his piercing voice, "Luo Feng, the mail was sent by your teacher."

"I sent the mail to get you to come into the virtual universe as fast as possible." True Yan said.

Luo Feng smiled, "I have to say, I just killed Pan Xi, just completing the 1st level of the Highest points mission, I was shocked after receiving mail...I thought that the verdict of the mission was out that quickly, it'd probably have to take some time after all."

"You've finished the 1st level?" True Yan frowned.

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

"Tell me." True Yan ordered.

"Yes teacher." Luo Feng explained the entire mission to him, without withholding any information about his methods.

"You've killed quite a bit." True Yan smiled, "Very much like my style."

Luo Feng was stunned.

"Domain lord highest points missions are set to test the character." True Yan, as one of the upper level members of the virtual universe company, even though he wasn't the true top level, he was still clear on many things, he smiled casually and said, "Afterall, they can't spend their resources on nurturing just any genius, especially if one doesn't have any beliefs, are extremely selfish or will be a liability in the future in the outer region wars or secret regions."

Luo Feng nodded.

"The entire mission has to be synchronized online, they will judge your gaze, your every word, how you deal with the small members, how you punish the big figures, etc studying every bit of you." True Yan smiled, "They'll finally determine if you are fit to be nurtured, many absolute geniuses are judged from the 1st level completely."

"Teacher, do you think my 1st level will be able to pass 80% completion?" Luo Feng asked.

"It’s hard to say." True Yan said.

"Hard to say?" Luo Feng was curious.

It’s because I don’t know who is in charge of judging you." True Yan shook his head, "There are many amongst the top echelon of the virtual universe company, everyone has different characters, if it were your senior Bloodthirsty emperor, he would probably give you a high score. However some of them dislike geniuses who massacre so much, they might give you a lower score, after all, you did kill quite an absurd number of people this time. Over 1 million, and your methods were vicious, it’s obvious there’s blood thirst in your bones...some upper echelon members may dislike that."

Luo Feng was speechless.

So what if they disliked it, it was him!

"Teacher." Luo Feng didn’t want to think anymore about the mission, he smiled and asked, "Is there something you need from me?"

"An extremely important matter." True Yan’s expression grew serious.

"Hm?" Luo Feng was stunned.

"Let me know, other than Yan Zhu, have you messed with any important people in the Huge Axe dojo?" True Yan carefully analyzed Luo Feng's gaze.

Luo Feng was stunned.

"No." Luo Feng shook his head, "I've had some trouble with Yan Zhu, you know that well. As for others...I really cannot think of anyone else big that I've had issues with."

"Then that's strange." True Yan frowned.

"Why?" Luo Feng asked, feeling nervous.

True Yan said seriously, "An absolute being of the Huge Axe dojo...a being even more terrifying than Yan Zhu's father Shi Huo knight...Undying knight! He went through me to get your contact, and personally wishes to contact you."

"Undying knight?" Luo Feng was stunned, "Who is he?"

Undying?

This title sure was intimidating.

"Undying Knight is a true member of the upper echelon of the Huge axe dojo, he’s lived a much longer time than Shi Huo emperor. The title undying, means his ability to survive is incredibly strong, over long periods of time he’s experienced many life or death situations and yet he’s still alive. As for his strength and position, it’s definitely comparable to the Tian Shi palace leader of our virtual universe company." True Yan emphasized.

Luo Feng took a deep breath.

Undying knight?

Meeting him personally, he hadn’t even heard of this person before, why would he want to meet? And he was the upper echelon of the huge axe dojo, if it were the virtual universe company, it could be one that liked geniuses...however the other leviathans, they wouldn’t do this. Even if they wanted disciples, they’d have to go through the virtual universe company’s internal upper management to do so.

"Undying Knight’s teacher is the pinnacle of humanity." True Yan emphasized, :The creator of the Huge Axe dojo!"

Luo Feng opened his mouth but no words came out.

The creator of the Huge Axe dojo?

"The creator of the Huge Axe primal chaos tablet?" Luo Feng asked even though he knew.

True Yan nodded.

One of Humanity's treasures, the 52 chaos tablets, of which the Huge Axe tablet was ranked 1st, it had a total of 32 levels on the heavenly bridge, and the 2nd Universe tablet had 30 levels. Luo Feng trained in the 9 universe tablet that only had 27 levels! One could see the power just from the tablets and their levels.

To leave behind a tablet, one had to be an absolute pinnacle being.

The Huge axe tablet was ranked 1st!

And the huge axe dojo and the virtual universe company were both the 2 most powerful existences in humanity, the creator of the Huge Axe dojo...that level of power, one could only imagine. For True Yan to call him a true pinnacle being of humanity, it wasn't hard to understand.

"Damn." Luo feng's heart raced, his mind was in a flurry, "Power akin to Tian Shi palace leader, one of the top of the Huge Axe dojo, his teacher is an even more terrifying being. Why would such a powerful being even want to meet me, such a small figure?"

Luo feng was very clear on his position.

There were many geniuses, the absolute geniuses from the past 10,000 eras, during that same amount of time, another 10,000 such

geniuses could be born. And the universe had been around for an extremely long time, who knows how many absolute geniuses have been born, with miraculous encounters and all. Those that were able to survive to become a knight were extremely few.

Undying knight probably didn’t even care about True Yan, much less himself.

"Meet me?" Luo Feng was even more puzzled.

"Since you haven’t messed with anyone, and have no connection to him, I can relax." True Yan laughed carefree, "Go on with your life and await his call."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

His teacher left, leaving him alone in his study waiting patiently.

Fear?

Curiousity?

It was like if a normal person on earth was informed...by the president of America or china that they’d both come specially to meet him.

...

Every second felt like a year, Luo Feng didn’t know whether he’d have to wait for a day, a month or a year before Undying Knight would call him.

...

3 seconds after his teacher left, he got a call request.

"Anonymous number." Babata said.

"Connect."

Luo feng quickly stood up and pointed in mid air, a huge screen appeared and ripples and blurry waves filled the screen, powerful pressure emanated over from the screen, engulfing the entire study, Luo Feng couldn’t even resist it as he quickly bowed over, unable to lift his head.

Suddenly, an ear piercing strange laughter resounded, almost like glass scratching against a black board.

The pressure finally diminished.

Only then did Luo Feng lift his head and look at the silhouette on the screen, he seemed dressed in a weird armor, one couldn’t even say it was armor, it was like a blur of vines that formed it, countless vines that wrapped about him, his eyes glowed green. Luo Feng had only just met eyes with him before he fell into an endless nightmare illusion.

Countless demons howling making him unable to resist, in an instant, they devoured him.

"Ah." Only then did Luo Feng awake.

"Wawawa..." The strange laughter resounded from the silhouette behind the countless vines, shaking the space about.

"Even through a screen, he easily shook the virtual universe space, able to trap me in an illusion." Luo Feng finally felt the power of this absolute being, even though his willpower was sturdy, it was still like a blade against an endless swamp.

"Little punk, your willpower is not bad." The strange laughter resounded.

"You are?" Luo Feng asked respectfully.

"Me?" The strange sound rose fiercely, "I am the great Undying Knight, you can call me Undying Knight, remember, it’s Undying Knight. Not just Knight!"

Luo Feng was shocked within.

Is this undying knight mad?

"Greetings Undying Knight." Luo feng bowed respectfully.

"Hm."

His green eyes gleamed in the screen, scanning Luo Feng, suddenly he madly waved his armor, countless vines shook before he said satisfied, "Little punk, you are the leader of the milky way galaxy, earth's leader right?"

"Ah... yes!" Luo Feng reacted.

"That's good."

The weird temperamental undying knight laughed strangely, "I want to buy the milky way! Sell it to me, you can say any conditions, as long as I can, I will agree to it."

"Milky way?" Luo Feng was stunned.

A small galaxy...this was a true upper echelon member of the huge axe dojo, something that wouldn't appeal to this undying knight. Afterall, with his ability, building a universe country wasn't exactly a hard thing to do.

"With undying knight's ability, you can acquire the milky way galaxy, anytime." Luo Feng said.

"The 1,008 universe countries have their authorities, put in place by the 5 leviathans together, I cannot mess with that." The

countless vines on the screen shook, undying knight laughed strangely, "Hence I will buy it very normally, you are the leader, as long as you sell it to me, it’ll be over. Quickly, will you sell or not! My time is precious, I don’t have any to waste on you."

Chapter 704: Delivery

Luo Feng felt a formless pressure. The one talking to him was a true absolute being of the universe, an undying knight, and he had a weird temperament. The moment he was angered, calamities would occur. Luo Feng was but a small little ant compared to him. Simply relying on his connections alone, this undying knight could easily kill off Luo Feng without a trace.

"Undying knight." Luo Feng stood before the screen and bowed respectfully. "Great sir, would I dare to not sell you the milky way? I'm willing to give you all the planets in the milky way for free, however I wish to retain my home planet earth."

On the screen, undying knight was stunned. He blinked for a while, as his green eyes were filled with a sense of helplessness. He rubbed the greenish black vine by his ear before his piercing voice resounded again, "You are interesting. However, honestly, I wish to buy only the planet earth in this milky way, I'm not interested in any other planets."

Luo Feng who stood there respectfully was taken aback.

Wanting to buy earth?

"Why?" Luo Feng asked, "This small little earth is but a normal life planet, why do you want to buy it?"

"I naturally have my reasons." Undying knight seemed restless. The surrounding vines wrapped together as he roared, "Will you

sell or not!"

Luo Feng took a deep breath.

He bowed respectfully before emphasizing, "Undying knight, there are a trillion races within humanity itself, and the humans of earth belong to one of them. Just like the home of the Manka people is Manka planet, earth is the home to our earth humans. For my home, my comrades are all willing to die. Please forgive my disrespect, great undying knight...I cannot sell my home to you!"

After which, Luo Feng bowed again, awaiting undying knight's answer.

Silence!

In the screen, undying knight's green eyes gleamed, staring hard at Luo Feng. His formless pressure getting stronger and stronger, passing through the screen and pushing down Luo Feng's body. It caused his body to begin to crack, with loud pops, Luo Feng's leg broke apart and he was forced to kneel.

Still, he remained silent and waited for an answer.

"Wawawa..."

"Cackle..."

A weird enraged laughter resounded from undying knight's throat.

Among those that were familiar with him, how many dared to go against him? Amongst the knights in the Huge Axe Dojo, even though many had weird temperaments, they couldn't compare to undying knight's strangeness. He was proud and moody, and he enjoyed exploring dangerous universe secret regions, the more dangerous they were, the more he enjoyed them.

Even the great knights, in some universe secret regions, had to prepare for quite awhile, inviting some help before carefully exploring the areas.

Undying knight was completely different.

He took these dangerous places as a game. Frequently visiting the dangerous spots, exploring the terrifying regions, even the knights, at their level, if they explored these areas unprepared, sooner or later, they would fall. Undying knight however just didn't die.

His survival ability was very strong. Even the bug and automaton clans along with other powerful races knew, that there was a weirdo undying amongst the humans. Even within the many secret regions...he would find a way to survive.

He didn't open a universe country!

Not building his own sect and army! He didn’t fight for power or status!

He believed those were beneath him!

As proud and arrogant as he was, he would even scold other knights, and was extremely arrogant. He enjoyed taking risks...no matter how powerful his opponent was, he would still challenge them! Hence after knowing that this undying knight wished to speak to Luo Feng directly, True Yan was so scared he had to talk to him first, asking if Luo Feng had offended anyone close to undying knight.

"What guts, you actually dare to go against me." Undying knight’s voice pierced through Luo Feng’s ears, his eyes like 2 cold blades, piercing straight into his soul.

In the screen.

Luo Feng knelt there and said respectfully, "Selling my home, selling my earth comrades and land, I simply cannot do, please forgive me."

Undying knight stared at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng patiently awaited.

Deadlock...

1 second, 2, 3...10 seconds...

A total of half a minute.

"Ha, hahahaha..." Undying knight's laughter changed yet again. It made one's hair stand on end. "Punk, you sure got guts. Don't you know that by angering me, I can easily kill you, getting rid of little geniuses like you is too simple for me."

"I know." Luo Feng said respectfully.

As he chatted with undying knight, Luo Feng had already thought of all sorts of methods to deal with the situation. Unless he was forced on a path with no return, he would definitely not sell earth!

The moment it became undying knight's territory.

Whatever he did on earth, Luo Feng would have no power to intervene. Earth was the home of the earth humans...selling his home and leaving his comrades no place to return to, this was something he couldn't do.

Hence!

Luo Feng had thought it through, no matter what, he was an absolute genius of the Virtual Universe Company. And even

though that undying knight had an extremely high position and strength, he was still from the Huge axe dojo.

If he wanted to kill Luo Feng, that would be a disrespect to the Virtual Universe Company, and it would invite trouble for himself.

The chances of Undying knight killing Luo Feng was very low.

Of course...

With such a weird temperament as his, Luo Feng couldn't fully guess what would happen. Undying Knight could actually make a move to kill him, that was extremely simple for someone like him.

"If I don't sell him my home, he would want to kill me. Then...I would have to let Dylan immediately take me and teleport through his god country to earth." Luo Feng thought. Earth was his home, to rush home to earth as quick as possible, Luo Feng had let Dylan place an item as a marker there.

"After returning, I'll immediately keep earth in my internal world." Luo Feng thought.

There were indeed instances when a planet was placed in another world.

Luo Feng's internal world was big enough, it could withstand it. Just like the Manka planet was kept in a god country.

"Anyway, a few hundred years ago, earth still hadn't melded with the universe, they can still lead a happy life there. It's actually even safer within my internal world."

"Also!"

"My earth body will immediately head towards the Virtual Universe Company's primal region. The mosha clansman will take the main core and becoming a normal human, hiding in a distant universe country's life planet. With its cloning abilities, it wouldn't be discovered if it hid in those planets with mostly only star levels."

"When that happens, if undying knight wishes to kill me, he'd have to head to the primal region. I'd really like to see if he'd dare rush into the primal region and attack. If he succeeds, the powerful members of the Virtual Universe Company would be better off dead. It is the primal region after all! If they are killed by undying knight, I can totally give up on the Virtual Universe Company too." Luo Feng thought. "Even if he kills the earth body, my true strength is not affected at all."

This was Luo Feng's plan.

No big deal.

Either the fish dies or the net breaks!

If such a situation were to arise, and the Virtual Universe Company couldn’t protect him, then there was no need for him to work for them anymore. It would be better to hide off in a desolate planet, even exploring other mysterious places in the universe and training.

If he didn’t have such methods to hide himself, for the humans of earth’s safety, he may submit.

But since he had such trump cards, why should he?

No matter what happened later, Luo Feng maintained his respectful position and awaited undying knight’s answer.

"You know and yet you still defy me? Guts, you sure got guts." The Undying Knights laughter sounded satisfied. "I like people with guts. Unlike those knights who have so little guts that they are filled with such fear about exploring the secret regions. Haha, not bad at all. I like you, hence I’ll spare your little life, you can simply give me any island on earth and this matter is resolved, there shouldn’t be a problem with that right."

Luo Feng relaxed within, saying, "No problem, I will definitely prepare an island well for undying knight."

"Hm."

Undying knight nodded as his green eyes carefully examined Luo Feng, letting out a bone chilling laughter. "You little punk before

me, from start to end I've never seen you lose your composure, sturdy! Strong! Interesting, really interesting..." He vanished amidst the laughter.

The pressure within Luo Feng's study vanished too.

"Phew."

Luo Feng let out a long sigh of relief, sitting back on his chair.

"My god, this undying sure has a weird temperament. He's really strange." Luo Feng's forehead was beading with perspiration. "I was almost forced to abandon everything and wander the universe."

If undying knight had truly wanted to forcefully get earth, Luo Feng was already prepared to put earth in his internal world and wander.

On the same day he had the conversation with undying knight in the virtual universe, in the distant milky way, earth.

Earth, amazon forest.

The forest was extremely humid, the many thick trees had occasional beasts running through them. It was very rare to have beasts nowadays on earth, they had already become protected beings for viewing and study. And since the earth humans didn't wish to destroy the natural habitats of the huge amazon forest,

there was nobody about.

Weng...

A blurry red light engulfed the area, causing the surrounding space to ripple, after which 10 powerful beings appeared. All of them were dressed in either exquisite long robes or armors. They appeared together, with all sorts of appearances, however their energies were all terrifying. Of which, one of them...was the demonically beautiful Yan Zhu emperor.

"The last time I had someone place one of my undying crystals here, I didn’t expect to have to use it so quickly and teleport through my god country over. Amongst the many knights, my father’s underlings should be the earliest here on earth." Yan Zhu smiled satisfied, "I’ve done good work for my father this time."

Beside him, the other emperor level undyings smiled and nodded.

Chapter 705: Earth! Earth!

Yan Zhu emperor smiled satisfied.

How could he not?

Back when he arranged for someone to leave one of his undying crystals there, it was to prepare for when he could come and deal with Luo Feng someday. This petty action actually allowed him to help his father now!

"This earth is located in a remote location. No other undyings under the other knights would have left their markers here." A jade haired old man with a single horn laughed. "Without a marker, they have no way to teleport via god country over! Hence, we are definitely the fastest."

"Haha..." Yan Zhu's smile grew even wider.

A black armored lady with scales on her face nodded. "If the other knights sent their people here, they'd still have to teleport via their god countries to the closest nearby spot before flying slowly over in a ship. Black Dragon Mountain starfield...it's a very normal star field, with only 2 undyings. How many of the knight's underlings would have even left markers about."

They had to have markers left somewhere.

Only through that could they teleport via their god countries.

Back when Dylan brought Luo Feng before, he had to teleport to a certain point in the universe country before taking a ship and flying for awhile before reaching Jade Dome planet.

"The others would probably take at least 3 to 5 days to get here." A hoarse voice resounded from a skinny intrepid lizard like man.

"Senior Yan Zhu, you give the order on what we should do here on earth. The 5 of us will be sure to complete your orders." The black armored lady said.

"Since you all agree on this, then I'll give the order." Yan Zhu smiled.

A total of 6 emperor level undyings under Shi Huo knight had come, along with 12 official level undyings. Even though Yan Zhu was considered the weakest amongst the other emperors, he held seniority as his father had him before he even became undying. And the other emperor level undyings...almost all of them were accepted after Shi Huo knight had become a knight.

Hence!

Yan Zhu was considered amongst the disciples under Shi Huo knight, the 2nd senior.

"Bu Na!"

Yan Zhu suddenly shouted.

"Lord."

A tall and sturdy silver armored bald man instantly appeared and bowed.

"With so many emperor level undyings here, Luo Feng may not dare show himself, and he’s had some trouble with me before too. This time…father’s orders are absolute, we need to buy earth easily without any complicated methods. You go and find a way to draw out Luo Feng to meet you." Yan Zhu ordered, mocking. "That Luo Feng is an aboriginal at birth, he probably doesn’t even know of earth being special. Even my father and the other universe knights had just found out, how would he know. Buying it from him should be easy."

"For example, you can just tell him you want to buy the milky way galaxy. This way we can avoid hinting to him about earth being special." Yan Zhu laughed.

"Understood." The bald man replied.

"Go on." Yan Zhu ordered, "The moment there’s any news, inform me."

"Yes." The bald man became a beam of light and swiftly vanished.

"My juniors, we need to not let Luo Feng discover us when he’s returning to earth. There may be some trouble when Bu Na draws

him out, let’s all head to space for now." Yan Zhu looked at the surrounding undyings, his gaze landing on the jade haired single horned old man, "9th junior, we’ll rely on you."

"Haha."

The old man laughed. Even though there were 6 emperor level undyings about, only he was able to use teleportation. His undying energy immediately engulfed the group of undyings.

"Let’s go!"

Shua!

The group of undyings instantly vanished from earth and appeared 1 light year away in an uknown space.

"No matter what soft of detection abilities he has, he won’t be able to discover us 1 light year away." The old man said confidently.

"Haha..." Yan Zhu and the other emperor level undyings all laughed, the other 11 official level undyings just stood there obediently.

The group of undyings chatted within the vast space, awaiting Bu Na to send a message. The moment they received it, they could instantly teleport over back to earth.

...

Earth, Eurasia continent, china, Yang Zhou city.

There were close to 10,000 people living in Luo residence. The members of his family didn't even reach 30,000, most of them were in charge of managing the milky way galaxy and doing business with other powerful families etc. With Luo Feng's supervisor envoy position, it was too easy for them to do business.

Even though their family was small, their status was extremely high.

Firstly, Xu Xin stayed on earth, along with Luo Feng's parents, his brother Luo Hua and his two children. The children frequently explored the universe but still stay within their home for long periods of time.

"Mum."

"Mum."

In a vast grassland in Luo residence, with a glance, hundreds of infants were crawling about, some crying out for their mothers.

Xu Xin stood in the distance smiling at them.

These hundreds of infants were a small portion of newborn in the Luo family. Afterall, with hundreds of years of growth, his bloodline alone had descendants in hundreds of thousands. Every year, the number of newborns was a huge number. These hundreds...were the infants of the elites, otherwise how would they have the right to live in the actual residence.

There was no way.

After a family grows huge, especially over thousands of years. China had 5000 years of history and culture, if a family expands over a thousand years, with enough land, food, resources and being able to marry many, then the numbers would far exceed that of the entire population of earth. The reason why the population of earth was so small was mainly because there was a limit to land and food etc.

The large population meant there would be stricter rules, differentiation in levels and status within the family etc.

Rumble!

A formless pressure engulfed the entire Luo Residence.

"Who?"

11 silhouettes rose into the sky, it was the 11 sector lords stationed there, they looked about angrily. There stood in the sky and looked at the tall and sturdy bald silver armored man. He smiled at them,

giving off a formless pressure, his presence was like a glaring sun.

God!

Luckily he controlled his pressure and only used it as a warning. Otherwise the infants would probably have died.

"Undying." One of the sector lord guards roared. "This is the residence of the Ganwu Department supervisor envoy Luo Feng. We are under orders from the Virtual Universe Company and are members of his guard team. Why have you...come over here?"

"I want to meet Luo Feng." The bald sun like man smiled, gazing down, focusing on Xu Xin, with a wave of his hand...

Shua!

Xu Xin rose into the sky and flew towards him, unable to break free. The bald man’s pressure engulfed the entire residence as he smiled, "I only wish to meet Luo Feng, that simple. Don’t make me angry, or else...the consequences will be dire."

Virtual universe, Yu Xiang mountain primal region, Luo Feng’s villa.

Luo Feng was within his study, his conversation with undying knight before had left him disturbed.

"Earth?"

"Undying knight is already one of the true upper echelons of the Huge Axe Dojo. His position is extremely high. He actually personally looked for me to buy earth." Luo Feng frowned and pondered. "Just what is so special about my home earth. The mysterious black metal board I found before already shows that... earth is indeed special, however my teacher Hu Yan Bo controlled earth for so long. Yet, I've never heard anything about it being special from Babata. And within our humanity's history on earth, there haven't been any shocking places."

Luo Feng was suspicious.

Suddenly...

Du!

Du!

Du!

Consecutive call requests appeared on the screen beside him, Babata shouted out, "Your son Luo Ping, along with Bai Kalo, Di Fan and your sector lord guards, and your father Luo Hong Guo... they are all calling you..."

"Put them all through." Luo Feng's expression changed.

Shua!

10 screens appeared in the study, many silhouettes appeared before him, all of them from earth.

"Dad, hurry back, mum’s been captured. An undying came here."

"Master, an undying has come, this is the footage."

"Your majesty Luo Feng..."

All sorts of hurried and anxious voices resounded, Luo Feng focused on all 10 at a time, instantly picking out the gist of what they all said, all while watching the footage.

His expression immediately changed, calling Dylan in.

"Your majesty." Dylan looked curiously at Luo Feng.

"Look." Luo Feng pointed at the 10 screens before him, many of it replaying the footage Luo Ping and Di Fan sent him.

"It’s an undying, ah, official level undying Burning Heart official Bu Na." Dylan recognized him immediately. Even though there were many undyings within the universe, undyings had amazing memory, they were normally able to recognize large amounts of others.

"He’s captured my family member." Luo Feng’s expression changed. "Let’s head to earth now!"

"Yes." Dylan didn’t even try to stop him.

...

The Yun Mo planet ship which was flying within the dark universe swiftly went through universe travel back to the actual universe. After which, through the god country teleportation, it entered Dylan’s god country and finally teleported to the solar system.

...

Solar system, mars.

A blur of lights rippled in the space and a blood colored triangular ship appeared, it was the Yun Mo planet ship.

As earth was Luo Feng’s home, in order to rush back in times of crisis, Dylan had placed a marker on earth. Along with 12 other places about the solar system to be prudent. Afterall, they may not necessarily be able to teleport to earth all the time.

Like now, with the undying Bu Na on earth, he could easily scan the entire earth.

The moment Dylan teleported through his god country onto earth, Bu Na would easily find his marker and dylan’s god country would be revealed. That was extremely dangerous.

"Your majesty, we’ll immediately head towards earth." The Yun Mo planet ship accelerated.

Sou!

It became a beam of light and quickly entered universe travel, entering the dark universe and quickly returning, only 10 seconds had passed before they reached earth’s space.

Chapter 706: Discussion

Luo Feng and Dylan became beams of light and instantly tore through the atmosphere and arriving in the air above his residence.

"Hm?" Luo Feng easily saw in the distant skies the tall and sturdy undying. Beside him was his wife Xu Xin and she was obviously bound without any way to break free.

"Dad."

"Your majesty."

"Master."

The group of undyings looked at Luo Feng and Dylan as they appeared, their faces filled were with joy. Even Xu Xin who was bound, her eyes lit with excitement and worry as she saw Luo Feng.

"Hahaha... Your majesty Luo Feng sure is fast." The sun like undying Bu Na turned and smiled.

"Burning heart official." Luo Feng frowned, "You are an official level undying, to do such a thing without a care for your status, it’s truly shocking, please release my wife."

Bu Na smiled, "I didn’t expect your majesty Luo Feng to know my name too, it sure is an honor. I’m controlling your wife...only to bring you here, without any ill intentions. Since your majesty has asked me to do so...I naturally will!"

As he said so, Xu Xin realized she was free to move, without saying anything, she swiftly flew back to the ground.

Luo Feng looked on suspiciously at Burning heart official, "Burning heart official, why have you come looking for me?"

"Let’s find a quiet spot to sit and chat." He replied.

"Simple."

Luo Feng nodded.

Simultaneously the mosha body within the world ring held the main core...as Luo Feng had refined this world ring so that he could easily exit from it, if others entered it, they had no way to get out.

The mosha clansman with the main core released his world energy and easily found its way out of the world ring!

It spread all over the Luo residence.

Keep!

Including Luo Feng's parents Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan along with all the members of the family, with Di Fan etc, they all entered the gold continent. Di Fan along with the 10 sector lords etc, they didn't know that this world ring they entered was actually his internal world.

Afterall, whether it was an internal world or another world, the only difference was the objects within that sustained it.

The internal world was held by his main core and life core.

The other world was held by valuable materials.

"Bu Na, let's go down to chat." Luo feng smiled.

"Your majesty sure is cautious." The bald Bu Na glanced down. The Luo Residence was completely empty, he didn't mind, smiling as he followed Luo Feng and Dylan into one of the yards below.

...

Within the yard.

The 3 sat down.

"Speak." Luo Feng looked at Bu Na and smiled indifferently. "Burning Heart official, you came all the way to earth, not caring

about your status and using such methods to draw me out, just what is it about."

"Haha, I truly am regretful to do such a thing." Bu Na smiled. His face glowed with light as he emanated light law energies. "I happened to chance by the milky way galaxy and have wandered about it, I'm very intrigued by this galaxy and I cannot help it. Hence I came personally to your majesty's home earth to want to buy the milky way galaxy."

Luo Feng was stunned.

Buy the milky way galaxy?

Didn't Undying knight from before also want to buy the galaxy, and now this official level undying Bu Na wanted the same thing.

"A normal price of a galaxy is usually not even 1 mixed element. However I don't wish to have you make a loss, I'm willing to fork out 100 mixed elements to buy the milky way galaxy. Are you willing?" Bu Na smiled at Luo Feng.

"100 mixed elements, what a high price." Luo Feng exclaimed.

What a joke.

This was something the undying knight of the Huge Axe dojo was willing to personally appear for. Back then, he was even willing to agree to anything Luo Feng asked. To such a being, even if Luo

Feng had quoted a price akin to the worth of True Yan emperor, billions of mixed elements, undying knight would have agreed anyway.

Even in the end, all he wanted was an island of earth.

"Even undying knight, that level of being only got an island of earth, 100 mixed elements? He must be dreaming, he must think I don’t know how special earth is." Luo Feng mocked coldly within.

"It’s not high at all, I like the galaxy, hence it should have such a price." Bu Na said.

"Seems right."

Luo Feng nodded, "I’m willing to sell all the other planets in the milky way galaxy to you. However, earth is my home, I definitely cannot sell it."

Bu Na was stunned.

Luo Feng mocked coldly within, he enjoyed watching this official level undying’s expression. Go on and act, let’s see how much you can act.

"I really like the galaxy, the most exquisite part of it is this galaxy however is earth." Bu Na said, "Your majesty Luo Feng, speak your price. As long as it’s reasonable, I’m willing to pay."

"Hmph!"

Luo Feng stood up fiercely and roared, "Mr Bu Na, you know very well earth is my home, who would sell their home."

"No hope at all?" Bu Na looked at him.

"Nope." Luo Feng shook his head.

"Then there’s no way about it." Bu Na shook his head and swiftly sent a message to Yan Zhu emperor and the others via the virtual universe network.

Weng...

The south regions of earth had a sudden appearance of a group of undyings. After which, they all quickly teleported over to the yard in Luo Feng’s residence.

Within the yard.

"There’s undying energy searching." Dylan communicated to Luo Feng.

"Hm?" Luo Feng was shocked.

In the yard, a large group of 17 appeared, all with terrifying god presence, the formless pressure made Luo Feng go pale.

"Yan Zhu emperor." Luo Feng looked at the group that suddenly appeared. Yan Zhu emperor was dressed in an exquisite robe. He was accompanied by the powerful single horned old man, and the bone chilling black armored lady with fish scales on her face, along with another man who seemed dressed in a torn up robe but still giving off a special energy, and finally the lizard like man.

The 5 of them that stood beside Yan Zhu emperor all had terrifying energies. Behind them were another 11 undyings with pressure that was even stronger than Dylan's.

"Luo Feng, we meet again." Yan Zhu emperor smiled.

"Yan Zhu emperor." Luo Feng got up to welcome them. Beside him Dylan's expression changed as he communicated, "Your majesty, including that Bu Na from before, among these 18 undyings...6 of them are emperor level and 12 are official level. This is a very terrifying force, and they are all from the Huge Axe dojo. Your majesty should be extremely cautious."

"I understand." Luo Feng replied.

He pondered suspiciously within.

18 powerful undyings, one had to know that under the universe country leaders, there wasn't even 1 emperor level undying.

Normally, only the knights of the 5 leviathans had such beings! A total of 6 emperor levels ...this was definitely a force that could decimate half of a universe country.

Ah?

These 18 were all from the huge axe dojo. That undying knight before was from the huge axe dojo too. Why were they all from there?

Luo Feng was suspicious within, yet he still spoke calmly, "Why has your majesty come personally to earth?"

"Don’t be nervous, sit." Yan Zhu emperor sat first, the other 5 emperor level undyings sat too.

"Yes." Luo Feng sat, Yan Zhu emperor had torn into him before, and yet now he was smiling.

"As to why I’m here, Bu Na has said it, I want to buy your earth." Yan Zhu sat there. His crystal like fingers that were more beautiful than a lady’s gently tapped on the stone table, he smiled at Luo Feng, "Cut the crap, speak your price, we will buy it."

Luo Feng frowned, "Earth is my home..."

"Speak a price!" Yan Zhu interrupted Luo Feng’s words, gently lifting his finger, "1 hundred million mixed elements."

Dylan who stood beside Luo Feng was stunned too.

1 hundred million mixed elements?

"I said before, I cannot sell my home." Luo Feng shook his head, "Even if it’s 1 hundred million mixed elements, I still can’t."

"Hahaha, ok, ok, ok." Yan Zhu smiled, "Bold indeed, I’ll show you some respect, I’ll give you a heavenly price...1 billion mixed elements! Many low level emperor level undyings have only accumulated that much wealth. With that amount of wealth, even nurturing your cloud contact vine to undying wouldn’t be a hard thing."

Luo Feng still shook his head.

Yan Zhu’s expression grew heavy.

"Hmph!"

He stood up fiercely, raging as he slammed the stone table, it immediately exploded apart with fragments flying in all directions, Dylan used his undying energy to control the fragments as the entire yard became a wasteland while his area was fine.

"I show you respect and yet you still refuse." Yan Zhu smiled coldly at Luo Feng, "Then we’ll do it the hard way!"

Rumble!

His powerful undying energy instantly wrapped about Dylan and Luo Feng, after which a world energy spread in all directions, engulfing the entire earth.

"Keep!" Yan Zhu's expression was cold.

The entire earth, whether it was the chinese, americans, Africans etc, or even the slaves from other planets, every living human was kept into his world ring. As for earth itself, since his father Shi Huo knight wanted it, he didn't dare keep it.

In an instant...

All humanity on earth was gone, only the ones in this yard were left.

"Other than the people here in this yard, there's no other humans." Yan Zhu emperor released his undying energy binding.

Luo Feng's expression changed, and he quickly released his spirit energy to scan. Every city in china was empty, the dishes were still steaming, tea still boiling, yet there wasn't a single soul. Other than these people in the yard, no one was left.

Amidst the ruined yard, Yan Zhu looked coldly at Luo Feng and

roared "I’ll give you 2 choices, the 1st, agree to sell earth to us and you’ll get 1 billion mixed elements and the humans of earth back. The 2nd, reject us and all of the humans kept in my world will die!"

Chapter 707: A Letter

Luo Residence, ruined yard.

Yan Zhu stood there and stared coldly at Luo Feng.

Beside him were the 5 emperor level undyings and 12 official level undyings. Compared to Yan Zhu, Luo Feng was indeed weak, even Dylan barely had the power of an official. In truth, he wasn't a match against one true official.

"I get bullied if I'm weak! The strong prey on the weak, it's indeed survival of the fittest." Luo Feng was forced into a corner. Even though he was raging within, he had to carefully calculate his next move. "Yan Zhu emperor probably doesn't even think of me as anything. From his point of view, I'm just another aboriginal genius."

"Only he doesn't wish to kill me, because he's guessed that...both Dylan and I have opened a synchronized broadcast with the virtual universe network. The moment he makes a move, the Virtual Universe Company would have full evidence. Even if he didn't die, he would be in big trouble."

"However the bottom line is still strength!"

"He has a powerful father. Even if he kills me, he'll at most be heavily punished! Those that are weak are destined to be bullied, this is the strong preying on the weak!" Luo Feng's will to get stronger grew more and more.

If he was at the sector lord pinnacle level, he would be able to kill the official level undyings and fight against the emperors.

Such a level of genius...

Even Yan Zhu emperor wouldn’t dare mess around, because these absolute geniuses would definitely be treasured individuals of the Virtual Universe Company.

"There are only two paths, pick one!" Yan Zhu roared.

Luo Feng roared, "Yan Zhu emperor, using the earth humans as hostages, isn’t that too degrading even for you?"

"I’m asking you to choose!" Yan Zhu’s pressure rippled throughout, pressing down on Luo Feng, he was obviously raging.

"Then I’ll speak honestly." Luo Feng looked at Yan Zhu. "Just today not long ago, your Huge Axe Dojo’s Undying Knight contacted me via the virtual universe network to buy the milky way galaxy. Against him, even though I refused initially, his pressure was too terrifying...hence I finally submitted."

"What?" Yan Zhu’s handsome face was filled with shock.

"Undying Knight?" The jade haired old man beside him was shocked too.

"Undying knight?"

Everybody around including the 6 emperor level undyings were all shocked by the name.

"Don’t lie to me." Yan Zhu smiled coldly at Luo Feng. "If you did sell the milky way galaxy to undying knight, the records would all show that he is the leader. However in all the records...I’ve been monitoring, there hasn’t been any change."

Luo Feng said indifferently, "As he’s on the way over to earth, when we meet face to face, he’ll hand over the treasures to me. Only then would the transaction be fully complete. Even though it hasn’t been transferred yet, I already have an agreement with him. I definitely would not go against it. Yan Zhu emperor, you can go look for him and if he agrees, I naturally would have no objection."

"Liar, you are lying!" Yan Zhu’s eyes flashed.

Within however, he was filled with many thoughts.

It was very possible.

Undying knight’s position in the huge axe dojo was even higher than his father’s, it was normal for him to have received the news on earth. And with his weird temperament...he might really personally send the treasures in exchange for the deeds.

"Who cares, I'll first obtain the rights to earth. Even if I'm asked again later...I'll just say that Luo Feng was lying." Yan Zhu said. "And undying knight is a lone wolf, he doesn't have a sect. Even though he's an upper echelon member of the Huge axe dojo, he doesn't have much help. My father's influence within the Huge axe dojo however is huge. With the rights of earth in his hands, as long as it's lawfully done, that undying knight wouldn't be able to do anything."

...

Luo Feng's residence, only the stone benches were fine.

Luo Feng suddenly sat down.

He could see that Yan Zhu was worried.

"Punk." Yan Zhu saw Luo Feng sitting down. His eyes twitching slightly as he communicated, "I know you are not fearful because of your backing, and I know that you are doing a synchronized broadcast with the virtual universe. However, I'm not stupid either, I won't make a move directly at you. However, in all honesty, even if I don't do it personally, I can let others do it. I have 3 other undying slaves in space above earth, and they are my soul slaves. I just have to get one of them to kill you. So what if the virtual universe network picks up the broadcast? They'll at most record an undying killing you and not me personally!"

"Without proof that he's my slave."

"As for your guard Dylan, I'll get others to forcefully bind him. He won't even be able to help you."

"And when that happens, boom!"

"You'll be dead! All of the rights to the milky way will go to your son, and I naturally have my ways to make your son hand them over to me." Yan Zhu communicated to Luo Feng. "As long as you are dead, without the Virtual Universe Company primal region member status as protection, would your sons dare defy me? As for undying knight...it'll still take him at least 3 to 5 days to rush over. When that time comes, everything here would have been settled."

Luo Feng's expression changed, staring at Yan Zhu emperor.

Yan Zhu smiled at him, continuing, "Haha, I'm communicating mentally to you now. The virtual universe broadcast cannot pick up our conversation. What can you possibly do now?"

"Punk."

"Don't resist, I'm trying to avoid more trouble. If I know I'm going to be sent to the starfield jail, I'd have killed you long ago. At most I'd be punished." He looked at Luo Feng's with a hint of pity. "If you submit, everything will be good right?"

Luo Feng sat on the stone bench, however he had long sent a thread of consciousness to the virtual universe network.

Virtual universe Yu Xiang Mountain primal region, Luo Feng's villa.

While the broadcast was live, he had swiftly written a letter.

"Knight:

For a reason I do not know, the Huge axe dojo's Undying Knight contacted me wanting to buy the milky way galaxy, especially earth. I refused to submit and was finally lucky that he didn't forcefully take it, only wanting an island of earth.

However, as I'm writing this letter, in my home earth, the Huge axe dojo's Yan Zhu emperor and 6 other emperor level undyings along with 12 official level undyings have reached earth and are holding my countless comrades as hostage, forcing me to sell earth to them. Otherwise they'd use their undying slaves to kill me and acquire the deeds to earth via my son.

I have no way to resist this.

I'm powerless!

I hope sir knight can right this wrong."

Luo Feng had swiftly written the letter via his thoughts and sent it to 9 blade knight.

His genius competition was hosted by 9 blade, he was naturally one of his underlings. If he had sent it to Tian Shi palace's leader, it would be overstepping, as he had only given him some little guidance back then. Also, he only knew the contact number of one of his undying underlings.

He didn't know Tian Shi palace's leader's number.

"Send it 9 times." Luo Feng sat before his desk and looked at the laptop, he had already sent the mail to 9 blade knight.

"I cannot spam it too much, only just a little for him to notice. That the Huge Axe Dojo has obviously discovered something special about earth. When the time comes, the Virtual Universe Company will come not only for my sake, but also for earth's secret. They naturally wouldn't let this matter rest." Luo Feng nodded.

He believed...

That the moment this letter was sent, it would carve a huge hole and make the Virtual Universe Company clash with the Huge axe dojo!

...

Earth.

Luo Residence, ruined yard.

Even though he had sent the mail, Luo Feng's expression was still ugly, as he was trying to stall for time while communicating back to Yan Zhu. "Yan Zhu emperor, it's not that I cannot see the situation clearly. The only thing is...since I've already agreed to undying knight, that's the undying knight. You, Yan Zhu emperor have Shi Huo knight to protect you, but what about me? Against Shi Huo knight's rage, I will be finished."

Yan Zhu revealed a smile as he heard this.

He was happy within.

It seemed that the deal was going to happen.

"Relax." Yan Zhu replied. "When you return to the primal region or primal chaos city, these two places...are extremely safe."

"I cannot stay in those two places forever." Luo Feng replied.

Yan Zhu seemed impatient, "Cut the crap, hand over the rights to the milky way right now, and at least you'll be left alive. Even if it's hard in the future, when your position rises, it'll be fine. If you don't agree...then you'll die now and the entire human population of earth will die with you, hurry up and choose!"

Right at that moment...

Rumble!

A powerful undying energy swept the entire planet.

"Hm?" Yan Zhu and the other emperor level undyings and 12 official level undyings were all shocked.

"Undying energy." The lizard man said coldly.

"An undying has actually come, how could he be so fast? The armies of the other knights will take at least another 3 – 5 days." Yan Zhu's expression changed.

"It may be the armies of the other knights, that happened to have left markers close to earth's coordinates." The black armored lady said.

Weng!

Teleportation.

A silhouette appeared within the yard, just his teleportation alone had left the 6 emperor level undyings in shock. Those with teleportation were definitely not the normal undyings. Of the 6 emperors there, only 1 of them could do it, it was obvious how rare it was.

Luo Feng too was shocked at the appearance of this person.

This was a huge man that could really be said to be tall and sturdy. He was over 3m tall and he had 2 blood red horns on his forehead. He also had some silver scales there, and his armor revealed his 2 arms that had silver scales about. He was covered in a black and blood colored armor, obviously an absolute being of the Nakameng race.

He stood there like a majestic god mountain.

His formless bloodthirst engulfed the entire area, his energy pressuring Yan Zhu and the others.

"Greetings teacher." Dylan bowed respectfully.

"Bloodthirst emperor!"

"Tie Jun!"

Yan Zhu and the other emperor level undyings changed their expressions, all shouting out the name.

Chapter 708: Mobilization

The Nakameng clan was one of the powerful races of humanity. Even though they were few in numbers, they were well adept in battle. And Bloodthirst emperor was one of the top 3 absolute beings of the entire clan. In terms of reputation, he was even more renowned than his teacher True Yan emperor, he had massacred heavily for his name!

Under his formless pressure, Bloodthirst emperor's golden eyes swept past Yan Zhu emperor and the other emperor level undyings, he instantly shocked all 6 of them.

"Junior." He looked at Luo Feng and smiled.

"3rd senior?" Luo Feng was surprised and happy.

His 3rd senior actually came at the critical moment, how did he?

Beside, Dylan communicated, "Your majesty, when the grandmaster asked me to protect you, he actually had a trump card...for when you ever meet a great danger that even I cannot deal with, I could call my teacher over. As his disciple, I naturally carry one of his markers. Back then when I left some of my markers about the solar system, I also placed 3 of my teacher's markers there. When Yan Zhu emperor faced you earlier, I immediately contacted him via the virtual universe network."

"Ah." Luo Feng was elated.

"Surprised?" Bloodthirst emperor looked at his junior, his voice powerful, "Relax, with me here, the Huge axe dojo cannot do anything to you!"

He also said, "I've already arranged for another friend of mine, Iron wall emperor to wait at the 9th teleportation point in the primal region. I carry his marker around, you should let 9 blade knight know. You are after all under him, he will definitely see to this matter."

"I've already reported." Luo Feng replied.

"Hm, if 9 blade sends his army, you can tell him to send them to the 9th teleportation point and come over with Iron wall emperor." Bloodthirst emperor said.

His mental conversation with Luo Feng ended instantly, after which he turned over to the 6 emperors with ugly expressions.

Yan Zhu and the others!

"I didn't expect Tie Jun to come." Yan Zhu mocked.

"Yan Zhu." Bloodthirst emperor gazed coldly at them. "This is my junior's home, why have you and the Huge Axe Dojo people come? No matter what, this is still the home of a core member of our Virtual Universe Company. Naturally it is protected by the Virtual Universe Company, it's better for you lot not to make a mess."

The jade haired old man suddenly shouted out, "Bloodthirst emperor, there's 6 of us here, don't you dare get arrogant!"

"Ah, Bao Jin emperor." Bloodthirst emperor glanced over. "You mean to say, that with the 6 of you emperors together, you can beat me?"

"Hmph."

The lizard man beside snorted coldly, saying hoarsely, "With me around, Bloodthirst emperor, you can dream about teleporting."

Bloodthirst emperor looked at him, "So it's the Piercing heart emperor who is proficient in space lockdown. With you using that, indeed there's no way for me to teleport. However that means that Bao Jin emperor cannot do so either. With everybody unable to so, and 1 against 6, who do you think will die when we truly engage?"

It was said very casually.

However, the words, who do you think will die made the 6 change their expressions. The difference between emperor level undyings was huge. If the legendary True Yan emperor appeared, Yan Zhu and the others probably wouldn't even dare resist. As for Bloodthirst emperor...

Even though his reputation was higher than his teacher's, his strength was still slightly weaker. However, he was still a high

level emperor level undying, who was intrepid and strong... amongst the undyings of humanity. Who wouldn't have heard of him?

1 against 6!

Even though it was very hard for an emperor level undying to die, even if the fight dragged on, Bloodthirst emperor would definitely survive while Yan Zhu's side may very likely lose a couple of them.

...

Within the ruined yard.

The two sides faced off, as the Bloodthirst emperor's energy pressured Yan zhu and the others.

This scene made Luo Feng incredibly excited. This was a true face off between the strong, one person threatening a group of other undyings. If he could reach this level, it would be awesome.

"You all should just leave." Bloodthirst emperor said casually.

"I'm under orders from my father here, how can I just go?" Yan Zhu's expression was ugly. "Tie Jun, don't force me. Even if I can't bear to, I may use my trump card. Even if it can't kill you, it'll definitely leave your undying body heavily damaged."

"Oh really?" Bloodthirst emperor glanced coldly at him.

In terms of wealth and trump cards.

Bloodthirst emperor definitely couldn't compare to Yan Zhu. Afterall, Yan Zhu had absorbed that treasure into his soul, it was one that even knights would fight for. If he unleashed that treasure...even though the cost wouldn't be small, but for a short amount of time, Yan Zhu would have the emperor pinnacle level of strength.

What's more, Yan Zhu had other life preserving trump cards. There was just no other way around it. His family had that powerful father...Shi Huo knight!

As for Bloodthirst emperor, it was the opposite. His treasures couldn't compare to Yan Zhu's, however his body was incredibly strong.

Weng...

Bloodthirst emperor suddenly triggered one of the world rings on his body, spreading the world energy at Luo Feng, wanting to place him within.

"Bloodthirst Emperor!" An ear piercing voice resounded. The intrepid lizard man suddenly howled out, causing the surrounding million km of space to lock down. The initial normal ripples all

condensed and the world energy crumbled.

"We are here, don’t even think about placing him within your world." Yan Zhu smiled coldly.

"Luo Feng will be your bargain." The jade haired old man mocked at Bloodthirst emperor.

The 6 emperors seemed confident.

Bloodthirst emperor’s expression however was ugly.

If it weren’t for Luo Feng and Dylan, he could care less about anything and fight it out with the 6 emperors. However, now with them staring hard at him, he couldn’t keep Luo Feng in his world.

"Bastard!"

Bloodthirst emperor roared. With a wave of his hand, a huge gold disc appeared with a diameter of about 1,000 meters. Simultaneously, this gold disc extended two large arms that grabbed Luo Feng and Dylan with one, the other acting as a shield against attacks.

"Grab Luo Feng!" Yan Zhu roared.

"Yes!"

The group of undyings complied.

Rumble!

6 emperor level undyings all simultaneously attacked Bloodthirst emperor. The other 12 official level undyings rushed at Luo Feng and Dylan.

Hua...Luo Feng and Dylan watched as the big gold hand blocked them!

The other hand grabbed them and dragged them into the ship.

Ka!

The two golden hands vanished and the gold disc ship locked down, letting out a voice, "Master, the two are within my body." The voice resounded in the space above earth, the gold disc ship rumbled and rushed into the skies instantly tearing through to space.

"Chase."

The 12 official level undyings rushed after them.

"Use soul techniques to pierce through the defense of the ship, control Luo Feng." Yan Zhu communicated urgently.

"Hahaha..." Bloodthirst emperor laughed loudly, rushing upwards into space too.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

Yan Zhu and the other emperors all followed into space.

At this time, virtual universe Yu Xiang mountain primal region, Luo Feng's villa.

Luo Feng sat in his study awaiting 9 blade's reply, at this time...

"Luo Feng, a call request, it's 9 blade knight's number." Babata shouted excitedly.

"Quickly answer." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

"Yes."

A screen immediately appeared and on it a silhouette, it was a handsome purple scaled man in an ancient green robe, his formless pressure was strong but controlled, it was 9 blade knight.

"Knight." Luo Feng bowed respectfully.

"I already know, however the people I've sent will take awhile to get to earth." 9 blade said.

"Knight, right now at the primal region's 9th teleportation point, Iron wall emperor awaits." Luo Feng said respectfully, "As long as you send your people there, they can teleport via his god country together and arrive at earth."

"Got it." 9 blade knight said.

Pa.

The call disconnected.

...

Virtual universe, thunder island, within 9 blade knight's palace.

Below him was a black blur of undyings, this vast group of undyings, even the weakest was an official level.

"Greetings knight." The group all bowed respectfully.

In the throne above.

9 blade knight gazed down below and ordered, "The Huge Axe Dojo has sent people to invade my underling Luo Feng's home, earth. Right now, all of you head over to the 9th teleportation point immediately and meet with Iron wall emperor. After that you will teleport to earth. Remember...protect Luo Feng's life."

"Yes." The large group of undyings rumbled as they bowed, they were shocked within.

Protect Luo Feng?

He was but a little genius, was it enough for 9 blade to send such an army?

This was an army of 50 emperor level undyings along with close to 1,000 official level undyings. These were almost all of the elites of 9 blade knight. Other than the few that were away or in dangerous regions, these 50 emperors was almost all of the emperor level undyings he could mobilize.

"Go!" 9 blade knight ordered.

"Yes!"

The blur of undyings bowed respectfully and vanished, leaving the virtual universe network.

...

In reality, the beings scattered across the universe all swiftly teleported via their god countries, heading over to the 9th teleportation point as swiftly as possible.

The emperors and officials under 9 blade knight all gathered!

Their goal...

Earth!

Chapter 709: Arrival

Solar system, about 1 hundred million km in space away from earth.

12 official level undyings were surrounding a huge gold disc ship, attacking Luo Feng and Dylan who were hiding within.

"Use soul attacks straight through the ship against Luo Feng. Don’t care about anything else, get rid of him." Yan Zhu communicated to them. "Don’t ever let that Dylan keep Luo Feng in his world. The moment he enters the world, there’d be no meaning in this battle."

"Yes lord."

The 12 undyings all used their soul attacks, even those not proficient in such techniques did so, as long as their undying energy became voids, they could use it as a soul attack.

Whether it was a fighter or spirit reader.

They simply used undying energy.

...

Within the ship.

"Relax, you are both in my body, they cannot get in. However, you'll have to block their spirit attacks." A huge face appeared on the wall in the resting room of the ship. He looked at Luo Feng and Dylan and smiled. "Soul attacks are useless against me, however I have no way to block them. The material used to build this resting room has a definite effect on blocking undying energy. It can also weaken the soul attacks, it's the best I can do."

"Leave the blocking of soul attacks to me." Dylan emphasized.

A formless undying energy wrapped about Luo Feng, blocking him against the 12 official level undyings' attacks.

"Rumble!"

Rumble!

Even though it wasn't visible, Luo Feng could feel the undying energies attacking over and over.

"These bastards keep dispersing my world energy. Your majesty, I have no way to keep you in my world." Dylan's face was panicked. "They are aiming straight at you, and from the looks of it, they want to kill you."

"Kill me?" Luo Feng was shocked, "Dylan, can you withstand it?"

"It takes up a lot of energy." Dylan replied, his expression heavy. "Luckily, I'm proficient in the soul offense and defense. Plus, the

walls of this room have a weakening effect on their attacks, I can hold it for awhile. However amongst the 12 official level undyings, 3 of them are proficient in soul attacks. If time drags long, I may not be able to hold it."

Rumble!

Rumble!

The many undying attacks clashed over and over. Dylan controlled his undying energy into a complex web like protection against them, blocking them from attacking Luo Feng.

"Dylan, hold on for awhile. 9 blade knight's people will be here soon." Luo Feng communicated.

"Hm." Dylan's expression was serious, he fought hard to withhold them.

"Ah!" A painful scream.

Rumble!

An explosion from outside the ship.

...

In the space, even though the 12 official level undyings already knew this ship had melded with a metal life form, they had kept their guards up and maintained their distance. However as they flew about and unleashed their soul attacks to no avail over and over, they got more desperate.

The further they were, the weaker their soul attacks. Hence the 12 slowly got closer in desperation.

And just before, very suddenly...

The dark gold disc ship that seemed solid and sturdy suddenly extended a large metal arm, fast as lightning, faster than an emperor level undying's attacking speed. It waved...grabbing one of the official level undyings proficient in soul attacks and used its strength!

With a rumble, the undying exploded!

"Be careful of the ship."

"Stay further away from it."

The other 11 undyings were shocked.

"Huhu..." Large amounts of green light dispersed in all directions, instantly reforming into a black robed purple haired lady. It was obvious that she had reached the undying body level, she communicated anxiously, "Everybody be careful, this metal life

form has good comprehension of the space laws. When it exploded my undying body, my dispersed undying energy was actually unable to escape for awhile. That hand locked me in with space laws and destroyed my undying energy, I lost a great amount of it..."

"What!" The other 11 were shocked.

With an undying body, being destroyed once had almost no effect on their energies.

Of course, it depended on who used it. Like in primal chaos city, back when the city leader's palm smashed down casually on the two undyings, they were smashed so hard they were very close to dying, but of course they were spared. This level of control, was much harder than simply killing those two undyings.

And like True Yan Emperor, he could easily kill an official level with just one move.

"Hahaha...see if you dare underestimate me. Haha, 3 proficient in soul attacks, 1 heavily injured. The other can give up on attacking with their full strength." A huge human face appeared on the ship. He laughed loudly and became a blur as it extended 2 huge hands and grabbed about.

He even aimed at the other two specialized in soul attacks!

It forced the 12 official level undyings to dodge over and over

while attacking. This naturally lowered their attacking power by a lot.

...

Through the external simulator, Luo Feng and Dylan clearly saw everything.

"It’s much easier." Dylan was happy.

"What a strong ship." Luo Feng complimented the sturdiness of the ship.

This ship was an F9 grade ship that had melded with a metal life form. In terms of defense, it was extremely strong, and the metal life form made it even more special. Just like if a metal mountain suddenly became a life form, its life construct would definitely have huge differences from a flesh and blood life form.

In the universe, there were many life forms without souls. Many of them, and the mosha clansman was one. Those without souls would naturally have their life cores.

When Luo Feng and Dylan along with the metal life form ship were facing off against the 12 official level undyings.

Yan Zhu and the other 5 emperor level undyings were worried.

"Useless, useless." Yan Zhu roared within.

"Haha...Yan Zhu, they can’t even harm Luo Feng, you should just give up." Bloodthirsty emperor laughed and waved a peculiar shaped blade, fighting it out with the 6.

Rumble...

The surrounding space was torn apart. Every time it was recovering, it was sliced through again, a million km in diameter area about was completely torn apart. The space flowed madly about, with the 7 emperors fighting it out madly. However, the mad space flow couldn’t even hurt them.

Boom!

Yan Zhu blocked a blade and was instantly knocked back hundreds of thousands of km, spitting out gold blood.

"Senior, what do we do?" The other emperors were anxious too, of which the black armored lady communicated, "It’s 6 of us against Bloodthirst emperor and yet we are at a disadvantage. These 12 useless things cannot kill Luo Feng, we are purely wasting time. If bloodthirst emperor could get here so fast, the other people from the Virtual Universe Company will be here soon."

"I know." Yan Zhu was incredibly worried.

At this time...

The distant gold disc ship suddenly had a blur of gold light about it. With the gold blur, an incredibly huge pressure spread throughout. The strength of this wave...instantly covered the surrounding ten million km, even the battling Yan Zhu and the others all stopped.

"God country teleportation!" Yan zhu's expression was ashen.

A blur of silhouettes, every one giving off terrifying pressure, gathered together, it reached an unbelievable level. Even though he was over a million km away, Yan Zhu still shuddered within.

Silence!

Space was silent, the 12 official level undyings along with Yan Zhu and the other emperors all gathered. Bloodthirst emperor flew towards the gold disc and it naturally opened a door at its side, Luo Feng and Dylan flew out into space.

"My god." Luo Feng watched the blur of silhouettes appear, completely stunned.

With just a glance, it was at least a thousand!

Everyone of them had energies that exceeded Dylan, even with others that were comparable to Bloodthirst emperor.

A god country teleportation of over 1,000 undyings in the silent space. The amount of power was even bigger than the undying mother nest before. These weren't 1,000 normal undyings, this was the true elite of a knight, capable of easily stomping on an undying mother nest.

This 1,000, was led by a jade armored lady wielding two blades, as her cold energy spread throughout.

"Luo Feng." She looked at Luo Feng, "I'm here on the knight's orders to protect you."

"Thank you knight, thank you all." Luo Feng bowed respectfully in space.

The jade armored god, along with the entire army's pressure all looked at Yan Zhu. She roared coldly, "Yan Zhu emperor, Luo Feng is a member of our Virtual Universe Company, what right does you Huge Axe Dojo have to make a move on our member?"

"Hmph."

Yan Zhu's expression was ugly, he rubbed the blood on his lips and snorted coldly.

"Capture Yan Zhu emperor." The lady ordered.

"Yes!"

Immediately, 26 emperor level undyings flashed over like lightning. This made Yan Zhu and his other emperors all change their expressions. The Virtual Universe Company and the Huge Axe Dojo were both leviathans of humanity, they frequently had little squabbles. However, his actions today had made it so that if he were truly to be captured, even the Huge Axe Dojo would find it hard to save him.

And once he was captured, it would be a true humiliation.

"Get lost!!!" Yan Zhu's eyes gleamed with madness. He howled fiercely and the ancient engraving on his forehead lit up, a terrifying energy emanated in all directions. Like a fierce beast that was awakening, his forehead seemed to begin to tear apart, revealing a single purple vertical eye.

The purple vertical eye shot out a purple gaze, sweeping past the surrounding space and condensing the area about. He'd rather fight it out before being captured.

Rumble...

There were ripples in space and a terrifying pressure descended, almost like a dragon descending on countless ants. The energy made the surrounding people all submit immediately, as it spread over the surrounding starfield. The powerful undying army's power was instantly squashed, and even the uprising Yan Zhu was suddenly pushed back down, forcefully stopped halfway through his move.

A blur silhouette gradually appeared.

"Father!!!" Yan Zhu turned and shouted with glee.

Chapter 710: Knight's Punishment

Standing beside the vast undying army, Luo Feng could clearly feel the powerful energy from this army beside him. Babata shouted loudly within Luo Feng's mind, "Undying army! These undying are all stronger than your teacher Hu Yan Bo. This is definitely an elite army there's actually no normal one within."

Luo Feng had never felt such a terrifying wave of power before.

26 emperor level undyings immediately surrounded Yan Zhu emperor, Yan Zhu grew mad and began to unleash his trump card!

Rumble!

The purple vertical eye that split open on his forehead condensed the surrounding million km of space, that ancient energy instantly made the weakest person in the area Luo Feng fall into a nightmare illusion. He felt like the entire vast universe had vanished before him, leaving only the purple eye floating in space.

"Yan Zhu emperor is terrifying." Luo Feng was just shaken out of it.

However...

A force hundreds to thousands of times even stronger descended and caused Luo Feng's soul to instantly go black. He had lost consciousness immediately, before awakening later as he heard the

despicable voice of Yan Zhu emperor shouting, "Father!"

"Shi Huo knight?" Luo Feng blinked his eyes and looked over.

In the distant space.

A majestic being stood there, his body was a blur, surrounded by black flames that spread over a million km about. If earth was to touch these flames, it would instantly be reduced to ash. Even the space around was burning into particle streams. The large amounts of space flow between became nothing but particles. At this instant, everything within the solar system was under his power.

Universe space, with him as the dictator!

He was the ruler of space itself!

Luo Feng could clearly feel this feeling. The blurry being within the core of the black flames that burned hotter than the sun, he was invincible.

"This was the being that at sector lord level could kill an official level undying, becoming an emperor straight after breaking through to undying. In 100,000 years he became a knight...Shi Huo knight?" Luo Feng muttered. "Over a trillion years, this being has been invincible and terrifying. Those black flames, it reminds me of the 9 black planets that burned with black flames, the ones Tian Shi palace's leader demonstrated for me back then."

Comparing Tian Shi palace’s leader to Shi Huo knight.

Tian Shi palace’s leader was more controlled, he probably didn’t want to bully little Luo Feng. Hence he controlled his power more

Shi Huo knight however burnt with black flames over the million km in area, he unleashed his strength.

"Greetings Shi Huo knight!"

The jade armored lady bowed respectfully, following which the vast undying army all bowed respectfully too. "Greetings Knight."

Luo Feng and Dylan bowed too.

"Greetings teacher."

"Greetings knight."

The 12 official level undyings and 5 emperor level undyings all bowed respectfully. Only Yan Zhu emperor was glowing with the purple light as the eye on his forehead began to close, shouted out excitedly to his father, after which he roared angrily at the undying army, "Father, 9 blade knight’s undyings actually want to capture me!"

"Hmph."

With a snort, Luo Feng felt his consciousness shake, it resounded amongst all the undyings about.

"You'd rather use the forbidden skill than look for me?" The majestic being within the black flames said, with a sense of rage. "If you'd have trained well, you'd long have reached the level of controlling that treasure. Then you'd have no fear of these emperor level undyings."

"Yes." Yan Zhu bowed respectfully, not daring to say anymore.

The majestic being looked at the army, his voice rumbling through their minds, "Jade!"

"Jade greets Shi Huo Knight." The jade armored lady, leader of the undying army replied respectfully.

Jade emperor was 9 blade knight's strongest undying.

Jade, Tong Nan, True Yan, they were life or death friends. They frequently explored the secret regions together, and through the many experiences, they naturally became good friends. And it was obvious that they were all extremely powerful, belonging to the pinnacle of emperors.

Of course...True Yan Emperor, he was amongst the countless races in the universe, trillions of undyings, the closest to becoming a knight. Even against a knight, he would survive.

Jade and Tong Nan were slightly weaker.

"Jade!" Shi Huo knight roared amidst the black flames, "Did you order the capture of my son?"

"Shi Huo knight." Jade's appearance was beautiful the jade armor had gems that were translucent. As she was standing there, it was almost like she wasn't there, obviously she could withstand the pressure as she smiled respectfully. "I'm here on the orders of the knight to protect Luo Feng. And Yan Zhu brought people to even kill him, no matter what, Luo Feng is still a core member of our Virtual Universe Company. Any punishment should be dealt by the company. Yan Zhu's actions...he has overstepped. Hence, I want to capture him and bring him to the knight!"

"Yan Zhu is my son, any punishment will be done by me and not 9 blade!" Shi Huo knight's voice boomed like thunder.

It made all the undyings in the army grimace in pain.

Luo Feng however didn't feel anything.

"That's strange?" Luo Feng looked at the over 1,000 undyings along with Dylan and Bloodthirst emperor all grimace in pain, only he wasn't affected.

"It's probably cause I'm too weak. The moment it hits me, I'd probably die instantly, hence he didn't target me." Luo Feng

thought.

...

Looking at the army all grimace in pain, Yan Zhu and his group were satisfied.

"Take this as a punishment!" Shi Huo knight said coldly, "Remember, don’t ever disrespect any knight."

Jade could only lower her head and bow respectfully, "Yes!"

Afterall...

In terms of strength, Shi Huo knight was even stronger than 9 blade.

He floated amidst the black flames, after which his gaze fell on Luo Feng. His voice becoming more affectionate, "You are Luo Feng?"

"So powerful, forcing even Jade emperor to lower her head, the entire undying army submitting under the pressure." Luo Feng was still exclaiming when he discovered the being’s gaze on him. He was stunned as he heard the gentle voice, "That’s Luo Feng?"

All the undyings there could only stare in shock.

This, this, this...

Is this the same tyrannical Shi Huo knight?

A genius amongst the absolute geniuses. He didn’t need to bother himself with such little beings, yet he spoke with such a gentle tone to Luo Feng.

"I am." Luo Feng was stunned as he quickly reacted. Bowing respectfully, he said "Greetings knight."

"Hm."

Shi Huo knight’s voice didn’t seem to have any rage, all it had was affection. "I had asked my son to come talk to you about selling the rights of earth. I didn’t expect this useless son of mine to make such a mess of it."

Luo Feng blinked his eyes.

Jade emperor and the other undyings were all speechless.

"I..." Yan Zhu stared even wider, "Father..."

"Shut up!"

Shi Huo knight’s roar caused Yan Zhu to get even more angry

and nervous.

The entire atmosphere within that space was awkward.

Shi Huo knight’s pampering of his son was well reputed throughout. However today, he was that courteous to a little domain lord punk and fierce towards his son. This was unbelievable, Luo Feng may be a rare genius of a ten thousand eras. However even a rare genius of ten million years wouldn’t be treated that way.

Geniuses were ultimately just that.

The strong were the strong.

Before truly becoming one of the strong, none of them deserved to be treated that well by Shi Huo knight.

"Luo Feng, I’ll talk to you personally, are you willing to sell earth to me." Shi Huo knight smiled at Luo Feng. "Whatever conditions there are, just speak."

"Knight." Luo Feng said respectfully. "Earth is my home and all the humans of earth, no matter what, I won’t be willing to sell it."

Luo Feng had seen through the situation.

No matter what...

9 blade knight had already intervened, meaning this matter was already a clash between the 2 leviathans. Shi Huo knight wouldn’t make a move against him.

"Ah, the birthplace of a race?" Shi Huo knight nodded, "As a birth place, earth is indeed special to you, I won’t force you."

"Yan Zhu." Shi Huo knight turned to his son.

Yan Zhu emperor was shocked.

Even though he was called Yan Zhu emperor, this was just a name for respect and formalities. Those that were higher in power...may simply call him Yan Zhu. Taking away the emperor position. However his true name was Meng Cha Luo.

As his father, Shi Huo knight would normally call him by his true name, as it was more affectionate.

Only when he was unhappy would he call him Yan Zhu.

"Father." Yan Zhu felt the tone of his father’s voice, shouting out respectfully.

"I only gave you the right to buy earth. I’d never expect you to go to such lengths. If Dylan didn’t protect Luo Feng, would you have killed him?" Shi Huo’s serious voice was filled with rage.

"Father?" Yan Zhu looked at his father suspiciously.

"You don’t know when to stop. If this goes on, who knows what huge trouble you will bring." Shi Huo knight said coldly. "I now punish you...to be imprisoned in the 9th starfield jail hell for 1,000 eras."

"Father!"

Yan Zhu stared wide eyed.

Luo Feng, Bloodthirst emperor, jade emperor, Dylan etc, all the undyings there were stunned.

My god.

Back then, Shi Huo knight had thrown his son into the 9th jail hell, however that was only for 1,000 years. This time it was 1,000 eras, that was over ten million years, and in the 9th jail hell...that was a long lasting nightmare!

All the undyings were stunned and speechless. Even if Yan Zhu had killed Luo Feng, it didn’t deserve such a severe punishment.

Chapter 711: Unstable Situation

"You lot, go back now!" Shi Huo knight ordered the 5 emperors and 12 official level undyings.

"Yes knight."

"Yes teacher."

The many undyings bowed respectfully. After which, Bao Jin emperor released his undying energy to wrap everyone and instantly teleported 1 light year away before they all dispersed. Afterall, if they teleported via their god country before 9 blade knight's army, they would reveal their god country's locations.

"Yan Zhu, release all the earthlings." Shi Huo knight ordered.

"Yes." Yan Zhu didn't dare resist.

He became a beam of light flying above earth and releasing a large number of the humans back. Over a billion of them were placed randomly throughout, some chinese people appeared in North America, some white people appearing in Africa and so on, it was a mess.

For everyone to be sent back to their respective homes and for earth to regain its order, it would take at least 10 days to half a month, and this was also because of its advanced technology.

After a while!

Yan Zhu flew back.

Shi Huo knight looked at his crestfallen son and shook his head, ordering, "Let’s go."

Rumble!

His black flames wrapped about his son and in an instant, the both of them had vanished.

Within the vast god country.

Shi Huo knight and Yan Zhu emperor appeared within on a mountain peak.

"Father!" Yan Zhu looked at Shi Huo knight, his eyes filled with rage. "Why have you sent me to the 9th jail hell, and for 1,000 eras? Don’t say it’s because of Luo Feng, I don’t believe it. Even if I killed him, it wouldn’t deserve such a severe punishment!" Yan Zhu was indeed enraged.

Even though he respected his father, this punishment was too heavy.

He could only bear with it and ask later.

He wanted to know the truth!

"Cha Luo." Shi Huo Knight rubbed his son’s head and said softly. "This isn’t something I wanted."

"Hm?" Yan Zhu’s eyes gleamed.

"However, my teacher ordered me to do so in this matter, saying you are getting out of hand and have to be punished heavily." Shi Huo knight sighed. "Back then, my teacher said…to send you to the 9th starfield jail hell for 1,000 eras, that it was considered a small punishment."

"Father, your teacher?" Yan Zhu stared wide eyed.

Rumble!

Yan Zhu felt like his brain had exploded. His father was Shi Huo knight…his position alone plus his sect within the Huge Axe Dojo was already absolute. Even against Undying knight, it wasn’t too big a difference. Even though undying knight’s position was high and he was powerful, he was a lone wolf without a sect and help. Hence Shi Huo knight wouldn’t be too afraid of him.

However…Shi Huo knight’s teacher, that was something else.

All of Shi Huo knight’s sects, the true leader of them was his teacher! Shi Huo knight…was but one of the great being’s disciples. That great being was the true powerful dictator within the Huge

Axe dojo, and probably only the founder of the Huge axe dojo could suppress him.

"Void gold master!" Yan Zhu said hoarsely.

Shi Huo knight's teacher...Void gold master!

A true dictator within humanity's ancient and endless history. He was a true power within one of the two great leviathans of humanity, the Huge Axe dojo. Even within, he was one of the pinnacle beings, with only the founder capable of making him bow!

"Void gold master wanted to punish me?" Yan Zhu was filled with fear. "The great Void gold master, why has he taken notice of me?"

Void gold master!

High above, even the universe country leaders bowed before him, Shi Huo knight and those level of beings all bowed before him. Even the entire gold horn race...they would all shudder before him! The most ancient and powerful beings of humanity, this was the level of being he was.

To be able to hear his name from Void gold master, Yan Zhu should already feel extremely honored.

And this was within the pinnacle race of humanity, like the gold horn race and many other races, they could never produce such a

level of being like Void gold master. Even within humanity itself, it took countless calamities and trials for such a being to be produced.

"Father." Yan Zhu looked anxiously at his father, "Why has he noticed me?"

He was afraid.

Even his father was afraid of him. Yan Zhu belonged to the Void gold sect, if the master wanted to kill him, who could protect him?

"Teacher said to punish you, as for the specific details, I don't know. Since he didn't say it, I didn't dare ask." Shi Huo knight looked at his son. "However you can relax. At his level of being, how respected is it? It's not worthy of him to deal with a small punk like you."

"Hm hm." Yan Zhu nodded.

"Teacher's orders, made me suspect...whether Luo Feng has any connections with him." Shi Huo frowned.

"Ah." Yan Zhu was taken aback, "Father, so you treated him that well earlier, it was all because..."

"Hm, your matters on earth have drawn his attention, hence he wants to punish you." Shi Huo knight nodded slightly. "Teacher is very protective, yet he still wants you to enter the 9th jail hell for

1,000 eras. I can only guess...that he has some connections with Luo Feng."

"But Luo Feng is from the Virtual Universe Company and Void gold master is from the Huge Axe Dojo." Yan Zhu said.

"I'm not sure about the details." Shi Huo knight shook his head.

Yan Zhu could only sigh.

He anticipated the day his father could become a being like void gold master, that would be absurd. Whether it was the primal chaos city leader or void gold master, they all stood at the true pinnacle of humanity. These were beings that stood above the vast countless other races.

"Since it was teacher's orders, then you'll have to go serve your 1,000 eras. You've indeed caused much trouble these past few years, it's time you trained. When you can control that treasure, anything under a knight shouldn't be a threat. Even that True Yan, you'll be able to match him. Afterall strength is absolute...Father cannot always protect you." Shi Huo knight said.

"Hm." Yan Zhu nodded.

Solar system.

The vast undying army led by jade emperor all became a blurry light, teleporting via their god country away. It left only

Bloodthirst emperor, Dylan and Luo Feng.

"They just teleported like that?" Luo Feng was shocked. "Aren't they afraid of their god country coordinates being revealed?"

"The one using the teleport should be an undying slave." Blood thirst emperor smiled causally. "And after using it, that slave would have to work hard to move his god country's position, that way, the coordinates would be useless."

"Move the god country coordinates?" Luo Feng was curious.

"God countries lie within the slips of space, and these slips are vast and endless. Naturally, the god countries can be moved within them, leaving the original position." Bloodthirst emperor said, "However, the movement of the god countries are extremely slow. If one searched for the coordinates immediately, that would be extremely dangerous."

Luo Feng nodded.

"Junior, do you know Shi Huo knight?" Blood thirst emperor looked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng shook his head, "No, I've only lived for a few hundred years, how could I know him."

"Then why was he so courteous, so strange." Bloodthirst emperor frowned. "The knights are all powerful invincible beings of the

universe. They usually can't be bothered with little punks like you."

"I don’t know." Luo Feng was puzzled as well.

After which he smiled and said, "Senior, it’s rare you come around here, let’s head to earth for awhile."

"Alright." Bloodthirst emperor replied easily.

...

Earth, china, Yang zhou city, Luo residence.

After Luo Feng got back, he released his family.

"Dad."

"Master."

"Luo Feng." The residence got busy instantly.

Luo Hong Guo said, "Little Feng, when I was kept in the world earlier, I immediately connected to the virtual universe network... contacting many of my friends before finding out that many of them were kept in a world too. I heard over a billion of them were all kept together. However they all didn’t know it was you who

kept them, hence they were extremely terrified."

"Ha..." Luo Feng laughed.

The other people of earth weren't kept by him.

"What a mess." Luo Feng used his spirit energy to scan. He couldn't help but laugh as it swept past Yang Zhou city. It was a hot summer day, yet there were many white people in jackets in the city, even some nude with towels appearing in the streets. Some even appeared at the top of skyscrapers.

Virtual universe thunder island.

9 blade knight had mobilized such a huge undying army, and they had gathered at the primal region's 9th teleportation spot. Naturally, the upper echelon of the Virtual Universe Company would know of it. The incident on earth couldn't be hidden, many knights came over to question 9 blade.

"Haha, I've checked in with some good friends in the Huge Axe Dojo. It wasn't just Shi Huo knight and undying knight. There were many other knights there that sent their elites over to earth. However Shi Huo knight's people got there first.

"Luckily they didn't succeed."

"Right, if earth truly is a treasure land, it should be our Virtual Universe Company's. That leader of earth, that punk Luo Feng, he

is a genius of ours."

"Hm."

"9 blade, this earth seems like a very normal life planet, we should have discovered something special long ago. Just what was it that made so many of the Huge Axe Dojo knights send their people down?"

"What is special about earth 9 blade, tell us?"

"I have no clue."

Thunder island, within 9 blade knight's palace, the few powerful knights and universe country leaders had all come. Yet they all left after, over 8 of them had come to question 9 blade.

The palace regained its calm.

Jade emperor who was dressed in her jade armor walked in, and in the throne a silhouette appeared. It was the green robed purple scaled man. Jade Emperor bowed respectfully, "Knight."

"Arrange it for me, I wish to see Luo Feng personally." 9 blade knight ordered.

Chapter 712: 9 Blade Knight

"Yes." Jade emperor complied and left.

The green robed purple scaled man frowned in the palace, muttering, "Earth? Just what's so special about this life planet, that even the Huge Axe Dojo people have gotten so crazy over it.?"

Virtual universe, Yu Xiang Mountain primal region, Luo Feng's villa.

In his study.

Luo Feng was talking to his teacher True Yan emperor on the screen.

"That sure is strange." True Yan rubbed his chin in the screen, as he was curious. "Even if that Shi Huo knight had gone to Laos world, home of the Gold horn race, he'd be barging in and not even caring about their doyens and so on! As an absolute genius, he's extremely arrogant. Yet, for him to show courtesy to a punk like you, how strange."

"I thought so too." Luo Feng was helpless.

"There must be a reason!" True Yan thought for awhile, shaking his head after and smiling. "There's no use pondering over it. Since he was courteous to you, at least the reason behind it must be good, it shouldn't be bad. Don't bother about it...train well and

quickly step into the sector lord level. That's the level which is most critical to your training, it's also the level that will determine your fate."

"Hm."

Luo Feng nodded heavily.

After this incident, he clearly felt how little he was. If he had reached the sector lord pinnacle level, and combined with that soldier armor...as long as he raised his law comprehension by a few more levels, he may not have a guarantee of killing an official level undying, but he was confident his strength could be comparable to one.

After all, the soldier armor's maximum strength already made him close to one.

After chatting with his teacher, suddenly...

Du.

"Luo Feng, Jade emperor has requested a call." Babata shouted on his shoulder.

Luo Feng was shocked, Jade emperor? This was the one of his teacher's close friends, and 9 blade knight's number 1 emperor level undying.

"Accept." Luo Feng got up as a sign of respect.

A silhouette appeared on the screen. It was a jade armored extremely beautiful lady Jade Emperor, she spoke coldly, "The knight wishes to meet you, just wait in your villa, I'll be there immediately. I will bring you to meet the knight."

"9 blade knight?"

Luo Feng was shocked, however he still replied respectfully, "Yes!"

In an instant.

Luo Feng stood patiently in his yard outside and gazed at a beam of light flashing towards him, it was Jade emperor.

"Lord, where will we go to meet the knight?" Luo Feng asked curiously.

"You are not an undying yet, hence we cannot go to thunder island. We'll instead go to a special place that he has created." Jade Emperor glanced at Luo Feng. "Follow me to the teleportation point."

"Yes." Luo Feng followed.

They first reached the teleportation point before being sent to 9 Blade knight’s space.

The virtual universe was after all still virtual, hence it was easy to create a large space. Just like the genius competitions, they would normally be held in a created space! Even the Huge Axe Dojo’s broadcast, they were within a large island that was fixed there just for that. Normal undyings didn’t have the right to create their own space, knights however did.

9 Blade knight’s space.

"Wow."

Luo Feng stood at the foot of the mountain, looking up at the 9 majestic mountains that pierced through the clouds, he was shocked. 9 blade like mountains, all of them reached hundreds of thousands of km high. Even with his vision, Luo Feng could barely make out the silhouette of the mountains, the middle tallest mountain was the hardest to see.

"The knight is in the 9 blade shrine." Jade emperor led Luo Feng straight around to the center most mountain’s canyons. Within these canyons was a range of palaces, and all of them were extremely exquisite and beautiful. Of which, 9 blade shrine was the most majestic."

Sou!

Jade emperor and Luo Feng landed before the entrance of 9 blade shrine, 2 undyings standing guard there didn’t even stop them.

"Follow me in." Jade emperor led the way and Luo Feng obediently followed.

...

The entire shrine was engulfed in pressure.

Jade emperor walked towards the steps of the shrine and bowed respectfully, "Knight."

"Knight." Luo Feng bowed respectfully too.

In terms of status, Luo Feng was akin to an official level undying. Hence, he didn’t need to kneel when he saw a knight. Normal sector lords or absolute beginning region members and so on however, had to kneel as a sign of respect when they saw a knight.

"Jade, you may leave." A clear voice resounded.

"Yes." Jade emperor vanished.

Rumble...

The large door of the shrine closed, leaving only two people

within...Luo Feng and 9 blade knight.

"Hm?" Luo Feng was shocked as he felt the door closing. He looked up and saw the green robed purple scaled man in the throne above, the aura that he emanated made people submit.

"Luo Feng." 9 blade knight gazed down below and spoke.

"Here." Luo Feng listened intently.

"Let me ask you." He gazed carefully at Luo Feng and said, "Is there anything you need to report about what happened on earth?"

Luo Feng shook his head, "I'm completely puzzled."

"From what I know, it wasn't just undying knight and Shi Huo knight from the Huge Axe Dojo, there were many other knights that sent their people to earth. Only thing was that earth was too far, hence they all didn't make it in time. With so many knights noticing earth and you as the leader, you should know the reason right." 9 blade knight observed Luo Feng.

"Sir Knight, both undying knight and Shi Huo knight came to buy earth from me, however they didn't tell me the secret." Luo Feng said respectfully. "If I knew the secret of earth, I would have reported it long ago and not allow myself to fall into such a dangerous situation."

9 blade knight carefully observed Luo Feng's gaze and expression

as he spoke.

Finally, he determined...

Luo Feng did indeed not know any secret.

9 blade knight immediately exclaimed, thinking that the Huge Axe Dojo has well guarded all their secrets, to not even tell Luo Feng when they went to buy it. Seemed right too...if the Virtual Universe Company knew of earth's secret, and if it was very important, they would definitely hide it from the Huge Axe Dojo.

"Remember." 9 blade knight's voice got serious.

Luo Feng bowed.

"Other than the island you provided for undying knight, from now on, without the Virtual Universe Company's orders, without my order, you are forbidden from doing any deals regarding earth." 9 blade knight emphasized. "Especially with the knights of the Huge Axe Dojo. No matter how much benefits they give you, you are forbidden from selling earth. You just tell them...this is the order the company has give you and you cannot go against it."

"Yes." Luo feng replied respectfully.

"Go on!" 9 blade knight waved his hand.

Luo Feng vanished from the shrine, he had left the virtual universe.

9 blade knight frowned, muttering, "Secret? They actually kept the secret...then they can give up on acquiring earth."

After meeting 9 blade, especially hearing his final order, Luo Feng very easily understood the reason. Obviously the upper echelon of the Huge Axe Dojo knew of earth's secrets and the Virtual Universe Company didn't. Hence the two of them were in a deadlock. Without them telling the company about the secret, they couldn't even think about getting it.

"Luo Feng, Hong's message."

Not long after chatting with 9 blade knight, Luo Feng received a mail from Hong...scheduling a meeting in 9 star bay.

Virtual universe, black dragon mountain island 9 star bay.

In the quiet yard.

Luo Feng, Hong and the white robed Thunder god gathered.

"The earth sure is in a mess." Thunder god exclaimed. "The moment I'm not here things get so messed up."

"It'll still be messy with you here." Hong smiled. "This matter is

very complex, it’s involves the knights and so on."

"You know about it too big brother?" Luo Feng looked shocked at Hong.

Hong smiled and nodded, "When the billions of people were kept in the world, some friends contacted me via the virtual universe network and told me about it. I was greatly shocked, and after investigating a little, I knew of Shi Huo knight and how he sent his undyings to earth."

Thunder god didn’t even get how special these words were.

Luo Feng however was shocked.

"You can check on such things?" Luo Feng stared in disbelief.

The Huge Axe Dojo was an elite organization like the Virtual Universe Company. The internal matters were governed extremely strictly. The positions and authority were separated very clearly, different levels had different amounts of authority! To be able to check up on how Shi Huo knight sent some undyings to earth, this was unbelievable.

"It’s fine now right?" Hong smiled.

"It’s fine, everybody’s been returned back to earth." Luo Feng still looked curiously at Hong.

"I won’t ask about this, but I’ll ask about you and Shi Huo knight...they didn’t trouble you too much right." Hong asked.

"No." Luo Feng shook his head.

"Hm, I guessed so." Hong exclaimed. "Having Void Gold master as support sure is a good thing. He barely said a few words to Shi Huo knight and he actually listened obediently."

"Void gold master?" Luo Feng stared, "Who is that?"

The white robed thunder god looked shocked at Hong.

Shi Huo knight...that was a being that opened a universe country. To obediently listen to the words of Void gold master, just what terrifying being was this guy.

"Void gold master, 3rd brother, you should know of him." Hong laughed. "We’ve both been to primal chaos city, you should know there are 52 primal chaos tablets."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

"There’s one particular one, called the Sky ruins tablet, and the creator of this tablet...is the great Void gold master." Hong laughed. "That’s a true absolute being, even the universe country leaders have to kneel before him."

Luo Feng was shocked.

Sky ruins tablet was considered very powerful amongst the 52. According to the heavenly bridge's levels, this tablet had 26 levels, just 1 short of the 9 universe tablet Luo Feng studied. In the overall rankings, it was within the top 10!

The huge axe tablet was 1st, the universe tablet was 2nd...

52 tablets, every one of the creators of these tables were true pillars of humanity!

"Void gold master, this, this..." Luo Feng looked shocked at Hong, "Big brother, How do you know him?"

"Luck." Hong laughed.

Chapter 713: Hong's Encounters

Luo Feng was stunned, his encounters were already not bad, having received guidance from Tian Shi palace's leaders back then, and even speaking to undying knight. However, he didn't expect his big brother Hong to have connections with Void gold master.

That was a being that created a primal chaos tablet. In Luo Feng's imagination...the 52 creators of the tablets were the strongest 52 in the history of humanity. Even if his guess was wrong, it wouldn't be too far off. And the Sky ruins tablet was among the top 10!

How powerful was that?

Humanity was a pinnacle race, and one of the top 10 amongst the entire pinnacle race. Such a being...it made others shudder within.

"What luck?" Luo Feng asked.

"Big brother." Thunder god stared too. "I heard you talk about 52 tablets before. Those who are able to create those tablets are all absolute beings of countless eras, and you actually know such a being?"

In truth, Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder god were all ants in the universe. It was unbelievable that such ants knew such pinnacle beings.

"Let me explain that luck to you." Hong smiled and exclaimed.

"Back then when I took part in the special elites training camp, I was finally recruited into the Huge Axe Dojo's core, also proceeding to primal chaos city to train. Didn't I tell you before that I came out from the city?"

"Hm." Luo Feng and Thunder god nodded.

"After leaving the city, I was placed to receive some nurturing from the Huge Axe Dojo." Hong sighed. "And just yesterday, I felt the urge to go attempt the Fantasy island, after that attempt... everything happened."

Luo Feng and Thunder god held their breaths.

Fantasy island?

With their big brother's mental strength, how far could he go? However the consciousness pressure of Fantasy island was more terrifying as it got further, even their big brother shouldn't be able to get too far.

"I went through each island after island." Hong exclaimed. "It was very powerful, it got harder and harder as I got further, the consciousness pressure was terrifying...even for me. I was forced to my limits, finally making it to the 21st island with much difficulty. But, it's a pity that I failed there."

Luo Feng was stunned.

"Big brother, you actually failed?" Thunder god was curious.

"2nd brother, what do you know." Luo Feng cursed, looking at disbelief at Hong. "You...you made it to the 21st level? Just one more step and you'd have finished it?"

"Hm." Hong nodded.

"How's that possible, it's impossible." Luo Feng shook his head. "The consciousness pressure gets more terrifying. At the 10th level, it's already an undying's consciousness pressure, and the 21st is that of a knight. Big brother, you are only at universe level, how'd you withstand the 20th island pressure?"

Hong laughed.

"3rd brother, let me ask you." Hong asked. "Back then, when you were at universe level, how far did you make it?"

"I made it to the 10th island and failed." Luo feng said.

"A sector lord pinnacle may not even pass the 9th island, and yet you passed it at universe level, why?" Hong asked. "If we disregard the illusions behind it, how'd you withstand the consciousness pressure?"

Luo Feng replied, "My willpower was the general, consciousness is the soldiers. With willpower leading, my heart was like a blade, naturally my consciousness and willpower condensed into stone

and forcefully withstood the pressure."

"Haha..."

Hong laughed, "Against a tsunami of consciousness pressure, you know how to condense your willpower and consciousness into a stone. This is considered the 1st level in the 3 levels of mental states. However, the reason why you failed is because you had reached the limit of it, too firm and unyielding!"

"If your mental state training is at your 2nd brother's level, who is able to adapt, then it would be different. With that level of mental state, against the tide of pressure, you'd be soft and gentle, hard when necessary, yet soft when it needs to be. Adapting to each situation, you'd naturally be able to pass the pressure."

"Of course, reaching this 2nd level man and nature as one, the perfect harmony, it would only take you to maybe the 14th and 15th islands. The pressure gets more terrifying after that."

"Even the 3rd level, limitless heart, encompassing all, the pressure was within my limits. Without a limit within, I naturally wouldn't crumble from the pressure." Hong shook his head and smiled. "However, it's a pity that I had just broken through to the 3rd level, without it being fully perfect yet. Hence I failed at the 21st island."

Luo Feng blinked hard.

Damn.

His big brother was absurd.

"When I failed at the 21st island, the upper echelons of the Huge Axe Dojo immediately knew of it. This included Void gold master and the founder of the Huge Axe Dojo." Hong exclaimed. "The great founder gave the order to lockdown this news. Hence even the knights didn’t know of this.’

Luo Feng nodded.

Passing the 20 islands at universe level, this was indeed a terrifying thing, it had attracted the attention of the great beings.

"The founder immediately accepted me as a disciple." Hong smiled. "However, the great founder is still one of the greatest beings of humanity. He wouldn’t have the time to guide me, hence he arranged for Void gold master to teach me first and when I become an emperor level undying, only then would I have the right to go listen to his teachings. Only then would I be considered a true disciple of his. Right now I’m not considered his disciple at all."

Luo Feng was completely stunned.

Miraculous encounter!

Miraculous encounter!

Back then during the genius competitions, even Bolan didn’t have the right to learn from the knights. Only Rong Jun managed to get a knight teacher, and he himself was under True Yan emperor. It could be seen that the knights were proud and were lazy to accept geniuses as disciples. He didn’t expect his big brother Hong to actually exceed everything.

He became a disciple of humanity’s strongest Huge Axe Dojo founder!

Even though it was just in name, it was already impressive.

At least now with Hong receiving guidance from Void gold master, and later on after he became an emperor level undying, he could move on to be taught by the founder himself.

"Big brother, Huge Axe Dojo founder. His tablet ranks top amongst the 52 tablets." Luo Feng looked at him.

"It was simply because of my attempt at the Fantasy island." Hong shook his head and smiled. "Even though the mental state training does nothing to your training, it’s afterall void and intangible. During a true battle, one relies on his spirit energy and genetic energy etc, the true tangible strength."

"Even if my mental state is powerful, a sector lord can still kill me in just one move."

"It acts as a support, only true strength is absolute." Hong exclaimed.

Luo feng smiled.

Thunder god laughed.

"Stop acting." Thunder god laughed.

"Seriously." Luo Feng laughed too, "If Silver snow official's Ji Shi's family gets news of you becoming the founder's disciple, receiving guidance from Void gold master, they'd go mad from regret!"

Hong laughed indifferently.

Hong had exceeded everything, his backing now was shocking.

"Void gold master had told me before." Hong shook his head, "Comprehending the laws has great requirements on blending with them...some may comprehend hundreds to thousands of times faster than others, as their comprehension is deeper and clearer. It's a pity my comprehension is only considered not bad. However it's still hundreds to thousands of times lousier than absolute geniuses like you 3rd brother."

"And with good mental state training supporting, I can at most raise it 2 to 3 times. However it still pales in comparison to geniuses." Hong laughed. "Void gold master even said that my

training time will be very long."

Luo Feng and Thunder god listened intently.

"My mental state training is high, and almost all of the illusions have no effect on me. Hence...he designed a path for me to go towards, as an illusionist fighter." Hong laughed. "Attacking physically along with illusions. This is the best route for me."

"Illusionist fighter?" Luo Feng and thunder god were both stunned.

"Big brother." Thunder god was shocked. "With your mental state at that level, if you use illusions, who'd be able to withstand it?"

Hong laughed, "Even though my position is high now, in order to protect me, everything has been confidential. I'm still an outermost member, even the knights don't know about this."

Luo Feng nodded, feeling happy for his big brother.

His two brothers' talents were far from his own. They were most proficient in mental states, and his big brother used it to jump far ahead. However, a teacher is still but a teacher, for the disciple to get strong, he'd have to train one step at a time.

"2nd brother." Hong looked at Thunder god.

"Hm?" Thunder god was stunned.

"I also recommended you to Void gold master, saying you've reached a high level in mental state training." Hong laughed. "He's already arranged for one of his disciples to accept you, he will be contacting you soon."

Thunder god stared wide eyed.

...

Luo Feng couldn't help but feel happy as he looked at his brothers.

Back then on earth, the 3 of them had very close levels in strength. However, after reaching universe level, his own improvements have been absurd. He was even capable of killing an undying now! However his two brothers fell behind by a lot...and yet, they all had their own encounters now.

"Come on."

"My two brothers, it's not just you. There are the other geniuses of humanity, and even the absolute geniuses of the other countless races, some have strong teachers, and others with their own miraculous encounters, others talents simply heavenly."

"I Luo Feng too will definitely exceed the countless humans and stand at the top."

"Definitely!"

Luo Feng was burning with fighting spirit.

There was only meaning with competition. After being attacked by the bug clan, his perspectives had grown, and so have his ambitions!

Ke Di?

Shi Huo knight?

Geniuses with absolute beings teaching them?

"I want to be stronger than all of them!" Luo Feng muttered.

...

The 3 brothers chatted within the yard.

"Big brother." Luo Feng asked. "Why did the knights of the Huge Axe Dojo send all their undyings to buy earth, just what is that about? What is earth's secret? What about earth has made all of the knights act so madly, you should know it right?"

"Hm." Hong nodded, "This I do know."

Chapter 714: Earth's Secret

"When I passed 20 of the Fantasy islands consecutively, it was a miraculous thing. A universe level passing 20 islands was an unbelievable event. It made the founder and Void gold master take notice, and they quickly learnt that you and 3rd brother, are both from earth." Hong looked at Luo Feng. "3rd brother, you've been regarded as a genius of ten thousand eras, and my passing of the 20 islands...that was even rarer."

"Two geniuses from the same life planet, same generation."

"This was unbelievable to them!" Hong said.

Luo Feng nodded.

During the genius competitions back then, 1,000 of them were picked from 1,008 universe countries. On average, it was about 1 per country. The chances were already low enough. And with Luo Feng's absurd improvement speed, he became a rare genius of ten thousand eras. That was 1 genius from 1,008 universe countries, over ten thousand eras! And that genius was from earth, how low were the chances?

And Hong, such an unbelievable human, was even rarer, and he too was from earth, and he was in the same generation as Luo Feng.

"Hence!"

"The founder of the Huge axe Dojo thought there may be something special about earth, otherwise what are the chances? He immediately headed to earth to check it out, and with that...he discovered earth’s secret." Hong said.

Luo Feng and thunder god held their breaths.

The absolute being, founder of the Huge Axe Dojo actually came to check out earth.

"What secret?" Thunder couldn’t help but ask.

"What did he find?" Luo Feng was anxious too.

"The true secret, it’s terrifying." Hong emphasized.

Thunder god quickly said, "Can we say this secret in the virtual universe. Whatever we say here may be discovered by the virtual universe system."

"Relax."

Hong laughed, "Back then when I met the founder of the Huge Axe Dojo, we had a chat about it. And also when I met and chatted with void gold master, I asked him about the safety of this issue. He replied...that it’s absolutely safe, even if the upper echelon of the Virtual Universe Company wanted to find out some

information. Different levels of management had different levels authority. Hence nothing will be revealed. Unless you are a traitor of humanity or danger to the company, otherwise there's no need to worry."

Luo Feng nodded.

The Virtual Universe Company was terrifying. Whether one was in an internal world, god country, actual universe, dark universe or primal universe...one could enter the virtual universe at anytime and communicate with others.

This ability was heavenly.

"Don't bother about the system, what is earth's secret, big brother? Stop keeping us in suspense." Luo Feng asked.

Hong put down his teacup and emphasized. "When the founder came to check out earth, he discovered...that earth had long been remodeled."

"Remodeled?" Thunder god was curious.

"What remodeling?" Luo Feng asked.

"The founder told me...that a trillion years ago, earth was remodeled by an absolute being. Normal life planets usually only had resources for people to survive. Earth however is very special. As long as one was born here, especially affected by earth's

formless influence during pregnancy period, their souls will have special evolutions."

"Hm?"Luo Feng and thunder god stared wide eyed.

Evolution?

"One of the evolution effects of the humans of earth, is in the mental state side...it’s easier for them to comprehend and raise their mental states." Hong emphasized. "Hence, in the history of earth, within just china alone, there are many sacred beings with extremely high levels of mental states."

"What?" the two stared in disbelief.

"I didn’t believe it too." Hong shook his head and exclaimed. "However the great founder found marks of the remodeling and deduced...the identity of that being."

"Who was it?" Luo Feng asked.

"The founder didn’t say. However, when he chatted with Void gold master, I heard the gist of it." Hong shook his head. "That great being had unbelievable power, and even Void gold master said he was weaker than him. Only the founder of the Huge Axe Dojo could stand on par with him."

Luo Feng felt it was unbelievable.

The founder of the Huge Axe Dojo, he was a true absolute being of humanity. And that great being could actually stand on par with him?

"The founder had exclaimed before...that that great being was impressive. He had once created an entire race, creating body evolution in strength, resulting in an evolved powerful race. The only weakness was...in terms of mental states, they were weaker. I think they were called the Flame god race." Hong said.

"Flame god race?" Thunder god was suspicious.

Luo Feng however was completely stunned.

The secret Hong had revealed was simply too heavenly. That great being which actually created the entire race was the Flame god race! He himself had acquired the black metal board on earth and within it were the words of the flame god race, it was a manual used to evolve one's body...now that he had heard it, he sort of guessed.

"According to the founder and Void gold master's exchange." Hong exclaimed, "That great being, had once taken a group of humans to evolve them, finally creating an entire new race called the flame god race!"

"Flame god race, it centered about body evolution, but it's weakness was in mental states."

"Maybe because of that, the great being remodeled earth. It was like a basket to him, he would catch a group of humans and place them on earth, wanting to let the many generations of humans evolve and produce beings that were extremely adept at mental states." Hong said. "In an ancient time long ago, earth wasn’t even a human territory. Hence the great being could naturally nurture his humans that way. However later on, the territory earth was in was taken over by humans. Hence that being had to leave."

Luo Feng and Thunder god stared wide eyed.

Luo Feng however believed it.

A great being of a race...

Like the being that left behind the demon note inheritance. He too had to leave when humanity took over the region! Demon mountain was separated into Ice mountain and demon note mountain, of which the demon note inheritance was in demon note mountain. Luo Feng naturally suspected there was another inheritance left in the ice mountain.

One had to know that the universe was vast and mysterious, producing trillions of races. Humanity was but one of them.

Naturally, there would be some other great beings from other races!

There would be the strong and also the weak, the strong were comparable to humanity's strongest!

"They are too powerful. They were able to create an entire race, Flame god race...so it was created by that great being." Luo Feng was extremely shocked. "Earth was used as a nurturing ground to nurture other races. Only later on it was taken over by humanity. Hence, that being had to leave."

"Unbelievable." Thunder god stared and said.

"There are many unbelievable things." Hong smiled. "Even though humans are a pinnacle race, there are many others in the vast universe, who are even stronger and more powerful, along with countless other middle and weak races. Maybe if they are alone, they are weaker than humans, however with the trillions of races added together, who knows how many absolute beings there are."

Luo Feng nodded.

There were many super powers around, like the beast god in Blood River world, like the founder of demon mountain, the creator of the flame god race...and other pinnacle beings such as the creator of the 52 primal chaos tablets in primal chaos city. Those beings couldn't be too far off.

...

Luo Feng and Thunder god were obviously still reeling from the shock.

"This great being had used countless amounts of energy to remodel earth, how much do you think earth is worth?"

"Limitless." Thunder god said.

"At least more than a universe country." Luo Feng nodded too.

As a member of one of the pinnacle beings of the universe, the remodeled earth naturally was a true treasure.

"With earth as the center of remodeling, the surrounding 1,000 light years and countless planets have been remodeled slightly too. The entire remodeling had earth as its core." Hong said, "Hence, earth has to remain in this specific solar system, it cannot be moved away. The moment it’s moved, it will lose its special attributes."

"The remodeled earth is very special."

"Even if it’s damaged, and left with remains, as time flows, it will naturally reform itself." Hong laughed. "The founder of the Huge Axe Dojo also discovered over the long passages of time, that after the great being left, earth has been almost destroyed 12 times. Yet, time and again it reformed itself."

"Ah."

Luo Feng and Thunder god could only listen.

Even though mental state was important, it was as intangible as anything else.

To become strong, there were a few requirements such as talent, willpower and resources.

Resource referred to training techniques, teachers and other treasures to get strong. If one didn't have training techniques, just like earth during the great nirvana period, even the sacred people of the time wouldn't be able to last. The past earth lacked just that.

Talent, one without talent may become strong, but it was hard for them to become an absolute warrior. Others train for a day while that person may take 10 years, how could they compare?

Willpower, even with talent and resources, if one didn't have willpower, unable to take the solitude...they wouldn't make it far. Becoming an absolute power required extreme willpower.

The three of them were all important.

People with strong mental states naturally had strong willpower! And sufficient patience!

Strong mental state, it could also be used to defend against

illusions etc.

Hence to the entire humanity...placing a few strong bloodlines on earth to be influenced by it, when their children were born, they only needed to train and teach it well for their mental states to easily rise. The moment that happened...including the bloodline and talent, with large amount of resources, the number of absolute warriors would greatly rise.

"Mental state is but an assistant to becoming an absolute warrior." Hong said. "My appearance has shocked the upper echelon of the Huge Axe Dojo, but earth's appearance was what truly gave them a surprise. Afterall, when one reaches the level of Void gold master or the founder of the Huge Axe Dojo, they all had absurd levels of power. They could all create their own race while others may not be able to do so. Naturally they realized the importance of earth."

Luo Feng sighed.

Everything was clear now.

Earth's background, it involved a great being.

"I'm the leader of earth, with such a treasure, I will face a lot of trouble next time." Luo Feng thought. "Who cares, I'll let the Virtual Universe Company deal with the Huge Axe Dojo."

Chapter 715: Luo Feng's Choice

After knowing earth's secret, Luo Feng was clear that earth was a nurturing basket for which a great being had spent countless amounts of energy in remodeling. It's worth was immeasurable and wasn't something he could control alone.

It was like a treasure wanted by two gods, however a child had gotten it instead. It wasn't a windfall but instead a disaster! The gods wouldn't care about the child's death. To the Huge Axe Dojo and Virtual Universe Company, Luo Feng wasn't even an ant.

"Just wait." Luo Feng thought so.

...

However the Virtual Universe Company and the Huge Axe Dojo's upper echelon were moving very swiftly, just 3 hours after Luo Feng's conversation with his brothers...

Virtual universe, Yu Xiang Mountain primal region. Luo Feng's villa welcomed two guests.

"Luo Feng!"

A clear voice resounded within his villa, and within everyone's ears. Luo Feng quickly flew out and landed in the yard.

"Hm?" Luo Feng looked up and got a shock, "9 blade knight!"

Two silhouettes were chatting and walking over. One of them was the green armored man with purple scales on his head, 9 blade knight. Beside him was a lady in ancient red armor, she wore a veil on her face, revealing only her jade green eyes.

They walked in mid air and instantly landed in the villa.

"This lady is walking beside 9 blade knight, she must be a knight too." Luo Feng thought.

"Greetings knight."

Luo Feng bowed respectfully.

9 blade knight and the jade eyed lady glanced at Luo Feng. The lady smiled and said, "This must be Luo Feng. His luck is really good, to actually own a territory with such a special place like earth."

"Haha..." 9 blade laughed too, his gaze landing on Luo Feng, "Luo Feng, let’s talk in the living room."

"Yes knight."

Luo Feng respectfully led the two knights into the living room.

The doors closed behind them.

Even though his living room was far from a god shrine, it was still very spacious. 9 blade knight and the lady sat casually about, while Luo Feng stood beside them.

"No need to be nervous." The lady's voice was like a 100 bird calls. It made one feel comfortable, "I represent the virtual universe company and I'm here to discuss matters about earth."

"It's here." Luo Feng thought.

He didn't dare speak as he thought, as he was very clear about the fact that he was just a piece of meat and the Virtual Universe Company was the knife!

"The Ganwu universe country is within the control of our Virtual Universe Company. The entire universe country belongs to the company. Technically, as long as the company orders it, we can take away your rights to earth." The lady said indifferently.

Luo Feng listened obediently.

"However, the company has decided to act according to the rules." She flipped her hand and a file appeared. "Take a look, these are the deals the company has arranged for you regarding earth. There are two transactions, it's up to you to choose."

"Yes." Luo Feng received it respectfully.

He exclaimed within...

For the Virtual Universe Company to come up with these transactions, it represented them giving him two choices. However, about the underlying message , he was clear about what they meant...he only had two choices, nothing else!

This was tyranny!

However everybody would understand that this was natural. It was something done by one of the two great leviathans of humanity, naturally this was how it was going to be. And they even gave Luo Feng two choices...this was already kindness on their part.

"There are two files, but the 1st has more benefits for you. Pick whichever you want." The lady said.

Luo Feng looked at the files.

The contents weren't complex at all, it was mainly explaining the two deals.

The 1st was Luo Feng selling earth to the Virtual Universe Company, everything in regards to earth from then on would be handled by the company! Of course, with regards to the promise Luo Feng had given, about giving undying knight an island...the company would handle that.

By selling earth, Luo Feng would get 200 billion mixed elements.

Even though the number was huge, any knight would be able to easily fork it out. Compared to the worth of earth...200 billion was extremely little. However, for the company to be willing to give Luo Feng this much, it was already not bad.

For the sake of his safety however, they wouldn't give it all at once to him.

As the huge wealth would make many undyings go mad for, there would be those willing to take risks to deal with Luo Feng and steal his wealth.

Hence...

The file stated the following.

At Domain lord level, Luo Feng would get 20 million mixed elements.

At Sector lord level, Luo Feng would get 2 hundred million mixed elements.

At Undying level, Luo Feng would get the remaining 199.78 billion mixed elements.

The 1st deal concluded that way. This was all in consideration for Luo Feng, Two hundred million mixed elements may not be much for a primal region sector lord member, but it was still ok.

The 2nd deal, considered the fact that Luo Feng maintained his position of earth being his home even against the Huge Axe Dojo, unwilling to sell it. Hence it came up with a plan.

The details were, The humans of earth could remain there. However, the entire earth's surface area was close to 1.5 hundred million km. It's sea surface area was 3.6 hundred million km, its sea surface area was much bigger. With the humans living on land, all of the air above the sea would belong to the Virtual Universe Company, and the company would build a floating city etc over it.

Also it promised...

That there would be nothing over the land areas.

It was obvious the company was giving way to Luo Feng in this, allowing the humans of earth to remain on earth, and only building floating cities over the sea areas. With the promise that it wouldn't disrupt the lives of the humans of earth, also...giving large amount of resources to nurture the people of earth.

This deal had much lower benefits. Luo Feng could at most receive 50 billion mixed elements, this was only ½ of the 1st option.

These were how he would be paid.

At Domain lord level, he would get 5 million mixed elements.

At Sector lord level, he would get 50 million mixed elements.

At Undying level, he would get the remaining 49.95 billion mixed elements.

...

There was silence in the living room.

9 blade knight and the lady waited patiently, Luo Feng looked at the files and finally looked up.

"Have you finished?" The lady asked Luo Feng.

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

The two deals may seem like he was being bullied, with the first giving 200 billion mixed elements and the 2nd only giving 50 billion. Also, the payments were divided into 3 payouts! Luo Feng however was very clear...his right of earth, was something the Virtual Universe Company could easily take from him, without leaving him a single cent. Even the deal Yan Zhu emperor had tried to deal with him before had the highest price of only 1 billion mixed elements.

It was obvious that in the upper echelon’s eyes...

Luo Feng was a lucky punk.

To actually give him these benefits was already an act of kindness from them. Their little action alone naturally was a huge amount.

Two deals.

Especially the 2nd one, Luo Feng was very satisfied with. At least the humans of earth needn’t change their lifestyles. The Virtual Universe Company would at most build their floating cities above the sea regions and promised not to disrupt the earth humans lives. Without any other circumstance, this was already a good deal.

"Which will you pick?" The lady looked at Luo Feng, "You have to pick one."

"The 2nd." Luo Feng said.

"The 2nd?"

Both knights revealed a look of shock as they exchanged glances.

She laughed, her voice resounding in his ears. "You must think carefully. The 1st is a reward of 200 billion, but the 2nd only gives

50 billion...the differences is 150 billion mixed elements. Even a knight would feel the pinch from such an amount, can you give it up? If your comrades leave earth, can't they still lead their lives?"

"Do you want to change your choice?" The lady looked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng shook his head and said softly, "It's my home, I have no other choice. I cannot let my countless comrades leave their homes."

The lady and 9 blade knight both had a sense of appreciation within their eyes. There were many powerful warriors in the universe, over the long dangerous journeys, they would risk everything for treasures. 150 billion was such a treasure, and was able to buy many items and important treasures, and it was enough to make countless undyings go crazy for it.

For home, he was willing to give it up?

Many warriors would respect Luo Feng's choice.

Respect was respect...however there would still be many that would simply pick the 1st choice. Afterall, only few recognized the importance of home that much.

"This is the contract."

"With the acknowledgement of the virtual universe system,

signing this contract means it’s settled." The lady flipped her hand and another folder appeared, it was the contract.

The lady first signed and passed it along to Luo Feng.

Luo Feng signed his name as well.

...

Within the living room.

Luo Feng sat alone, 9 blade knight and the jade eyed lady had already left.

"Luo Feng." Babata shouted happily. "The universe galaxy bank has sent a mail, your total has increased by 5 million mixed elements. The 1st amount from the agreement has already been deposited. That was fast."

"Ah." Luo Feng sat in his sofa. Leaning back, he lifted a cup of amber colored wine.

"Why?" Babata asked curiously on Luo Feng’s shoulder. He felt that Luo Feng was somewhat fatigued.

"Nothing."

Luo Feng said softly, "I feel weak!"

"Weak?" Babata blinked.

"Against the Huge Axe Dojo and Virtual Universe Company, even against Shi Huo knight, 9 blade knight and Yan Zhu emperor...I have no way to withstand them at all." Luo Feng said softly, after which he downed the amber colored wine.

"Being weak is not wrong, accepting and letting yourself stay weak is the problem!" Babata shouted. "Even the great founder of the Huge Axe Dojo, or the founder of the Virtual Universe Company, those pinnacle beings, which one of them didn't start from a weak little thing, only slowly growing until they could stand at the pinnacle of trillions of races?"

Luo Feng's eyes gleamed with anticipation. That burning passion was enough to melt a glacier. "Only through growth and my own strength, would I be able to truly get strong. Babata, you are right, I need to keep on moving one step at a time, until I become an absolute being."

Chapter 716: Hong Alliance?

After the contract was signed, things were naturally carried out according to the contract.

The Huge Axe Dojo wouldn’t dare come find Luo Feng again. Also, the Virtual Universe Company’s efficiency was extremely high, as it immediately sent large amounts of people via god country teleportation to earth, and began to build their floating city. They also started building a shrine in the outer regions of the solar system, its size was almost comparable to the sun.

In this shrine, absolute beings were stationed. Afterall, earth was simply too important.

"The Virtual Universe Company did promise not to disrupt the lives of the people." Luo Feng saw everything happen himself.

...

Luo Feng, who had been patiently staying on earth, was also waiting for the results of the highest point mission. Afterall, he massacred at an extreme level during the 1st level’s Flame god organization mission...as for the completion rate, he didn’t know the results yet.

5 days later.

"Luo Feng, mail, mail." Babata’s voice resounded in his mind.

Luo Feng who was in the yard sipping tea with his brother Luo Hua sent a thread of consciousness into the virtual universe network.

Virtual universe Yu Xiang Mountain primal region, Luo Feng’s villa.

Within his study.

The moment he sat down, Babata, who was on his shoulder said with a glee, "It’s from the Virtual Universe Company, and the subject is related to the highest point mission."

"Hm."

Luo feng gently tapped the screen and opened the mail.

The details were...

"You’ve already completed the 1st level of the highest point mission. The members have judged that your final completion rate is 82%, hence you will get 82,000 points. This also means that you have the right to move on to the 2nd level."

"Evaluation: The mission was for you Luo Feng to judge the 18 executives of the Flame wind organization, it didn’t ask for you to judge their guards along with their corrupted guests and clients.

You however massacred everybody, killing over a million of them. Obviously, you are blood thirsty by nature, and you even used claws and close combat, not even feeling any disdain from killing over a million of them. Also, your gaze hardly even changed...you enjoy killing from within, you love the thrill from close combat, this is a bit dangerous. Humans are innately not a bloodthirsty race, even though the population is extremely huge, there are very few with bloodthirst in their bones."

"Even the races in the universe that are bloodthirsty, they are extremely few."

"However!"

"When you kill, you are cold and collected, as to who to kill and who not to, you are distinct. To kill over a million and not let the blood affect you...still clearly making distinct decisions on who to kill and who to spare, it's obvious you are not controlled by the bloodthirst, it hasn't affected your core."

"In summary, despite your blood thirsty nature, we still gave you 82% completion!"

Luo Feng immediately laughed when he saw the mail.

82% completion? That was risky, he almost ended the highest point mission immediately.

The evaluation did make sense.

Right.

The mission had told him to judge the 18 executives, yet he killed everybody within the organization, and even the corrupted clients and their underlings.

"According to the evaluation, they let me pass because they could see I was calm and collected, and was not affected by the massacre." Luo Feng laughed. Even though it made sense, however if they had let him do the mission again, the result would still be the same. Luo Feng would never change the way he did things just from some evaluation.

That scums, they were the vermin of humanity.

They were completely corrupt!

If he didn’t see it, it would be fine. But since he saw everything and knew the truth, he naturally had to kill them!

"I’ll just do things my way, who cares how many points I get." Luo Feng thought. "I don’t wish to change the way I do things because of their words."

"Di!"

A new mail appeared on the screen. Babata shouted out, "It’s the

2nd level."

Luo Feng smiled and opened the mail. The subject read ‘Highest Point mission 2nd level.’

Details...

"This mission is the 2nd level of the highest point mission."

"Mission background: In the Gu Lun universe country region, there’s a powerful emperor level undying Blood demon emperor. He is a lone wolf and antisocial in nature, he’s also not a member of the 5 leviathans. Within the universe country he controls the Du Tuo star field. That is his sole territory, and it’s completely under his control. As he is an important member of the Hong Alliance, he has absolute control over this area and the Gu Lun universe country itself has no power over it."

Luo Feng was interested in the words background.

Hong Alliance!

"Hong alliance?" Luo Feng frowned and muttered, "And it says that Blood demon emperor is a lone wolf, anti social in nature. Yet he is an important member of the Hong alliance."

"It’s simple, it shows that the alliance is a lax one, and that it doesn’t have many requirements from its members. Only a lax alliance would let lone wolf members join." Babata exclaimed on

his shoulder. "However, the requirements to join this alliance must be a harsh one. After following your teacher for so many years, we've never even heard of it. This shows that he didn't have the rights to even join them."

Luo Feng nodded.

He recalled back then in demon note mountain in the demon note inheritance palace, there were two undyings that spoke when they reached the core. Luo Feng clearly remembered their conversation.

"Ah, how come there are only 8 palaces without people, the rest are all filled?"

"Hm? That's weird, the report from Hong Alliance stated that there were 9 empty. Hm, who cares, we are just two people. Whether it's 8 or 9, we have our spaces."

The simple conversation between the two undyings back then was enough to perk Luo Feng's curiosity.

The demon note inheritance was obviously very valuable. After chatting with his teacher True Yan, it also showed him...that he had taken the slot of Drizzle mist emperor! A slot so valuable even to an emperor level undying...yet it was decided by the Virtual Universe Company or Huge Axe Dojo, it was from a Hong alliance he had never heard of.

Luo Feng had a feeling.

The Hong alliance’s influence must be huge!

"It is indeed powerful."

"A lone wolf, just because he’s an important member of the alliance, he controls a starfield and can operate it independent of the universe country. It’s his own country." Luo Feng exclaimed. Even though there were countries like the Black Dragon Mountain empire etc within the Ganwu universe country along with other undying lands.

The Ganwu universe country still had control over them.

He was shocked by this mysterious Hong alliance. He quickly connected to the virtual network and started searching for it, gently tapping the screen.

"Di."

Search complete.

It was completely blank.

"Damn, my authority is already really high, yet I cannot find anything about them. Just how high in power are they...where are they from?" Luo Feng thought, immediately searching up on Blood

demon emperor.

Di!

One piece of information popped up.

Luo Feng opened it to read.

"Blood demon emperor, name Du Tuo, he is arrogant and has incredible strength and power. He was extremely powerful even amongst the emperor level undyings. He's been stationed for a long time in Du Tuo starfield, and has 36 undyings under him. He's a big independent power from the Gu Lun universe country."

This information didn't mention the Hong alliance, however it mentioned his undying underlings etc.

Luo Feng sat at his desk and pondered about the information regarding Blood demon emperor and the Hong alliance. Even though it was little, he could only deduce...that this arrogant Blood demon emperor, being a part of the Hong alliance, only showed that the alliance was...extremely powerful. Even the slots for the demon note inheritance were decided by them.

Luo Feng shook his head and continued reading the mission details.

"Mission details: Within the Du Tuo Starfield that Blood demon emperor controls, there's a very brutal test called the Blood demon

trials. This has later been called the Blood demon hell by the people of the Du Tuo starfield. This trial would be organized over tens of thousands of galaxies in the star field, however the period of time over which it stretched was very long. However in a month, the Meng Ya galaxy and the Wei Li galaxy will begin its trials simultaneously.

The Meng Ya galaxy will hold a High level demon trial. The trial details state that capturing and placing 1 million star level humans onto a mineral planet, making them fight it out and slaughter until only 10 are left. Only then will the trial stop. The remaining 10 will be absorbed into Blood demon planet.

The Wei Li galaxy will hold a low level blood demon trail. The trial details states that capturing 10 billion star traveller level humans, fighting until only 100 are left. The final 100 will be absorbed into Blood demon planet.

The death rate is too high.

10 billion being reduced to 100, 1 million star levels down to 10... this high death rate has made the people of the star field incredibly terrified of the trials. However, the entire starfield is suppressed by the government, as they've gotten rid of any advanced technology. Many planets don't even have universe ships, or even basic technological tools.

Du Tuo starfield is a huge cage.

However, Blood Demon emperor, outside of the trials, has been

very kind towards his countless life planets. As he doesn't kill too much and has never breached the limit, we cannot punish him.

Mission request:

Both trials will be held simultaneously in Meng Ya and Wei Li galaxy. As they are separated...Luo Feng, even with your undying guard's god country teleportation, you'll only be able to save one galaxy.

Your mission is...

Stop the Blood demon trail, and save the members by keeping them in a world ring.

As for which galaxy to save, it's your choice! Please remember, that the moment the mission begins, your synchronized broadcast will be turned on. All details of the mission will be sent to the virtual universe.

The billions of lives are in your hands...

Luo Feng, you decide!

If your final completion rate reaches 80%, you can move on to the 3rd level. If it's below 80%, the highest point mission ends."

The details weren't long, Luo Feng's expression however changed

as he read.

Two blood demon trials were going on simultaneously, but he could only pick one to save, which would it be?

Chapter 717: Struggle

"Luo Feng." The fist sized Babata on his shoulder muttered, "The Meng Ya and Wei Li galaxies are extremely far apart. Even with the Yun Mo planet Ship, it'd take at least 8 days to travel. Also, we still have to get over from the Ganwu universe country...from here to the Gu Lun universe country, it's too far, you'd have to ask Dylan for help and teleport via his god country. Otherwise we'd waste at least half a year. The Blood demon trials start in a month."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

He was still pondering which galaxy to go to.

"Have you picked yet?" Babata asked. "The Virtual Universe Company let you choose, one side is 1 million star levels and the other is 10 billion star travellers. From what I see, picking the star travellers shows you are kind, naturally picking the side with more people. However if you pick the 1 million star levels, it shows you have the thought process of the strong, there are many powerful warriors in the universe...they all think that the strong have more right to live."

Luo Feng nodded.

Under Blood demon emperor's government suppressing the star field, they must have gone through a lot to even reach star level.

As for the star traveller level, any galaxy could easily produce over 10 billion star travellers. It was obvious that due to Blood

demon emperor, even the general public had reached star travellers level already.

Would it be the normal 10 billion people.

Or the 1 million star levels that have gone through trials and torture.

"I pick Wei Li galaxy." Luo Feng emphasized.

Luo Feng didn't dare waste time. Within the same day, he sat in the Yun Mo planet ship and left earth, letting Dylan teleport them via his god country and going straight to the Gu Lun universe country's Yu Fu star field. After which, they flew straight towards Wei Li galaxy, that alone would take about 26 days.

In the dark universe, the Yun Mo planet ship flew.

In the control room, Luo Feng was chatting with Dylan.

"What a coincidence. Dylan, your god country marker was left in the Yu Fu starfield, which is the closest one to Du Tuo starfield. It'll take 26 days to get there, heading to Meng Ya would take 25 days." Luo Feng looked at Dylan, smiling, "Did the Virtual Universe Company ask you before sending this mission?"

Dylan smiled and nodded.

"Damn." Luo Feng couldn’t help but curse.

It was true!

The Virtual Universe Company had indeed planned everything out perfectly. It had probably already ordered Dylan to leave markers around the Gu Lun universe country, but not use them yet.

"The Virtual Universe Company, has planned everything for their training." Dylan smiled. "Don’t be angry."

"I understand." Luo Feng nodded.

Luo Feng didn’t have any grievances against the Virtual Universe Company.

As one of the two greatest powers of humanity, naturally when they do things, it was all with the thought of protection and strengthening humanity in mind! Ever since he had joined the Virtual Universe Company, Luo Feng had always been fairly satisfied with them, even with regards to the deal about earth was considered fair.

If a normal person on earth discovered a treasure and it’s worth was over 1 million mixed elements, Luo Feng, with his position on earth...would probably buy it also.

Giving just 18 billion earth dollars would suffice.

From Luo Feng’s perspective...that much money was enough for a normal person to live without any worries for the rest of their life.

1 theory!

To the Virtual Universe Company, earth was a nurturing basket that a great being had spent countless energy on remodeling, and its price was limitless. Even a great knight’s wealth wouldn’t be able to purchase a fraction of it. However, they couldn’t simply give Luo Feng such an amount of wealth.

"Your majesty, why’d you pick the 10 billion star travellers and not the 1 million star levels?" Dylan asked curiously. "Without any technology and the blood demon government suppressing them, 99% of them wouldn’t find it easy at all to break through to star level. And from what I’ve found, the overall evolution of Du Tuo star field is pretty high. Any life planet would easily have tens to hundreds of thousands of star travellers, it’s not hard for a galaxy to have 10 billion star travellers, these are all normal warriors."

"Everyone is an independent life form." Luo Feng said softly. "My home had been through countless calamities before, I know the tragedy of death."

"Just like my relatives, they were all normal people back then too, are they not worth anything? At least to me, my relatives are worth more than 1 million sector lords! And for those normal people, they all have that one life each, and it’s worth more than 1

million star levels."

"10 billion normal people should die so 1 million star levels can live?"

Luo Feng shook his head.

There is no such thing!

If it involved a race and its survival, such sacrifices may have to be made. For example...Tens of millions of people in a race may die just to protect a powerful warrior, because he was the only hope for their race's survival.

And since Luo Feng's choice this time didn't involve the survival of a race.

He naturally picked the normal people.

26 days later.

In the air above a yellow planet, the Yun Mo planet ship floated.

"This is not a life planet, it's almost round and has a diameter of 18,023 km." Babata's sharp voice resounded. "According to the Virtual Universe Company, this is where the Blood demon trail will be held. Look...there are already a lot of people stationed here. However relax! They cannot detect us."

"Hm."

Luo feng gazed below, this mineral planet did have over a 100 people stationed, half of them universe level.

"Let’s wait for when the 10 billion star travellers are sent over." Luo feng said softly.

At that moment, the 10 billion star travellers from the hundreds of thousands of planets were being transported over in 10,000 universe ships. They were all travelling in the dark universe and heading over.

...

Within one particular ship, all 3 levels were jammed full with cages. Every one of them had 10 star travellers within. With one glance...every level had countless star travellers within, some even had hundreds of thousands.

"Mom."

"Liz..."

Faint crying and muttering resounded from the tens of thousands of cages, this...was simply hell.

Within one cage.

A youth dressed in torn animal skin was hugging a girl tightly. Because of blood demon's government...the evolution of the Du Tuo starfield humans were high. Hence, it was normal to see star travellers, and they would normally pick these youths to undergo the trials.

"Wuwa." The youth hugged the girl, his eyes gleaming beneath his dirty face. It had hope, hope of life, he gently said confidently, "Brother will definitely help you survive, definitely."

The girl suddenly shook.

She was a pretty looking girl, even though she was dirty and unwashed too, one could see she was pretty. However in Du Tuo starfield...strength was already the absolute, if strength wasn't enough, appearances didn't mean a thing.

"Big brother." She said, "Will we die? I heard only a 100 will survive the Blood demon trials from 10 billion. Many of these 10 billion come from various sects, they have spirit weapons, genetic weapons, and others have techniques. As for us, we don't have any weapons and only know some basic techniques, how will we survive?"

The youth began to tear up the moment he heard this.

He had a tragic fate since young.

His parents had died young and he had to take his younger sister to wander and learn as much as they could, finally reaching star traveller level and was able to lead a safe peaceful life. However, it hadn’t even been 2 years of peace...and those without background were all captured and forced to participate. Every planet had to hit a quota of people to send.

If the normal people weren’t enough, the star travellers with backgrounds were captured too!

The Blood demon trials took place under the order of Blood demon emperor. Hence, no one dared go against it.

"We will survive, definitely, big brother swears it." The youth said softly.

"Hm." The girl replied softly, burying her head once again in his chest.

Maybe...

These final few days lying in her brother’s chest before the nightmare began, was the most happiness she could enjoy.

"Definitely." The youth gripped his right fist hard. His nail pierced his palm, and his eyes were somewhat hysterical, as he shouted within, "I must let my sister survive, definitely."

100 out of 10 billion.

What was that?

It was plainly a mass massacre. Even those with techniques, genetic armor and weapons, these geniuses would be surrounded and killed if they weren't careful. Afterall, the density of 10 billion on a normal mineral planet was too much. The moment the battles and killing began...no one had a guarantee to survive?

And to be able to live to the end, one had to have power! Brains! Guts! And also luck!

...

As for the lower level struggles, all the star travellers who were about to begin the trials were all afraid of it. Even if they had strength...against countless people fighting, they too would feel despair.

...

"Ship 0229, stop at position 0293!"

"Ship 3619, stop at position 0123!"

The yellow planet had long been remodeled, and at this time, this dead silent planet had a dark purple flat ship floating in the air. It

was giving orders to the many ships delivering the star travellers, and these many ships opened their cabin doors as they landed.

Large amounts of cages were opened and a blur of dirty unwashed men and women filled with fear on their faces walked out, the blur of people walked within the planet.

The temperature of the planet was very low, roughly below 80, and as it was a mineral planet, there was no way to breathe. However star travellers no longer needed to breathe.

"Hmm..."

"So, so many people."

The large amount of star travellers that were dropped off flew away the moment they landed. They could all see extremely far away. There was a blur of silhouettes...there were already over 5 billion now. When have they ever seen so many star travellers?

At this time...

A camouflaged blood colored triangular ship was floating tens of thousands of km above the planet, observing all the star travellers on the planet.

Chapter 718: La Peter

Within the ship’s control room.

"5,729 ships have already arrived, 5.729 billion star travellers have arrived." Babata’s child like voice resounded within the control room. "Another ship has arrived, 5730…5733…5734…"

Luo Feng and Dylan just gazed on.

All of the star travellers forced to participate in this blood demon trial all had looks of fear and unrest. Hence, they were carefully glancing at each other. Only those close to each other truly trusted and helped each other, this sort of pressure and fear…

Even Luo Feng could feel it, despite being high up in the sky.

"10 billion of them." Luo Feng thought.

"Being controlled by Blood demon emperor, that’s their bad luck." Dylan shook his head.

"Doesn’t the virtual universe care about it?" Luo Feng shook his head and frowned. "Even though they are considered universe citizens, these are after all star travellers too,, this is akin to a huge massacre. And this sort of thing was happening in every galaxy. There are over tens of thousands of galaxies in the Du Tuo starfield that he controls…and the blood trials happen over a long period of time. Considering the massacre of so many universe citizens, does

the company not even say anything?"

Dylan looked at Luo Feng and shook his head, "Unless it reaches a critical amount, the company and Huge Axe Aojo cannot do anything."

"Critical amount"

Luo Feng thought.

He remembered the details of the mission mentioning that if the number of people killed didn’t hit the restricted amount, they couldn’t be punished.

"This isn’t even the limit yet? Just what is it then?" Luo Feng couldn’t help but ask.

"Luo Feng, the limit is calculated per planet." Dylan explained. "If every year, every life planet has a limit of 200 star travellers that could be killed, and every galaxy has 200,000 life planets. Then in 1 year, the number of star travellers that could be killed in a single galaxy would be one hundred million. And the number for this blood demon trial that occurs every 100 years would be...10 billion! Of course at different levels of power and position, the limit is different too. An emperor level undying or knight naturally has different standards. A knight can kill in the trillions without any repercussions, of course...they too have a limit to uphold."

Luo Feng understood.

Privilege!

Just like Void gold master, that level of being, he could probably kill off half of a universe country with countless deaths and still have no repercussions at all. At most, he would get a slight punishment from the upper echelons of humanity.

"They cannot ban killing from those managing the planet territories." Dylan said, "Blood demon emperor controls the entire Du Tuo star field with billions of planets. Since it's citizens were countless...his blood demon trials only took so many people, and this amount doesn't even get close to the limit. After all, other than the trials...he doesn't randomly massacre citizens on the planets. He knows the importance of steadiness too, the better the billions of planets advance, continuously producing warriors, the stronger and more solid his power grows."

"Hmph."

Luo Feng frowned, "This method of picking elites, doesn't he fear that the elites would eventually hate him?"

"So what if they do, they would be constantly nurtured, and when they become sector lords...only then would they have the right to have their souls invaded to become blood demon soldiers." Dylan shook his head.

"Blood demon soldiers?" Luo Feng was stunned.

"Blood demon emperor has created a technique, through which he’s currently capable of controlling 999 undying slaves." Dylan said indifferently. "And his undying disciples and slaves, along with the sector lord disciples, they all train in this technique as well. Hence, they too can control a few slaves, however those that were all controlled were elites."

"Blood demon emperor controls undying slaves and nurtures his disciples, the undying slaves then control another new group, and those elites and exceptional worthy ones will train in the technique too..." Dylan smiled coldly, "As long as one is controlled, he becomes a blood demon soldier."

Luo Feng’s expression changed.

"And the blood demon trial was created precisely for picking the blood demon soldiers." Dylan smiled coldly. "The never ending supply of elite geniuses from the entire starfield, they would all end up in Blood demon emperor’s hands! His governance is incredibly sturdy and matchless...he is definitely a terrifying being amongst the emperor level undyings."

...

As Luo Feng and Dylan were high in their ship patiently awaiting the gathering, the dark purple flat ship that was giving orders opened its doors, a 100m diameter disc shaped ship entered.

"Lord La Peter is here."

"Quick, go welcome Lord La Peter, quickly."

Within the dark purple ship.

A group of well dressed silhouettes were present. Among them, the weakest being universe level 3, swiftly ran to the entrance, leading the way was a domain lord and behind him were over 100 universe level upper management.

Hua...

The door of the disc shaped ship opened. A snowy crystal skinned man with snow white short hair and black armor walked out with a piercing gaze. The group of upper management all bowed respectfully, not daring to look up.

Two guards followed behind him, both of them were sector lord level 9!

"Greetings Lord La Peter!" Over 100 people bowed respectfully.

"Hm." The snow skinned black armored man nodded coldly. "Have all the participants for the trial gathered?"

"It’s already reached 7 billion, they should all be gathered in about half a day." The leading domain lord said respectfully.

"Hm."

This La Peter nodded indifferently.

He, sector lord level 9 was a part of the blood demon core. He was trained in the blood demon techniques and the two behind him were two blood demon soldiers that he controlled.

"I’m in charge of supervising the trials this time." His eyes gleamed coldly as his gaze swept past the group of management. Immediately, they all felt uneasy. "The control of the entire trial must be done well. Make sure that the final 100 are those that have survived after killing and surviving the battle, and not those lucky ones that hide and survive, understood?"

"Yes!"

The management all complied.

"To the control room." La Peter brought his two guards and walked towards the control room, the group followed behind.

The many ships arrived one by one. As the doors opened, large amounts of star travellers trapped in cages walked out, a blur of humans swiftly filled every corner of the mineral planet.

With their energy sensing abilities and the ship’s flying speeds, 10 billion star travellers gathered on this mineral planet...the density was simply too high.

"Wu Wa."

The youth standing on some stones had a blade on his waist. He held onto the weak girl beside him, carefully gazing about. The blur of star travellers felt the formless pressure all over, "In a moment, we will do as we had planned. You help me and we'll work together to survive the 1st battle and later find a desolate place to hide."

"Hm." The girl looked about cautiously too, spreading her formless spirit energy around.

Anxiousness!

An occasional ship flew by above, sending another million star travellers, it made the pressure increase constantly.

"Ah, ah ah...Mommy, mommy!" There were some that collapsed mentally, crying like infants for their mothers.

No one laughed at them.

Almost 99% of the them felt like they were about to collapse at anytime. They had heard of the legends of the blood demon trials ever since they were young. After flying in cages for days plus being cramped with so many others, the killing intent, the fear, the pressure...it was enough to make a person collapse.

...

Within the dark purple flat ship.

The snow skinned snow white hair La Peter was looking over everything. As he saw their fear, their collapsed states, his eyes filled with excitement and they twitched slightly. His entire being appeared to have entered a state of madness.

"Lord La Peter, 9,992 ships have already arrived, the final 8 will arrive soon. The blood demon trial will begin soon...please announce the commencement of the trial." The leading domain lord said respectfully.

"Hurry."

La Peter’s eyes were filled with madness, "I cannot wait any more."

The final 8 ships arrived and when the final 8 million arrived on the mineral planet, the ships left and a cold voice filled the air above the entire planet.

"Children!"

"Only 100 of you from the 10 billion will survive. Through the great blood demon trial, you’ll become the most loyal and exceptional soldiers. Right now...let the killing begin! Kill everyone around you, kill them all!"

His voice resounded.

However at that time...

Two silhouettes swiftly descended from the skies.

"Babata, open the synchronized broadcast to the virtual universe network."

"Yes."

Two silhouettes, one was a green armored black haired youth, and on his forehead was a gold engraving. His entire being was almost like a terrifying gold blade piercing forward. Beside him was a black robed normal looking bald man.

From Ten thousand km away, the two of them instantly reached the surface of the planet.

"Using the world ring, keep!" Luo Feng triggered the world energy within the ring and swiftly spread it over the entire planet.

Hu!

The 10 billion star travellers that were just about to begin killing vanished and the mineral planet was left completely empty. They all appeared within the spacious grasslands of his world ring.

"Pu chi!"

"Go and die!"

"Kill!"

The 10 billion that had entered a state of madness didn’t notice their surroundings change. As Luo Feng kept them, part of them had already begin their battles. However, after being tossed into the grasslands, they were all stunned. Even the siblings stained in blood looked about in shock.

...

The moment he collected all the star travellers into his ring, he ordered, "Close synchronized broadcast."

"Yes." Babata complied.

"The 2nd mission sure is simple, it’s over just like that." Luo Feng shook his head.

At that time...

"Those that dare disrupt the blood demon trials, you will die!" An enraged howl filled the entire planet. Simultaneously a terrifying blade flash tore through the universe space, slashing over 10,000

km and headed straight towards Luo Feng.

Chapter 719: Mission Completion Rate

This was an arc blade spirit energy weapon, with the control of a sector lord level 9's world energy, it slashed through the space over 10,000 km, heading straight towards Luo Feng.

"Hu La!"

10 flexible vines instantly shot out from Luo feng's shoulder, swiftly growing and becoming a 1,000 km long vine. The ten of them intertwined in space, wrapping around the spirit energy weapon.

"Ang..." The spirit energy weapon slashed hard at it tore through the vines. However, the regeneration speed of the vines was too fast, it completely exceeded the spirit energy's destruction speed, wrapping it so that it couldn't break free.

"You dare stop my weapon!"

A furious roar could be heard.

A white beam of light tore through space and flew over. 8 more beams of lights followed behind him, and all of them were sector lord level 9.

"Your majesty, that white haired punk is called La Peter. When he left the ship, he only had two sector lord guards. Now however, there's suddenly 8 of them. I think...these 8 are all blood demon

soldiers he controls, and this guy is obviously one of blood demon emperor’s elites." Dylan smiled and communicated. He was an undying proficient in spirit and soul techniques, every action from the ship was completely visible to him.

La Peter and the 8 beams of light shot over.

9 sector lord level 9s!

"Domain lord level punk, you dare disrupt the blood demon trials, you must be seeking death! He roared, eyes burning with rage. Blood demon emperor was a force unmatched within the Gu Lun universe country. Other than the universe country leader himself, who else could control him?

Trillions of years of tyranny, they’d long gotten used to it.

Right now there was someone actually disrupting the trials, wasn’t it suicide?

"Rumble!"

Dylan who had been standing beside Luo Feng smiled, he had been hiding his power all this while. Suddenly he let out his powerful energy and a gleaming gold light instantly covered the 9 sector lords, almost like a sturdy rope that bound them immediately.

"Ah!" The 9 sector lords were completely bound by the undying

energy. La Peter gritted his teeth and struggled hard, however he couldn’t get free.

"Undying!" He stared hard at Dylan.

"Master."

The 8 sector lords were struggling too, shouting out.

"You really hid yourself well." La Peter stared angrily at Dylan. Howling, "When I scanned earlier, you hid your strength and now you suddenly let it out. Why, does bullying a sector lord like myself satisfy you?"

La Peter’s mad gaze swept past Luo Feng and Dylan.

"Who are you!"

"Just who are you? To actually dare mess with Blood demon emperor’s matters! Have you been living for too long." La Peter stared at Dylan.

"You sure got guts." Dylan smiled, glancing at him and saying softly, his voice resounded within La Peter’s mind. "Even though your master Blood demon emperor is powerful, compared to our Virtual Universe Company, he’s nothing. However, he is still my elder and for that I will spare your little life."

Dylan’s smile broadened.

Rumble...

La Peter’s 8 sector lord guards immediately exploded from the powerful undying energy, their flesh and blood spewing everywhere.

"Ah!!!" La Peter gritted his teeth and shouted madly.

His 8 blood demon soldiers!

He could at most control 9 slaves now, and these were 8 of them! With them being killed...he could at most have one slave for awhile.

"Your majesty, let’s go." Dylan looked at Luo Feng.

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

Sou! Sou!

Two beams of light tore through space, leaving La Peter behind to howl in rage.

Luo Feng and Dylan sat in the Yun Mo planet ship and travelled in the dark universe, heading towards a mineral planet in the Gu

Lun’s universe country’s Du Tuo starfield to gather with the members of the Virtual Universe Company.

"That La Peter sure was arrogant, even before an undying he behaved that way. Undyings normally wouldn’t want to offend Blood demon emperor, hence they usually won’t kill him. But handing out punishment is still normal. For his 8 soul salves to be destroyed like that, whether he’s pitiful or not, he can probably control no more than 10 slaves." Luo Feng muttered and laughed.

Each soul salve was incredibly important.

Everyone took up an irreplaceable spot. Even Luo Feng who had trained in the 10,000 soul control, he could at most control 10 soul slaves now.

"He’s used to being a tyrant." Dylan smiled.

"He is entitled to his tyranny.After all, he did have 8 sector lord slaves." Luo Feng mocked.

Sector lord slaves?

Luo Feng was indeed not affected by it at all, with his mother nest constantly producing his bug army now, in 2 to 3 years, she had already produced about 10,000 sector lord pinnacle bug soldiers! This 10,000 bug army, with the queen Alina’s control, could completely match up to an official level undying.

Naturally, whether it was Luo Feng or Dylan, they couldn’t be bothered with that La Peter.

...

After 3 more days of flying.

In the space above a nameless mineral planet, the space rippled and the blood colored triangular ship appeared. Once the doors opened, two silhouettes flew towards the planet.

In a crater of the nameless planet, a black universe ship was stopped there, three silhouettes flew out from within.

The three of them met with Luo feng and Dylan.

"Your majesty Luo Feng."

The three that flew out were led by a winged old man. He smiled and said, "Your majesty can release the 10 billion star travellers here."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

He triggered the world ring and immediately a sea of star travellers were released from within. The desolate planet was suddenly filled with people, the blur of star travellers all seemed shocked as they looked about.

Rumble...the old man suddenly released endless green winds that wrapped the entire planet and all the star travellers on it.

He stood high in the air.

Behind him was a huge over 100km tall projection that spread throughout. Everybody could clearly see this majestic projection.

"From today on, you close to 10 billion people will be free from the Du Tuo star field. You no longer have to participate in the blood demon trials. Our Virtual Universe Company will give you a peaceful life." The winged old man's voice resounded within their minds, as they were all completely stunned.

After which they all cheered madly! Howls! Crying!

"Wu Wa, we no longer need to die, no more."

"Big brother!"

The siblings hugged each other tightly.

As close to the 10 billion people had filled up half of the planet, the two siblings happened to be close to Luo feng and Dylan. With their star traveller energy, they clearly saw Luo Feng and the group.

"It’s the black clothed god." The girl said.

"Ah. It’s him." The youth’s eyes gleamed, saying, "It’s the same black clothed god that stopped us from fighting in the grasslands. Only his armor has changed."

Before...

When Luo Feng had placed them within his world ring, he was worried they would continue killing within. Hence, mosha Luo Feng appeared before them and shocked the 10 billion people.

...

After the winged old man had finished, he placed all of them within his world ring and the planet regained its original desolate state.

"Your majesty Luo Feng." The winged old man flashed and landed beside Luo Feng. "Your 2nd mission is now complete. You should have gotten your completion rate too. They’ll tell you what your 3rd level mission is."

"Ah?" Luo Feng was stunned.

Simultaneously...

"Luo Feng, there’s mail." Babata’s voice resounded within his

mind.

"Haha." The winged old man laughed when he saw Luo Feng's expression. "Your majesty should have received the mail, please take a look and in awhile, I'll have to take you to carry the mission out."

Luo Feng sent a thread of consciousness into the virtual universe network.

Virtual universe network Yu Xiang mountain primal region, Luo Feng's villa.

In the study.

"Open." Luo Feng sat before his desk and looked at his laptop, opening the mail.

"Hua."

The mail opened, the details were...

"You've completed the 2nd level of the highest point mission. The members have made their decision. Luo Feng, your completion rate is 90%, you get 180,000 points. Also, you now have the right to begin the 3rd level."

"Evaluation: Despite the blood thirst in your bones you still pick

the weak and more 10 billion star levels. Obviously you care more for the pitiful, or you see an equal importance between star levels and star travellers. Massacring millions yet calm as still water, at the same time, picking the weaker people to save, we were definitely shocked by your choice. We give you 90% completion for this level, hopefully you'll continue to surprise us for the 3rd and 4th level."

Luo Feng laughed, Babata who sat on his shoulder laughed too.

"Babata, I bet that among the members judging me for the highest point mission, the one with the actual power is one that prefers kindness and less killing." Luo Feng laughed. "Because of my blood thirst in the 1st level, luckily I remained calm and collected throughout, they gave me 82%. After seeing how I picked the weaker people to save...they actually gave me 90% completion."

Reading between the lines.

Luo Feng could feel that the upper echelon writing the letter was kind within.

"Don't get proud." Babata shook his head, "The 1st and 2nd level seem easy, but this is after all still the highest point mission. It tests a core member's character and ability in judgement. It not only represents the points superficially...but whether you'll be of use to the company in the future."

Luo Feng nodded.

His chat with his teacher before had let him know.

This was the Virtual Universe Company truly trying to get to know its core members, and to find out if a core member had no limits to his blood thirst and was incredibly mad. They may still become absolute warriors in the future! But they would at most become generals that fought the inter race wars and could never truly become the huge authority figures in the company, their nurture would be less too.

"3rd level." Luo Feng opened the mail.

He smiled and looked at the details.

After which...his smile froze, he stared wide eyed, not budging at all.

"Damn! The virtual universe sure is absurd." Luo Feng was completely shocked from the 3rd level of the mission.

Chapter 720: 3rd Level

"Wow..." The fist sized Babata on Luo Feng's shoulder stared wide eyed, shocked, "The Virtual Universe Company sure is the Virtual Universe Company, this is like a slap to the face."

Luo Feng shook his head and forced a smile. "They are not forcing Blood demon emperor, they are forcing me."

The details of the mail were...

"3rd level mission: Blood Demon emperor controls the entire Du Tuo starfield, with hundreds of undyings under him. Even though he hasn't done anything over the limit, there are a few of his underlings that have. Currently, we have confirmed 21 of them.

There are 21 undyings and 19 sector lords.

They are...

Abdullah: Undying, given the Chi Tie galaxy as territory. He had once massacred all life on a few hundred planets in the galaxy, even keeping a large amount of them in his god country...

Yi Suo: Undying...

Ai Di: Sector lord...

Ao Ke Fei: Sector lord, he had once gathered over 10 billion young ladies and organized the craziest blood demon ceremony, over ten billion of them becoming a sea of blood. He also..."

"Mission: The Virtual Universe Company has already sent the order to blood demon emperor to capture these 21 alive, and he has already locked them up within blood demon planet. Luo Feng, you are to swiftly head over there...and judge the 21 of them. The choices are...Death, jail for a million years, jail for a hundred years, innocent.

The fates of these 21 are in your hands, you can judge them in whatever way you want.

You control whether they live or die."

"Reminder: When you reach blood demon planet, you have to open the synchronized broadcast, and close it only after the judgments are complete."

Within the study.

Luo Feng couldn’t help but force a smile. He had known that the highest point mission wouldn’t be that simple. The 1st and 2nd levels didn’t pose any difficulty at all to him, and no danger was present. However this 3rd level...

The Virtual Universe Company was absurd, ordering Blood demon emperor to capture the 21 people.

Even though he was a member of the Hong alliance, the power of the Virtual Universe Company was on another level altogether. How could the little Blood demon emperor go against them? Naturally, he could only obediently capture the 21. However the judgment and the fate of these 21, they actually let Luo Feng do it, having to personally head over to blood demon planet!

Blood demon planet!

That was Blood demon emperor’s nest!

He would naturally meet Blood demon emperor himself, and execute his judgment before him. Wasn’t this a blatant slap in the face?

"The heavier the sentence, the more it would invoke Blood demon emperor’s hate!" Luo Feng shook his head. "Afterall everything is decided by me, and if I give a light sentence, it would go against my character."

"They are really forcing me."

"The Virtual Universe Company has ordered Blood demon emperor to do so, he must be enraged and yet at the same time, he cannot disobey the direct orders." Luo Feng forced a smile. From the way he did things, it was obvious that the Blood demon emperor wasn’t a kind person. Now for no reason whatsoever, he had to go offend a great emperor level undying?

On that mineral planet.

In mid air, Luo Feng and Dylan along with the winged old man stood in space and chatted.

The old man smiled, "Your majesty Luo Feng, have you seen the 3rd level mission?"

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded and revealed a sense of helplessness.

"Haha..." The old man laughed at the scene. "Relax, even though that blood demon planet is his nest, he would never ever dare touch you, unless he's looking to die."

"Even if he doesn't dare now, what about the future?" Luo Feng shook his head.

"Then that'll depend on your choice, a lighter punishment will make it so that he will remember your mercy." The old man muttered. "Alright, we won't say anymore. Please follow me towards blood demon planet."

"Hm."

Luo Feng wasn't in a good mood, he nodded and kept the Yun Mo planet ship. He flew with Dylan into the black ship from the Virtual Universe Company and headed to blood demon planet.

Blood demon planet, it was the core of the entire Du Tuo star field.

Over 10,000 galaxies holding their blood demon trials to absorb more elites that would be sent here, large amounts of blood demon soldiers, be it sector lords or undying, they were all here. Also...the powerful Blood demon emperor himself stayed here, it was truly a demon hole.

"They are going overboard! The Virtual Universe Company is simply bullying me!!!"

His voice resounded throughout the entire blood demon palace, every one within shuddered.

Within the palace.

The god dressed in red armor with a helmet was raging. Beside him, 18 undyings all acted respectfully.

"If they want to catch my underlings, just do it. Yet they force me to do it myself, capturing Abdullah and the other 20!" His eyes burned with flames of rage. "They want to sentence my people and still force me to do it personally. They even sent people to disrupt my blood demon trial earlier! They seriously do not even bother showing me any respect!"

The 18 undyings had expressions of righteousness, within

however they were thinking...

Disrespecting Blood demon emperor?

What a joke.

Why would the Virtual Universe Company even bother with him. It was such a huge power, Blood demon emperor was but a little thing compared to them!

"Seriously overboard!!!!" He raged even more.

"I've told you all before, when I give you territories and galaxies to handle, it's up to you how you do it, but always remember the limit." He turned to look at the 18 undyings beside him, "Now you see, Abdullah and Yi Suo have got it coming to them, you all better remember this."

"We will remember." The 18 undyings bowed respectfully.

"Lord." One of the shorted undyings said respectfully. "Didn't the order of the Virtual Universe Company also say that it will send a primal region member Luo Feng over to do the judgments, and that all the sentences will be dealt by him. A small domain lord, at least with your pressure...he wouldn't dare offend you. When the time comes, he may even let them go off scot free."

"Hm."

Blood demon emperor said solemnly, "Sounds right, that little punk wouldn’t dare offend me! No matter what, since Abdullah and the others are all my underlings, I must do my best to keep their lives."

For this lone warrior, his underlings were all precious to him.

When others came to seek shelter, he naturally had to take up the responsibility of a boss. The two undyings had come to him earlier to seek help. the least he could do was to protect their lives. Even though the undyings about him didn’t dare say it, they weren’t that blind to the situation, if they fell, Blood demon emperor’s interior cohesiveness would naturally fall.

6 days later.

A black ship appeared in the galaxy outside blood demon planet.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, look, that’s blood demon planet." The winged old man pointed and said.

Luo Feng glanced over, there floated a completely blood red planet, just seeing it up close was enough to make one shudder.

Hu!

The ship swiftly flew towards the planet. As it drew closer, one

could see the huge mountain sized constructs. The entire surface of the planet was void of any technology. These constructs were all made like mountains, and the interior was where the network was.

"Sou!" Tearing past the atmosphere, the ship headed straight towards the most majestic palace.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, that is blood demon palace." The winged old man pointed far ahead at the most majestic palace. Surrounding it were many little palaces, even the small ones were a few km in area, many of them were surrounding the huge one.

In front of the huge palace was a huge plaza measuring tens of km, and large amounts of warriors gathered there. With just a glance, there were at least a thousand people here, and the weakest being sector lord. They were led by a red armored god, his brutal bloodthirst energy was felt by Luo Feng even through the ship.

Hu!

The ship descended and landed in the plaza, the cabin door opened.

The winged old man, Luo Feng and Dylan along with two others came out.

"Greetings Blood demon emperor." The white winged man bowed slightly, after which he introduced, "This is our Virtual Universe Company primal region genius, His majesty Luo Feng.

Luo Feng bowed too, showing respect to his elder while observing his actions. Even though Blood demon emperor had controlled his aura enough not to let Luo Feng feel the pressure, his blood red armor body itself gave off a weak aura, almost like an endless blood ocean.

He wore his helmet, hence making it hard to see his expressions.

"You are Luo Feng?" Blood demon emperor laughed. "True Yan emperor has indeed taught an exceptional student. I heard not long ago you disrupted my blood demon trial in the Wei Li galaxy?"

Luo Feng was stunned, saying, "Yes..."

"Haha, no need to explain."

Blood demon emperor waved his hand, "One galaxy's blood demon trail means nothing. Over a span of trillion years, we've held it in over 10,000 galaxies over and over, losing 1 to even 10 times means nothing." At different levels, one's perspective was different. To Blood demon emperor, 1 to 10 times of the trails was indeed nothing. However to his underlings, every one of them was an extremely important matter, how could they be careless?

"This Blood demon emperor seems straightforward." Luo Feng noticed as he thought, "However, he was forced to capture 21 of his underlings personally, with 2 of them being undying. Anyone with any temper wouldn't be happy about that, he may not care about the blood demon trials, but my disruption of the trial was a slap to

his face. If he said he didn’t care about my disruption, that would be a lie."

He thought so within.

On the surface, he showed gratitude, "Thank you Blood demon emperor for your understanding."

"Understood, of course I do. You are just working for the Virtual Universe Company, business is business, there are still many things of which you have the power to decide." Blood demon emperor laughed loudly, "Am I right?"

The winged old man interrupted. "His majesty Luo Feng definitely has the power to decide, whether the 21 are sentenced to death or imprisoned, or innocent. It’s all up to Luo Feng to decide."

"This old man..."

Luo Feng was getting anxious.

"Luo Feng’s power sure isn’t small, haha..." Blood demon emperor smiled even wider, looking at Luo Feng.

Over a hundred of the undyings that had gathered there looked at Luo Feng, along with the thousands of sector lords.

Chapter 721: Demon Blood Emperor and Luo Feng

The pressure from being stared at by Blood demon emperor along with over 100 undyings and the 1,000 sector lords was terrifying. However, Luo Feng had already experienced such a scene before... back when 9 blade knight's undying army came. Their pressure, which also included the raging Shi Huo knight was much worse.

"Looks like this is his show of strength." Luo Feng thought.

"Your majesty." Dylan communicated beside, "We can only stay low and bear with it."

"Understood." Luo Feng answered.

At this time, Blood demon emperor laughed carefree, "Luo Feng and the undyings...please come in, follow me." He passionately grabbed Luo Feng's hand and headed into Blood demon palace.

Luo Feng was taken aback, but he could only obediently follow him in. Dylan and the winged old man followed along with the vast army of undyings and sector lords.

"Lord."

Many absolutely beautiful lady maids were kneeling within the palace throughout.

"Come come come, Luo Feng, what do you think of my palace? The main body of this palace is an ancient one that I found damaged in a universe secret region a long time ago. I had it renovated and now it’s become the blood demon palace." He pointed about, "Just the repairs and renovation cost me over 10 million mixed elements."

Even though Luo Feng could feel a special energy from the palace, he wasn’t able to make sense of what it was. He could only smile along, "It’s really out of the ordinary."

"Indeed." The old winged undying pointed about and said, "The palace itself is a fortress. After the renovation and fusion with a metal life form...in terms of defense and battle ability, it’s even stronger than those F9 grade ships."

"Haha..."Blood demon emperor laughed loudly.

"Guards!"

Blood demon emperor suddenly shouted.

Immediately, 3 undyings from the army behind rushed up front.

"Go, bring the guilty 21 here." Blood demon emperor roared.

"Yes."

The 3 undyings complied respectfully.

This scene actually shocked Luo Feng, they had just entered the palace...wouldn't bringing the 21 here immediately change the whole atmosphere?

"Luo Feng, I really respect your teacher True Yan Emperor. It's a pity that over the many years, he's always been in primal chaos city and never left. Hence, I've never had the chance to have a taste of his unmatched talent, it truly fills me with regret." Blood demon emperor sighed. "You are his disciple and my junior, sentencing these 21 is a small matter, we can talk about it later. Since you are here for the first time, I've prepared a ceremony for you. Come, follow me!"

He led the way.

Luo Feng could do nothing but follow.

After a while.

They entered a large hall, the army of undyings and sector lords stayed in the reception area outside while Blood demon emperor, Luo Feng, Dylan and the winged old man along with two others entered the exquisite small hall. An exquisite jade blue stone table was already prepared there along with well carved chairs.

The six of them sat down.

"Bring the dishes." Blood demon emperor ordered.

Immediately, absolute beautiful ladies carried the dishes out. They were all fine delicacies, and there were many plates of them. There was also fine wine and many other deserts.

"This is...The demon clan Soul dragon’s liver?" The winged old man was shocked, "This, this is the Flame Snow Soul juice?"

Everybody around the table looked on with shock at the many delicacies that were coming out. There were many fine dishes on earth, however with the vast and mysterious universe and the immeasurable food items, there was much much more around. Luo Feng was already used to fine delicacies from the virtual universe.

With 100% simulation, the price was still much cheaper.

However it was after all still just the virtual universe, the feeling within was still different. As for the dishes before them...even in the virtual universe, they would still be extremely expensive.

"This table of dishes alone should hit up to 10 million mixed elements." The winged old man looked at blood demon emperor, "You’ve really spent quite a bit here."

"Haha, as long as you enjoy the food. The moment I met Luo Feng I was filled with joy, this little bit means nothing." Blood demon emperor said carefree.

Dylan and Luo feng exchanged glances.

This bit, how much was it worth?

What a joke!

10 million mixed elements was quite a bit, even for an emperor level undying that has accumulated wealth over extremely long periods of time. Even normal undyings' wealth usually only hit up to 10,000 mixed elements. The two undyings captured to be sentenced, in terms of worth, they probably didn't even hit 100,000 mixed elements.

Why did Blood demon emperor spend so much?

Just for the two undyings?

No.

Those two undyings weren't worth this much, it was all for reputation and face!

The Virtual Universe Company had after all forced him to capture his 21 underlings. This had indeed enraged him, and he didn't want to let down the undyings under him, hence he had to find a way to protect their lives. Spending 10 million mixed elements?

To an emperor level pinnacle warrior, he didn’t care!

To him, with his high and mighty position, even if he had to lower himself to treat this little punk well, spending 10 million mixed elements on incredibly luxurious delicacies, if we was willing to do so much...would Luo Feng be in a good position to sentence the 21 heavily?

The action was simply.

Yet it was very effective.

...

Luo Feng looked at the many luxurious delicacies on the table, not daring to eat.

"The mouth that has been fed by others is soft, the hand that has received doesn't reach!" Luo Feng thought, "For Blood demon emperor to lower himself for me, if I eat any of these delicacies... how will I be in a good position to sentence his underlings heavily later?"

"Come, try the Soul dragon’s liver. It’s an absolute delicacy, it will make your entire soul feel comfortable as you eat it. When I knew you were coming Luo Feng, I had this sent over via god country teleportation, it is definitely extremely fresh." Blood demon emperor said.

Luo Feng and Dylan both didn’t eat.

The winged old man and the other two however ate to their hearts’ content.

"Good food, delicious." The old man exclaimed. "I really have to thank you Luo Feng this time. Otherwise, if it was just me, even with my entire fortune it wouldn’t be enough to afford the items in this table." The two normal undyings that followed along both nodded too, complimenting the food.

"These 3!" Luo Feng was angry.

They were purely here to make a mess of things.

"Try it." Blood demon emperor looked on with anticipation at Luo Feng.

Under his gaze...

How could Luo Feng not eat?

He picked up his chopsticks and began to eat before shaking his head. "Please forgive me Blood demon emperor, I cannot eat now, since the mission from the Virtual Universe Company is still on my mind."

"Hm, I shall not force you then." Blood demon emperor laughed.

At this time, a ruckus occurred from the reception area and Blood demon emperor frowned and shouted, "Open the doors."

"Yes." The maid beside immediately went to open the doors.

Even though Luo Feng and the others were seated around the table, they could still see the scene of protest outside in the reception hall. 21 chained up warriors knelt outside and two of them especially had powerful auras. Their chains were different too, with complex engravings on them, obviously it was some kind of seal.

Killing undyings was a very hard thing to do.

Sealing was much easier. Defeating them was easier than sealing, however it was obvious that these two undyings were sealed up specially.

"Lord!"

The two chained up undyings knelt down. Beside them were the 19 sector lords who knelt down as well.

"Hmph!" Blood demon emperor slammed the tablet before him, shouting, "It’s too late to regret now!"

"Lord, we've wronged."

"We are extremely regretful now, please give us a chance."

The two undyings protested, but obviously they also knew that they only had 1 life, plus it was begging Blood demon emperor, naturally they didn't care too much about their face anymore. They were clear this was a true predicament. Afterall, it was the order of the Virtual Universe Company, if they weren't careful, they could be instantly killed.

"Give you a chance?" Blood demon emperor stood up fiercely and roared. "If you knew this was coming, why did you do such things then! What's more...your fates aren't in my hands today, but in Luo Feng's from the Virtual Universe Company! If you want to beg, beg him."

"Your majesty Luo Feng."

"Lord Luo Feng."

The two undyings knelt there and begged. The 19 sector lords beside had pained expressions, however they didn't say a word.

Luo Feng immediately guessed, "The sector lords probably don't mean anything to Blood demon emperor. These 19 sector lords have been controlled to not say anything, it's obvious that he really wants to save the two undyings this time. As for the 19 sector lords, they are at my disposal."

The two undyings that had death facing them begged earnestly.

"You two." Blood demon emperor walked from his seat to the reception hall, standing before the two undyings. He sighed softly and gently slapped their shoulders, "Abdullah, Yi Suo, you two have followed me for so long, I don’t wish for you to die too. However, I have no say in this, it’ll depend on your fates."

After which he shook his head and walked back.

"Luo Feng." Blood demon emperor sighed, "These two have been with me for over 10,000 eras, I’d be lying if I said they didn’t mean anything to me. However, you have to pass the judgment. I hope that you can follow the orders of the Virtual Universe Company and still give them a chance to survive. They are after all two undyings, as every single undying is a treasure to the human race, producing even one undying isn’t an easy task at all."

Within the hall and reception room, all of them had gone silent.

Only Blood demon emperor was speaking and acting.

Seeing this scene...how could Luo Feng not be clear of his intentions?

He had basically laid everything bare. Even though it didn’t seem like he was forcing Luo Feng, in truth, he was telling him...show me some grace and let the two undyings go. But, the other 19 are at

your disposal!

"Luo Feng, go judge the 21 of them." Blood demon emperor said and sat beside him in a chair.

"Yes blood demon emperor."

Luo Feng complied respectfully and turned to face the kneeling 21.

Chapter 722: Luo Feng's Judgment

Luo Feng's gaze landed on the 21 of them kneeling there, his eyes had a sense of rage.

Guilty!

These 21 should all die! These 21 that had been pointed out by the Virtual Universe Company, they had long passed the limit set by the 5 leviathans of humanity, and these were all that could be found. The hidden things they did would be even more terrifying.

"Ao Ke Fei!" Luo Feng shouted, his voice resounded throughout the hall, echoing over.

A messy gold haired brute looked up as he knelt there, his eyes begging as he looked at Luo Feng, not daring to say anything.

Luo Feng's eyes however gleamed coldly, begging at this time? Afraid? To make over 10 billion young women die in the blood demon trial, even as they begged. As for the blood sea that resulted from that, how could he beg when he's caused countless lives to die even as they begged.

"I sentence you!" Luo Feng said coldly, " To death!"

"Ah!"

He struggled hard as he opened his mouth to shout, but he could barely make a sound, not able to even say a word.

Rumble!

The winged old man who sat at the tablet instantly rushed into the reception hall. As he stood before the 21 of them who were kneeling, he waved his hand and his condensed undying energy landed on the despair filled Ao Ke Fei. He was instantly reduced to a bloody mess. Large amounts of items randomly scattered throughout the ground, his internal world had crumbled, leaving behind all his items.

Ao Ke Fei, dead!

"The Virtual Universe Company has ordered." The winged old man smiled and looked at the group of angry undyings and the over 1,000 sector lords. "The moment his majesty Luo Feng sentences any of the 21 to death, I will personally execute it."

Over 100 undyings and over 1000 sector lords all shuddered at the words from the member of the Virtual Universe Company. Even though they were bitter within, they didn’t dare say anything.

"Hmph, don’t disrupt Luo Feng’s judgment." Blood demon emperor sat steadily in his chair and roared. "Their judgments are all given by him, whether they die or live, only he can make the decision. No one else is to interfere."

"Yes!"

Over 1,000 warriors complied.

"Luo Feng, go on." Blood demon emperor shot a glance at him, his glance was somewhat cold. Even though he may say he didn't care about the other 19, if Luo Feng could allow any of the 19 to live, he would still be happy. However he didn't expect Luo Feng to sentence the very first person to death, naturally he wouldn't be happy about it.

"Next." Luo Feng's gaze moved on to another sector lord, "Ke Si Qi!"

The skinny man with fur all over his face shook, looking at Luo Feng as he begged.

"I sentence you..." Luo Feng said coldly, " To death!"

Rumble!

The sector lord Ke Si Qi was filled with despair. The winged old man who showed beside him gave him a slap and he was reduced to a mess, as large amount of items flew out.

"Death!" "Death!" "Death!" "Death!" "Death!" "Death!"

Sentencing one after another.

Slapping the despair filled sector lords, large amount of their items filled the reception hall. Some even with universe ships and all, it had become a small mountain within.

...

Silence and pressure!

The entire atmosphere was tense, Luo Feng had continuously sentenced the 19 to death. It made the over 100 undyings and over 1,000 sector lords all burn with rage. Even Blood demon emperor, the aura he emitted had steadily grown stronger. However he still controlled it, as he had only lost the sector lords so far.

"This Luo Feng sure is vicious, that's fine, killing the 19 is fine. As for Abdullah and Yi Suo, I doubt you have the guts to kill the two of them." Blood demon emperor stared silently at Luo Feng.

Only two more were left kneeling.

These two were the two undyings, Yi Suo and Abdullah!

"Yi Suo." Luo Feng's gaze landed on the undying, his eyes gleaming with ferocity. After viewing the information about the two undyings, Luo Feng felt...that the two of them had already thought of themselves as true gods, placing themselves far above countless others.

They massacred humans and stepped on them for fun, they didn’t even treat them as lives.

High and mighty…they treated other humans as ants, almost like they were from another race.

"I sentence you…" Luo Feng’s voice was steady, "To death!"

"No!"

Yi Suo looked up fiercely, his eyes were filled with madness. Rumble! After which he became a beam of light and rushed at Luo Feng, roaring, "You don’t have the right to kill me!!!"

"Looking for death." The winged old man’s expression changed. Even though Yi Suo was chained up and couldn’t use his undying energy, just his physical undying strength was enough to kill a sector lord. Anxiously, the old man rushed ahead to block Luo Feng.

Rumble!

A blood colored palm extended out of mid air and landed on Yi Suo.

Rumble!

He was instantly reduced to powder. He hadn’t reached the level

of undying body yet, the strike alone had completely decimated all remnants of his soul. His soul was gone, and he couldn’t revive anymore.

...

Silence, the entire hall was silent, everyone looked on in fear at Blood demon emperor. Even Luo Feng looked at him with shock, that attack earlier was from the powerful Blood demon emperor!

"Impudence!" His blood thirst boiled as he roared. "To dare make a move on a member sent by the Virtual Universe Company, he deserved to die! Luo Feng, carry on with your judgment of Abdullah, I believe...you will definitely make a fair judgment."

Fair, the word was heavy.

"Abdullah." Luo Feng turned to Abdullah.

"Your majesty Luo Feng." Abdullah looked at him.

Everyone in the hall looked at Luo Feng. The aura Blood demon emperor emanated too was heavier than before, as the atmosphere was extremely tense.

"I sentence you..." Luo Feng’s voice was as firm as ever, "To death!"

"Ah!!!" Abdullah immediately roared.

Chi!

The winged old man was already prepared with a huge arc blade, it instantly slashed past Abdullah and the countless wind energy instantly sliced him into 10,000 parts. The undying energy infused within wreaked havoc and reduced him to powder, and his soul was destroyed as well!

The winged old man wielded his huge arc blade and smiled at Luo Feng.

No one else there could even force a smile, especially the over 100 undyings and over 1,000 sector lords that gritted their teeth and raged. As for Blood demon emperor, he sat there and didn’t move at all. His rage however had filled the entire hall.

Rumble! He slammed his palm on the table fiercely.

All the luxurious delicacies along with the table itself was reduced to powder.

"Luo Feng." Blood demon emperor stared coldly at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng could feel his cold gaze staring hard at him.

"Your judgment was very very fair!" He smiled coldly. "Since

you’ve completed your mission, I won’t make you stay."

"Blood demon emperor." Luo Feng bowed very respectfully. "This was a test from the Virtual Universe Company and has huge implications on my future, I hope you can understand."

"Hmph!" Blood demon emperor snorted coldly and became a blood colored blur, vanishing from sight. He didn’t wish to even see Luo Feng at all. If Luo Feng wasn’t representing the Virtual Universe Company, he probably would have immediately killed him.

"Your majesty’s judgment was indeed very fair." The winged old man smiled. "Now that the 3rd mission is over, my job is done, I’ll take my leave."

"Dylan, let’s go."

Luo Feng said directly.

"Yes." Dylan replied.

Sou! Sou!

The two of them became beams of light and instantly rushed out of blood demon palace, piercing through the atmosphere and taking the Yun Mo planet ship through universe travel, swiftly leaving.

...

"Bastard! Bastard! He should die, he should die!"

Blood demon emperor roared.

He was enraged.

Even though Luo Feng had explained himself at the end, it was not enough to quell Blood demon emperor's rage, what level of position was he at? If he went under any of the knights, he would instantly become their number 1 emperor level undying. That level of power was indeed enough to dominate many universe countries, yet he lowered himself to welcome Luo Feng with such hospitality, making such an extravagant banquet...yet the outcome was still the same?

"This Luo Feng, he thinks he's some big shot! I showed him respect and he actually humiliated me." He gripped his fists tight, his bones were cracking within.

The Yun Mo planet ship flew through the dark universe, within the control room.

"You can still smile." Dylan couldn't help but say, "That Blood demon emperor treated you with such hospitality and even made a banquet, yet you still sentenced all 21 to death..."

"This is a blatant slap to the face." Babata's voice resounded within the control room.

"And you can still smile." Dylan looked at Luo feng.

Luo feng smiled and stood there, "What's the point in regretting things that have been done?"

Heart like a mirror, seeing through things clearly.

When he saw the 3rd mission earlier, he was indeed speechless. The Virtual Universe Company was indeed forcing him to humiliate Blood demon emperor and completely enrage him. Against an enraged Blood demon emperor, they made Luo Feng go and carry out the sentences...

How dangerous was this mission.

After careful consideration, he solved the problem and immediately decided to sentence all 21 of them to death!

All of Blood demon emperor's actions, along with his extravagant banquet couldn't influence him at all.

"One must be flexible."

"However if one always compromises, then he becomes a coward. Hence, if one truly cannot compromise, he has to stand firm and be

unwavering!" Luo Feng was very clear about this. "Bending over too much will make one a hunch back."

A man should know when to be flexible!

Even Han Xin had suffered humiliation before! However if he had compromised every single time, would he still have become a hero?

If Luo feng had faced death earlier, he might have compromised.

However it was clear Blood demon emperor didn't dare make a move on him.

And after the highest point mission was over, Luo Feng would enter the primal chaos city to train. The next time he came out... his strength would have undergone a huge transformation. When that time came, using the soldier armor and other methods, he believed he could deal with the dangers.

"He's just a Blood demon emperor? If I don't even have the guts to face such danger, what right would I have to become an absolute warrior." Luo Feng thought.

Flexible!

When to bear with things, and when to reveal one's fangs. This involved every problem one would face, those that were able to do well in these...would naturally have great achievements!

Chapter 723: 4th Level Mission

Dylan saw that Luo Feng didn’t even seem nervous about it, he couldn’t help but say, "Little uncle!"

"Hm?" Luo Feng was stunned.

Dylan usually called him your majesty, why did he change now.

"There are many hidden dangers in the path to becoming strong, you cannot get careless. Dylan said nervously, "I’m here on orders from the grandmaster to protect you. Even if we meet any true dangers, I can swiftly call my teacher Blood thirst emperor over. However...this is only during your domain lord stage. When you reach sector lord level and go explore the more dangerous areas, you’ll experience far crazier levels of danger. And the guard team cannot be there to protect you anymore. When that time comes where there is no one to protect you, characters like Blood Demon Emperor may arrange for assassination attempts on you! People may not even know how you die!"

"I understand." Luo Feng nodded.

"If you knew that, how could you still offend him like that." Dylan said.

"Dylan, Although I understand it, It’s too late now. Alright." Luo Feng said.

Dylan couldn’t help but shake his head.

Luo Feng was grateful for Dylan’s concern. However, Dylan couldn’t possibly know about his trump cards. When he reaches sector lord pinnacle, he would immediately have 50 million mixed elements, with that huge amount, he would definitely buy valuable treasures.

Like training deities of the world!

Or evolving the cloud contact vine to undying!

Anyway...

He already had a rough idea of how to strengthen himself. Along with his clones, he naturally had his own ways of making sure he wouldn’t die! His strength may not be enough to withstand those beings, but he could still improve his survival rate.

"Luo Feng, Luo Feng, there’s mail." Babata’s voice resounded in his mind.

"It should be the mission completion rate." Luo Feng muttered and immediately sent a thread of consciousness into the virtual universe network.

Virtual universe Yu Xiang mountain primal region, Luo Feng’s villa.

Within the study.

Luo Feng sat at his desk and gently tapped open the mail, and while looking at the subject title, he realized that it was the 3rd level's mission completion status.

The details were...

"You've already completed the highest point mission's 3rd level. Through the judgment of the members, Luo Feng, your completion rate of this 3rd level is 100%. You'll get 300,000 points and the right to go on to the 4th level."

Seeing those words.

Luo Feng and Babata were stunned.

100% completion?

It actually reached that level, it was absurd, it represented that the upper echelon members that judged his mission on blood demon planet to be completely satisfactory from start to end. This made Luo Feng suspicious...he had already guessed that his completion rate would be high, but 100% was extreme, after which he looked at the comments.

"Evaluation: Blood Thirst emperor lowered himself to welcome

you and prepared a huge banquet for you. Even with all these formless pressures along with his status and reputation, Luo Feng, you actually still dealt the death sentence to all 21, it is commendable! You maintained your sense of self, despite all the threats and pressure. You are indeed strong and sturdy. Well done. We hope you can carry on this way."

Seeing those words, Luo Feng laughed.

"What does it mean?" Babata shouted, his voice piercing, "The evaluation says it's very satisfied with you, why is it so?"

"Because I was unwilling to compromise and completed the mission perfectly." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed brightly as he laughed, "I completely understand now."

"What do you understand?" Babata asked curiously.

"You know very little about human character." Luo Feng shook his head. On earth, Luo Feng was considered the upper echelon too, hence it was easy for him to consider things from that angle.

What did the Virtual Universe Company's upper echelon need? They needed assistants!

Even with the emperor level undyings, they were still only considered as helpers of the knights. After that, when they become the great knights themselves...there would still be even greater beings above these knights, beings like the primal chaos city leader

etc. In summary, the true bosses, the upper echelon people.

As for those below, they were simply there to execute orders!

"If I were to nurture a genius, it would not be bad if he became an emperor level undying. As for becoming a knight...the chances are extremely low...hence this mission is actually for them to pick their assistants in the future." Luo Feng muttered. "If I were the upper echelon members, I'd naturally hope for my underlings to stay strong and finish the mission."

"If they were to back down in the face of danger or compromise when there's trouble, the missions wouldn't be able to complete fully, these sort of underlings naturally wouldn't do."

"Strong and firm?"

"To the upper echelon, they definitely wish for their underlings to be strong and firm, acting like a loyal dog to them." Luo Feng smiled. It was like the statesmen and generals of ancient china, they were all incredibly loyal and were even willing to die rather than to give in. These were the underlings the upper echelon would like.

Talent, loyalty and firmness!

These were good underlings!

In truth, it was hard to find such people, most absolute geniuses

had themselves as the core, they judged the hour and sized up each situation, backing down at danger and would usually submit in the face of danger. However, these naturally went against the mission requests. Hence the judgment of this level was especially easy.

If Luo Feng had spared the two undyings, the mission completion rate would definitely be lower than 80%, in the evaluation. It would have stated that he was too protective of himself, a coward and was unable to take huge responsibility.

If Luo Feng had only killed one undying and heavily punishing the other, he would have barely passed 80%.

But Luo Feng's actions naturally resulted in 100%.

...

Luo Feng was very firm and decisive, bold and dedicated to progress. Even in the face of danger he hardly ever backed down... unless it was truly something he couldn't handle.

"Luo Feng, look at the 4th level." Babata shouted, "There's another mail."

"Hm."

Luo Feng laughed and opened the mail. "The highest point mission has 4 levels, each getting more vicious than the other. The 3rd was already vicious enough...who knows what the 4th level

will be."

The 1st level gave 100,000 points.

The 2nd had 200,000 points.

The 3rd was 300,000 points.

The 4th... even though it seemed like it was just 400,000 points, in truth, it was probably the most critical to the extra reward that came after, that being 1 million points. Hence the importance of the 4th level was huge.

Di.

Luo Feng gently tapped open the mail.

"4th level, it is the final level of the highest point mission, it is also the most crucial for the extra reward. We hope Luo Feng, that you will carry it out carefully.

"Mission background: Ever since Luo Feng rose up and became a supervisor envoy of the Ganwu department, his family's position has been getting stronger. As his bloodline members range in the 100s of thousands, including the many daughter in-law's and so on, his members exceed over a million. Even though they have their family rules...however it's not realistic for the family to have complete supervision over the later generations that are scattered throughout the universe. Hence, naturally there will be vermin

within the family.

Mission details: Luo Family's 21 members have been recognized as guilty. Luo Feng, you will now sentence these 21. You can choose death, jail for 100 years, jail for 10,000 years or innocent. If you choose death, you will have to execute them personally. These 21 are..."

Luo Feng's face was ashen as he read.

He continued to look through the list.

"Luo Fu Xin, Luo feng's 15th generation grandson, he used Luo Families influence to do energy business. When he meets a competitor, he either assassinates them or sabotages them, and he had also once completely massacred a family of thousands. Since Luo Feng is the supervisor envoy of the Ganwu universe department, the many departments don't dare investigate.

Luo Yu Qian: Luo Feng's 9th generation grandson...

Luo Yu Rong: Luo Feng's 9th generation grandson...

...

Luo Fang Qiong: Luo Feng's 12th generation grandson...

Luo Hong Guo: Luo Feng's father..."

Luo Feng began reading this mail while sitting there. As he read, he slowly got up, his face growing more ashen, especially after seeing the 21 names on the list, his gaze went manic. That last name Luo Hong Guo made him slam the table violently.

Rumble!

The table exploded and the laptop split apart.

"Damn!!!" Luo Feng's expression was frenzied as he cursed.

"21, 21!" Luo Feng's expression was ugly, and he laughed softly at the same time. "Vicious, I just punished 21 in blood demon planet. Now they give me this 4th level...making me sentence another 21 of them. Even though all of them are mostly my later generation grandsons, the final one is still my father!"

"Implausible!"

"Seriously implausible!" Luo Feng gritted his teeth. "I do admit there are some amongst the 21 that deserve death, but my father? He does nothing but play virtual games the whole day, for you all to actually deem him guilty."

The family was huge, including the women, it hit over a million.

With such a large family, it was certain that there would be some

vermin within, but for Luo Hong Guo to be placed in the list, it made Luo Feng rage.

Who was that?

That was his father!!!

The father that nurtured him!

How could he forget that back then, when they were in the rental house, his father had worked hard to feed the family. According to the virtual universe's investigative results that were found, even if he was dragged to a court, the punishment of death sentence would be too severe. He would be jailed for at least 10,000 years etc. However, Luo Feng was very clear about his father's personality!

It was obvious his father had unknowingly been used by others. Actually, with the Virtual Universe Company's investigative abilities, it could easily find the real reason. However, they purposely chose not to do so or they decided not to provide extra information.

This way.

With 21 names on the list, each with different positions and different limits of crimes. Like an emperor level undying...even if he massacred over 10 planets and over 100 billion lives, he wouldn't be guilty. However for normal people, within the

confines of the law, even if they killed 1 universe citizen, he could be sentenced to death.

"Father." Luo Feng gripped his fists tightly.

"What are you prepared to do Luo Feng?" Babata muttered on his shoulder, "You sentenced all 21 members on blood demon planet to death before. But now, the Virtual Universe Company has sent another 21 of them, yet all of them are from your family. Damn, look, these 21 all have the Luo name. It’s definitely intentional and was created to make your life difficult...and then your father’s name is there as well. How will you sentence them?"

Chapter 724: Grey Snow World

"How do I sentence them?" Luo Feng's eyes burned with rage, yet he smiled coldly. "How do you think I'll do it!"

"Impressive. The Virtual Universe Company sure is impressive. They actually give me this as the final of the highest point mission, and they even make me sentence my father." Luo Feng clearly remembered all the details of the 21 people on the list, of which the clearest in his mind was that of his father.

His father's name there, it stated he had kill many important universe citizens.

Of course his father had never done anything personally. One had to know he had always been on earth and all he does was play virtual universe games, and he naturally couldn't make a move himself. The information the company had given was...Luo Hong Guo, was one of the die hard players of the virtual universe game Grey Snow world.

The virtual games had a huge influence on the 1,008 universe countries.

Because, to become an absolute warrior, it took tens of thousands of warriors for one universe level to be produced, sector lord chances were much lower. Hence, with many unable to progress on that path, having no dreams to pursue and rich offspring, jobs that gave them lots of time...they would all naturally choose to play these games.

100% simulation, it felt exactly like reality.

If they couldn't become an absolute warrior in reality, they may still become one in these games. They could still command an army and dominate the world, how intoxicating was that?

Hence!

The virtual universe games were an exceptionally developed business, they had a huge market and the competition within was naturally terrifying. The games the Virtual Universe Company made themselves however take up a huge portion of the market. Of which, Grey Snow world was one of the top 10 games.

The highest amount of online players at a time had even reached 1/3rd of citizens in a universe country.

With that many players, the benefits within the game were naturally shocking.

Luo Hong Guo!

With Luo Feng as his son, he was naturally one of the wealthy players within. His son would casually give him wealth equivalent to that of a sector lord to play. And the true warriors would normally only play these games a little. Training and strengthening their body was the most fundamental to them. Luo Hong Guo had money and was incredibly passionate about the

games, thirdly he had a talent to play these games. Last but not least, Luo Feng had forcefully made his father reach universe level. Hence, his consciousness level and reaction speeds etc were far ahead of many other players.

Naturally he made a name within!

Luo Hong Huo had created a union within, called Nirvana.

The Nirvana union grew extremely fast.

However, with the players of Grey Snow world spread throughout the 1,008 universe countries, many of them being the descendants of families with no hope of growing stronger, they had a lot of time to kill. These were the empty souls of reality, but they grew alive through the games. Hence, the competition amongst the unions within the games were usually brutal!

Hence...this eventually resulted in disasters within reality as well. For example, the members of a union may appear in reality to kill another, making it naturally crumble.

Even though the Virtual Universe Company wouldn't reveal its players information, the communication between players may result in unintentional revelation of information. There were also many players that called their friends by names, when a large group of them were playing together. The moment one person was compromised, everyone's information would definitely be revealed.

During the growth of the Nirvana union, there were thousands of assassination incidents in reality! Some of them were extremely brutal.

As the leader of the Nirvana union, Luo Hong Guo naturally had to take up this responsibility!

...

"Stupid." Luo Feng raged within. He was so mad, that he was about to go crazy. "My father had always been a normal person who worked very hard in life. When he was young, he didn't even get to go to school before the great Nirvana happened! Later on, he worked hard to take care of me and my brother, he doesn't know anything about schemes. Without a good education, plain and simple...how could he have the makings of a Leader of a union."

How could Luo feng not be clear on how his father was like?

No matter what he did, he worked hard to survive and grow his family. When he played the virtual games he was completely immersed within, how would he know about the dangers hidden within.

"At its peak, 1/3rd of the civilians of a universe country are online playing it simultaneously. That means at its peak, there was 1 playing out of 3,000 civilians at the time!" Luo Feng had tried playing the games before, every game was like a new world altogether, it was extremely addictive.

"A game with that many players, how huge are its benefits?"

"With the payouts, there would naturally be schemes and hidden things going on."

"The nirvana union’s growth speed, how shocking is it? Simply relying on his father, gathering countless elites to grow the union in the game itself, that wasn’t too possible. If his father had such foresight and skill, he wouldn’t have had to work hard for 10 to 20 years to support them before." Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed. "Maybe it’s because has money, or they know of his status, they think that the father of the supervisor envoy of the Ganwu department is powerful enough. Hence they all entered and helped build his union."

Ganwu department supervisor envoy!

Huge figure!

To those players, this was an absolute power that ranked in the top 10 of a universe country. For his father to actually play the game and to build a union, they would naturally join him. Having money and power, naturally had their benefits.

Virtual universe, Black Dragon mountain island 9 star bay.

Luo Feng’s house.

"Give the order." Luo Feng ordered. "Swiftly capture these 20,

don’t let any of them get away." After which, he slammed a piece of paper on the table.

"Why are you unhappy?" Xu Xin looked at the paper.

The 20 names on the list.

Luo Fu Xin, Luo Yu Qian, Luo Yu Rong...

Xu Xin was shocked after reading the list. She looked at Luo Feng and asked suspiciously, "Why are you capturing these 20, they all have their own businesses, and are considered exceptional amongst the later generations of offspring in the Luo family. Their businesses are doing alright, of which 3 of them, I was prepared to absorb into the family for important matters."

"Absorb them?" Luo Feng said coldly, "Don’t speak anymore, hurry and capture these 20. Remember, don’t let anyone get away."

"Alright."

Xu Xin didn’t ask anymore, immediately arranging for their captures.

When it came to the main matters in the family, Xu Xin was usually in charge of them. In terms of management ability, she was indeed strong.

"Also, grab all of them and bring them to Qian Hua planet." Luo Feng said coldly, "I'll be there in 3 days."

...

The previous three missions had never enraged Luo Feng this much. It may be from the fact that his later generations weren't determined enough, or the fact that the Virtual Universe Company purposely made him do such a thing. The raging Luo Feng didn't want to slowly fly over from the Gu Lun virtual universe country in a ship. He used Dylan's god country teleportation to immediately return to the milky way galaxy!

And after which he headed to Qian Hua planet.

Black Dragon Mountain empire, Qiu Long star.

In a luxurious mansion, all those that headed in and out seemed wealthy. The owner of the place was Luo Fu Xin, he was the energy businessman that suddenly rose up within the Black Dragon Mountain empire. The energy business was one that had sudden huge profits, and the entry requirements were also extremely high. And yet, he was still one no one dared to mess with!

Even the royal family passionately supported him.

"Lord Luo, Lord Luo." A piercing voice resounded.

A skinny skeleton middle aged man dressed in exquisite golden robes, brought a group of people along the mansion halls, shouting as they walked. From far, a person walked over. It was a handsome youth, dressed in a similarly exquisite robe. He laughed carefreely, "Ka Tuo Si, my dear Ka Tuo Si, I've missed you."

"Ah, let me see the group of beautiful women behind you." The youth's eyes gleamed as he saw the women of all races behind.

"Lord Luo, these are the absolute beauties that I've painstakingly searched over 10 star fields for you." The skinny middle aged man laughed slyly. He was very clear on how powerful this youth before him was, even the Ganwu business department had to treat the supervisor envoy with respect. And the business head of the ganwu department...was already considered the greatest boss of the Ganwu universe country's business dealings.

Who would dare offend that boss. Anyone that did so could simply give up on business altogether. Hence, he naturally had to get in this youth's good books!

He knew...

Even the departments all didn't dare mess with him.

Also...

Anyone that went against him would all die.

"Hm hm." The youth carefully examined the ladies, complimenting, "My dear Ka Tuo Si, I am very grateful to you. I'll give you an extra 25% share of the energy crystals that you require."

"25%? I spend so much energy just to get so little, what a stingy fellow." The middle aged man cursed within. However, he still displayed a smile full of gratitude, saying, "Lord Luo, you are too generous. If you need anything just give the order, I will do my best."

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

Three beams of light shot down from the sky.

"Who is it!"

"To actually dare barge in on Luo Residence." As they roared, a group of universe level slave guards rushed out.

The three beams of light landed directly before the youth, releasing their powerful energies.

"Three domain lords!" The middle aged man shuddered as he saw them. In the low level civilization of the Silver blue empire, the strongest was only domain lord level three. And now, three domain lords appear before them.

"Who are you, how dare you barge in on Luo residence!"

"Luo Fu Xin, on the family leader’s orders, we are here to arrest you." One of the 3 domain lords took out a warrant and captured the terrified Luo Fu Xin after.

Sou!

They flew black through the skies.

...

"I am Luo Yu Qian, how dare you capture me. You must be tired of living!"

...

"I am a member of the Luo Family, who are you!"

...

"The Ganwu supervisor envoy is my family leader, how dare you capture me."

...

The offspring of the Luo Family had power even greater than the royal family of the Black Dragon Mountain empire princes, and

these 20 were considered vicious within the family. With such methods, their achievements were naturally huge. However, when they found out it was the leader that had sent for them to be captured, they were all stunned.

Rumble...

The blood colored triangular ship became a beam of light rushing towards the milky way galaxy's Qian Hua planet.

Within the control room.

Luo Feng's cold gaze stared at the planet before him, almost like he could see the captured offspring of the family within.

Chapter 725: Family Leader Luo Feng

Qian Hua Planet, it was an important place for the Luo Family in the Milky Way galaxy.

And since earth was discovered to be valuable by the Virtual Universe Company and the Huge Axe Dojo, having a huge floating city built on earth, Luo Feng began to decrease the use of the old Luo residence. Instead, he focused more on the home in the virtual universe Black Dragon Mountain island in 9 star bay. Qian Hua planet was one of their important gathering spots too.

The number of Luo family members staying here long term exceeded 60,000.

Qian Hua planet, east hemisphere, there was a jail for the Luo family surrounded by a copper wall with a diameter of over 1,000 km.

"Great grandfather, save me, save me."

Within a cell, a handsome Luo Fu Xin knelt within and grabbed the bars and cried. Within each of these cells were railings and other constructs of a normal jail, the materials used were of C9 to E9 alloys.

"Hmph, just what did you do to make the family leader catch you!" Luo Hai's eyes gleamed like lightning, looking angrily at Luo Fu Xin.

"Great grandfather, I really don’t know, I really don’t know. I’ve always held myself to high standards, I didn’t dare break the family set limits." Even though he was afraid within, on the surface he still maintained his innocent composure. He carefully recalled every thing he did before, he thought he had been extremely cautious and prudent, not leaving any traces behind.

There was no way for him to know...

The Virtual Universe Company had surveillance throughout all the life planets, especially any planet that had humans, (on few aboriginal planets and others yet to be discovered, along with warrior territories). All these were all completely under surveillance. Everything Luo Fu Xin had done, although it was untraceable by the family investigation team, the Virtual Universe Company however could find out everything easily.

"Alright, I’ll help you. As long as you haven’t broken the family rules, I will guarantee you that you won’t die!" Luo Hai emphasized.

Luo Feng had two sons.

Luo Hai and Luo Ping.

Luo Hai was a lot like Luo Feng, he enjoyed training and exploring the universe.

Luo Ping was more like his mother Xu Xin, he enjoyed management matters. The two of them had received the most exceptional education, and hundreds of years of training. Both of them were very smart...over the hundreds of years, Luo Hai had countless descendants too, of which there were naturally a few he favored.

Luo Fu Xin was one that he pampered more.

Qian Hua planet, Luo family's plaza. Over 100,000 people had gathered here, all dressed differently. Other than the men in the family, many of their wives had gathered there too. Standing ahead of the entire crowd was Xu Xin, Luo Ping and Luo Hai, along with Di Fan and some other sector lords.

Rumble...

A blood colored triangular ship descended and landed in the plaza.

The 100,000 people all didn't dare make a sound. Many of them were shivering with excitement as they saw the cabin door open. The Luo Family's most exceptional foundation and core, he was the pillar of the entire family...the family leader Luo Feng, he had finally come! Many of the people were seeing him for the first time.

Many children dragged over by their parents all stared wide eyed.

"Hua!" The cabin door opened.

Two silhouettes walked out. One of them was a black haired youth in green armor, he had a gold blade on his forehead. That powerful piercing gold law energy made people shudder. Beside him was a black robed bald man that gave off an immense and seemingly endless amount of power. This made the countless family members all shiver with excitement.

"That is the family leader, what terrifying energy. Beside him is the legendary undying guard of his? Undying, yet he's only a guard for our family leader." They were all extremely excited.

Suddenly...

"Greetings family leader!"

100,000 family members all knelt down, only Xu Xin, Luo Ping, Luo Hai and few others remained standing.

Luo Feng and Dylan flew down, simultaneously Luo Feng kept the Yun Mo planet ship.

"Xu Xin, how's it going, have all the 20 been captured and brought over?" Luo Feng walked over to her and asked softly.

"Not that fast." Xu Xin shook her head. "Some are in other starfields. Even if I arrange for E9 grade ships to rush at their fastest speeds, they cannot get here in 3 days. It'll probably be...the

slowest will reach here in 12 days. Right now, there are already 9 in the jails here of Qian Hu planet."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded, he had travelled here via god country teleportation, naturally it was fast.

"Dad, why did you capture these 20..." Luo Hai couldn't help but ask.

"We'll talk later."

Luo Feng's gaze swept past the blur of 100,000 people. All of them added together seemed like there was a sea of people. Even though all of them were kneeling there...however Luo Feng sighed within. "The family has indeed grown huge, including the women, the family members have exceeded a million. When I return from primal chaos city...the members would probably have exceeded over 10 million. The more people there are, the more the family has to enforce strict rules, we cannot let them simply enjoy."

After which, Luo Feng brought Xu Xin and the others towards the living quarters.

The 100,000 people waited till he left before all getting up, leaving and dispersing.

Within the warm living room.

Luo Feng, Xu Xin, Luo Ping and Luo Hai all sat about casually in

the sofa.

"Dad." Luo Hai couldn’t help but ask again, "Why have you ordered for the capture of these 20? That Luo Fu Xin...I watched him grow up since young, he’s very exceptional, and smart, don’t accuse wrongly the disciples of the family."

"Shut up." Luo Feng ordered coldly.

Luo Hai was completely shocked.

Luo Ping and Xu Xin were shocked too. They could feel that Luo Feng’s temper today was explosive.

"Exceptional? Smart?" Luo Feng said coldly, "However he didn’t use it in the right ways. 1, he doesn’t train seriously to become a warrior. 2, he relies on underhanded methods to run his business. He already has the Ganwu business department’s full support, and the help of the Black Dragon Mountain empire, if he works just a little, there’s no way he can fail. However he still uses these methods...looks like he was brought up used to being pampered, without any setbacks. The moment he encounters an opponent, or obstruction, he doesn’t know how to use competition to win them ove . Instead, he simply kills them. Smart indeed, exceptional."

Luo Hai, Luo Ping and Xu Xin were shocked.

"Luo Feng, do you have proof?" Xu Xin asked, "The family investigation department didn’t..."

"They didn’t find anything, that’s their incompetence! This is the information the Virtual Universe Company gave me personally. It’s definitely solid and fool proof, would it be wrong?" Luo Feng frowned. "Also, with the family growing more and more, and our resource growing along with it, we are allowing the later generations enjoy the benefits. However, even with so much resources, against a sea of people it would still be little. Hence, we have to increase the difficulty of actually acquiring these benefits, selections, competition, also training them well, strengthening the rules of the family."

Xu Xin nodded, "These are all within the plan."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded, the rage on his face finally dissipating a little, he sighed, "I know that the large families of the universe, with the amount of people within, would naturally have such problems. However I didn’t expect for the bloodline members, at below a million to already have such problems. Xu Xin, help me prepare, when all 20 are here, I want to hold family trial, make all the members on Qian Hua planet come."

"Alright." Xu Xin nodded.

This trial was extremely important and Luo Feng was very prudent about it, not just for the Virtual Universe Company, but also for his family! He wanted to use this...to scare his family, letting them know the severity of breaking the family rules. The moment the family rules were unbridled, there would be many corrupt members within the family, this was something he didn’t wish to see.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, this is the information you requested."

"Thanks."

Luo Feng had requested information from the Virtual Universe Company's information department regarding Luo Fu Xin, Luo Yu Rong and all 21 of them. These required very low authority to gather, hence they were easily sent to him. After viewing all of it... Luo Feng couldn't help but grit his teeth and rage at the incompetence of the later generations.

On the 13th day after Luo Feng returned, all of the bloodline members were gathered in the family court. The court was extremely huge, and was large enough to hold a million people to watch.

"I heard the leader wants to sentence a few members within."

"Who is he sentencing?"

"I don't know. I heard they secretly captured quite a few, over a hundred, and he's personally sentencing them, it must be serious."

Close to 100,000 members had gathered within the court and were discussing in hushed voices. Immediately buzzing noises could be heard within as the court and the doors opened, all the members immediately grew silent and 20 handcuffed men and women were dragged out.

"Look, it’s Luo Fu Xin."

"It’s Luo Tian Qi."

"Wow, it’s Luo Fang Qiong, the beauty in the family, she was captured too." The many members were shocked as they watched the scene.

20 members of the family, all of them were forced to kneel on the ground.

Sou!

There was nobody initially in the main seat earlier, suddenly 1 silhouette appeared. It was a black armored Luo Feng, his gaze was as sharp as blades as he looked down on the 20.

"Family leader." Close to 100,000 members all shouted respectfully, after which there was silence.

"Family leader."

The 20 members kneeling below all looked up in fear at the legendary being. He was a true power and pillar of the family, ranked in the top 10 of the absolute powers of the entire Ganwu universe country...Luo Feng! And right now he was gazing coldly at them, like they were 20 ants.

Amongst the close to 100,000 people, Xu Xin, Luo Ping and Luo Hai etc were there too.

"Luo Fu Xin, do you know your crimes." Luo Feng said coldly.

"Family leader, I, I don't know." Luo Fu Xin knelt there. The knowledge from before all useless, he could only force the words out.

"You don't...You have only been living for about a hundred years." Luo Feng's voice was cold, "Yet you've killed over 10,000 innocent people that have never had any grudges with you, only because they affected your business. Killing in itself is not wrong, but after killing so many innocent people...you should die too."

"Ah..." Luo Fu Xin stared wide eyed wanting to say more.

"You think that the family investigation department can't find anything? Yes, you are very careful and clever, not leaving any traces behind. However if the family cannot find it, it doesn't mean the Virtual Universe Company can't." Luo Feng stood high above and looked down on him.

Luo Fu Xin's face immediately went pale.

The 19 others kneeling behind all changed their expressions when they heard that, and close to 100,000 people listening in court all were shocked as well.My god, so the family leader could

check through the Virtual Universe Company's information department on all of them, the company was such a huge power, who would dare say they couldn't find anything?

"I sentence you...to death." Luo Feng raised his fingers.

Xiu!

A blade flashed and pierced through Luo Fu Xin's forehead, leaving behind a bloody cavity.

The kneeling Luo Fu Xin had a face full of fear, after which it dimmed and he fell on the floor, blood pouring out and staining the floor. This scene shocked the close to 100,000 members within the court. This scene was also sent via synchronized broadcast over to the Virtual Universe Company's upper echelon members who were judging Luo Feng.

Chapter 726: End of Show

Luo Fu Xin fell on the ground of the court, as fresh blood flowed from his forehead. This scene made everybody shudder.

"That's the family leader."

"He really doesn't show any mercy."

"Too strict."

The family members all had a blind sense of worship and respect to this legendary being Luo Feng. The entire family started from him! If anyone else in the family was carrying out this trial and that sparked disagreement, no one would dare even be any bit unsatisfied with Luo Feng carrying out any punishment.

They would only think of him as strict!

"Next, Luo Yu Qian." Luo Feng gazed at the next person below, "Do you know your crimes?"

The beautiful Luo Yu Rong that looked almost like a girl was completely pale, he put his head on the ground and said, "Yu Qian knows his crimes."

"Luo Yu Rong." Luo Feng's gaze landed on a gentle looking girl that looked exactly like Luo Yu Qian beside, "Do you know your

crimes?"

"Family leader, I..." Luo Yu Rong seemed to want to tear before lowering her head, "I do."

Luo Feng nodded.

He immediately sentenced them, "Luo Yu Rong, for bewitching your older brother Luo Yu Qian, you cannot be pardoned, death!" After which Luo Feng lifted his finger and shot a gold beam of light. This gold law infused attack pierced right through her forehead, leaving behind a bloody cavity.

"Rumble!" Luo Yu Rong fell on the floor, her face still filled with shock, regret, resentment.

"Little sister!" Luo Yu Qian immediately stared wide eyed, his tears flowing.

Luo Feng said coldly above, "Luo Yu Qiang, you pamper and empower your sister, not separating business and family ties. I sentence you...to 10,000 years in jail!" Large amounts of the members within the court were all shocked. This was because Luo Yu Qian's name in the family was actually very well reputed, and they could tell that their crimes were mostly because...of his younger sister.

Jail for 10,000 years, he was only still at the star level! His life span wasn't longer than 1 era! He would simply die in jail.

Unless...

He could break through to universe level in jail. Otherwise, he would stay in there till he died. Also, without all the resources the Luo family provided, just simply relying on his own capability, it was simply too hard to breakthrough to universe level.

...

"Relying on power to massacre, you reek of blood, your crimes are severe, death!"

...

"Vicious, however you are still young and haven’t done much, jail for 100 years."

...

"Evil crimes, death."

...

"Jail for 10,000 years."

...

"Death!"

...

"Death!"

...

"Jail for 100 years."

...

"Death!"

...

The entire court was tense, Luo Feng gazed coldly at the members below and carried out their sentences one by one. The Virtual Universe Company had intentionally arranged for different levels of crimes within the 21, some heavier, some light, some with lesser information. Luo Feng however went according to the detailed information the information department had given him!

His sentences were carried out according to the family rules!

Luo Feng didn’t care about any of the different rules of the

universe country. The Luo Family had its own rules, some areas extremely strict, some more lax. It was something Luo Feng, Xu Xin, Luo Hua and others had worked together to put in place.

20 family members, of which 13 were sentenced to death, 4 were jailed for 10,000 years and 3 for a 100 years.

One had to know that amongst these 20, only 1 had become universe level and he was put to death by Luo Feng. Hence, those that were jailed for 10,000 years, all faced a dilemma. They had to breakthrough to universe level within the jail or they'd simply grow old and die within.

"Death!"

When Luo Feng killed the final member there.

The atmosphere in the court had reached an extreme level. In the past, when they held their trials, the death sentences weren't carried out in the court there...and they weren't done by the family leader himself.

"All of my members listen carefully." Luo Feng's eyes gazed coldly at the surrounding close to 100,000 members in the court, saying coldly, "The family rules aren't for you to mess with, even if you think you can get past the family investigation, do you think you can get past the Virtual Universe Company's information department?"

The close to 100,000 members all listened intently.

"Along the path of becoming strong, killing is normal, killing a person in rage is normal." Luo Feng said coldly, "And even accidentally killing 1 or 2 innocents, can be explained as carelessness. However, by killing a hundred to thousands, these are intentional acts, do you think you can explain that? Even for a sector lord or undying, the moment they pass the limit...they too would be put to death! Don’t think that the family will protect you and allow you to carry on with your ways. Don’t think that you are clever enough to avoid the investigation department and thus continue on."

"You want to simply enjoy life, no problem! The lowest family resource grants can completely allow you to play virtual games till you die."

"However, these too have a limit."

"The moment you pass the limit..."

Luo Feng pointed below at the scene of fresh blood, bodies and lifelessness, the terrifying picture, "You’ll end up like them!"

After which, Luo Feng became a beam of light and left, leaving behind the silent members within. They were all shocked, almost all of them went back to carefully study the family rules, to prevent themselves from ever having to receive such punishments, the scene today had let all of them know that Luo Feng wasn’t joking.

This scene...

This news also swiftly spread to the other members who were dispersed throughout the many starfields and planets, as all of them watched the broadcast of the trial. Including the women, the members exceeded over a million, and they were all shocked. Some of them who were doing evil deeds had immediately change their ways.

...

Qian Hua planet.

Luo Feng stood on the top floor of a palace and said solemnly. "My father Luo Hong Guo...innocent!" The Virtual Universe Company requested for 21 to be judged. No matter what, he still had to do it. Even though Luo Feng didn't capture his father or sentence him, he had long made his decision about him.

To kill his father?

He'd rather go up against the company itself! He would never let his father die. He could never forget that back then, his father was drenched in sweat, thirstily drinking water from a large plastic cup.

"Close the synchronized broadcast." Luo Feng said softly.

"Got it!"

Babata cheered, "The highest point mission is finally over."

"Hm, it’s over." Luo Feng nodded gently.

Whether it was the completion rate of the 4th level or how much extra reward they would give him, these were all matters for the upper echelon members to decide. At least, it was all over now.

The final 4th level with the most points.

The 1st level was judging 18 executives of the Flame wind organization.

The 2nd level was choosing which to one save.

The 3rd was judging the 19 sector lords and 2 undyings in front of the Blood demon emperor.

The 4th level was judging his own family members, including his father.

"Testing my character? Seeing how I truly am?" Luo Feng thought. "Now that the mission is over, I wonder if they can understand who I truly am."

Night.

The top level of the palace was very cold, Luo Feng stood there silently.

"Feng." A voice resounded.

Luo Feng turned, it was Xu xin in a white fur coat. She smiled, "What are you thinking about, are you still thinking about today's trial? You had indeed shocked all the children of the family. Even those in the far away galaxies and other starfields were all shocked."

"That's good, they should be afraid." Luo Feng said.

"Right." Xu Xin nodded.

"Xu Xin." Luo Feng suddenly flipped his hand and produced a simple looking laser gun.

"This is?" Xu Xin was shocked.

"E9 laser gun." Luo Feng smiled and explained. "It's storage time is 0.1 seconds and it can kill normal sector lord level 9 warriors. This E9 laser gun, combined with the planet security system, the moment any enemy barges into the planet, with the security system triggering the gun, in a short 0.1 seconds...even a sector lord wouldn't be able to rush over. After it's preparation is complete, when you are close, just fire it and kill him! This is

definitely an ultimate weapon."

Xu Xin nodded.

Even within the royal family of the Black Dragon Mountain empire, they didn't have such a weapon. Sector lord level 9 warriors usually couldn't keep watch over an area for a long time as their life spans were limited, and this laser gun simply required maintenance and it could last forever.

Even though Luo Feng had sector lord level 9 warriors in the family, those were his guards!

When Luo Feng reached sector lord level, the guards would all leave. At that point, Luo Feng would only be left with one sector lord Di Fan.

"With this E9 laser gun, the family will be much safer." Xu Xin said excitedly.

"This space ring is also for you." Luo Feng passed it to his wife.

"Hm?" Xu Xin took it curiously, "This is?"

"Automaton ship." Luo Feng said, "The main cannon of this ship is terrifying and is akin to an undying's attack. Naturally the power is much stronger than the E9 laser gun. However, it's range of attack is too huge and storage time is too long, its efficiency cannot compare to the laser gun. However it's still another

ultimate weapon."

Xu Xin nodded.

Akin to an undying's attack...this was definitely a restricted weapon.

"Of course, you and my parents all stay on earth, and earth right now...is considered the safest place in the entire Ganwu universe country." Luo Feng smiled. What a joke, that majestic shrine in the solar system, just what level of being was stationed there, Luo Feng couldn't even imagine.

And with that one absolute being there, even if other race enemies appear, he could call a large army through god country teleportation.

"Luo Feng, why do I feel like you are planning something?" Xu Xin said suspiciously.

"Hm, I will be gone for a long time this time. Very long, far longer than anytime before." Luo Feng said.

"Where to?" Xu Xin asked.

"Primal chaos city!" Luo Feng said.

"How long?" Xu Xin asked nervously.

"Not sure...at least a 1,000 years." Luo Feng sighed, "When I come back next time, I'll be sector lord pinnacle."

"At least 1,000 years, and in primal chaos city?" Xu Xin asked curiously. "I know a lot about training matters too, and you are now already recognized by the gold laws. This training didn't even take 500 years...and your training efficiency in primal chaos city is much higher too. Why do you need to train for so long?"

"You wouldn't understand." Luo Feng said.

"Ah..." Xu Xin didn't bother anymore, "Anyway we can meet in the virtual universe network."

Luo Feng saw how his wife didn't seem to care much, he couldn't help but laugh. The normal management of the super organization Ping Hai company and the family matters were all taken care of by her...and it was only before him that she acted this way. She normally upheld a sense of power and fear.

"Luo Feng, there's mail! It must be regarding the highest point mission." Babata's voice resounded within his mind.

"Ah?"

Luo Feng sent a thread of consciousness into the virtual universe network.

Chapter 727: Of All Virtues, Filial Piety is First

Virtual universe Primal region, Luo Feng's villa.

Luo Feng sat before his desk and opened his laptop, gently tapping open the mail.

"You've completed the 4th level of the highest point mission. The members have made their judgment and you've acquired a completion rate of 70%, getting 280,000 points. This is the end of the highest point mission."

Luo Feng frowned.

"Only 70%? During these 4th mission, especially regarding the matter with his father's judgment, he had indeed simply deemed him innocent. However he still sentenced the rest of the members fairly.

"Let's see what the comments say."

Luo Feng continued reading the mail.

"Evaluation: You were sent to sentence 21 people this time. However, with regards to your father, you didn't even capture him nor did you interrogate him. You didn't complete the 4th level mission at all. It's obvious in your bones, you heavily respect your

father, and didn’t wish to sentence him.

Even though your father is obviously innocent, he still cannot avoid responsibility. Jailing him for 100 years should be the lightest punishment that should have been carried out, yet you judged him innocent.

When it came to public and private matters, you were biased.

We only give you 70% completion this time, we hope you will be clearer on business and personal matters next time."

After finishing the evaluation, Luo Feng didn’t feel any different within. For Luo Feng who had reached the limit in mental state training, even if Hong or Thunder god had tried to convince him, it would still be hard to move him. It could be seen how stubborn he was, or how strongly he believed in his ways.

He closed the mail coldly, opening another new mail.

"Reward for highest point mission?" Luo Feng smiled and looked.

If all levels of the mission had a 100% completion rate, he would get 1 million extra points.

"According to the performance of all 4 levels, we will give you 600,000 extra points, we hope you can use it wisely."

Luo Feng was moved within.

An extra 600,000 points?

At this point, his total points would be 82,000 from the 1st level, 180,000 from the 2nd, 300,000 from the 3rd, 280,000 from the 4th and an extra 600,000 for completing all four missions for a total of 1.442 million points. It was 72.1% of the total 2 million points he could get, it didn't even hit the marginal 80%.

The score was obviously just average.

"Overall evaluation: Even though you massacred over a million in the 1st level, you were still clear enough to spare the innocent, this proves...that you are very calm even when you kill. And despite your bloodthirst, you still chose the 10 billion weaker people to save, this shows you pity the weak.

The 3rd level showed that you aren't afraid of strength, you'd rather not submit and follow your beliefs in finishing the mission.

Blood thirsty and yet calm, also showing pity for the weak and are unafraid of fear.

If only your 4th level had done as well as the 1st three, we would have given you an extra 900,000 points as bonus.

However, during a similar mission of judging 21 people, only this time it was against your family, your change however shocked us...

especially against your father. You didn’t even wish to judge him, not even catching him or putting on a show. It’s obvious that your family’s influence on you is huge, to a point where you cannot distinguish your personal matters from the rules and law.

Humans are social creatures and should indeed respect their family.

However, everything should be done within a certain level of expectation. It’s obvious that you have crossed that line in this aspect, you should be more aware of this."

The highest point mission is now over.

As to how the Virtual Universe Company viewed him from this mission, Luo Feng couldn’t be bothered.

"Excessive in this aspect?"

"I respect my father too much?" Luo Feng laughed coldly.

What a joke, what a bunch of arrogant idiots!

Under his 1st and 2nd brother’s guidance, he had carefully studied ancient books from china, gaining a sense of clarity from them, and many ideologies had resonated with him.

Since ancient times, there was a saying in ancient china that of

all virtues, filial piety comes first!

Filial piety was of the utmost importance.

Even with the many changes in dynasties and eras in ancient china, they all uniformly agreed that anyone who were disrespectful or disobedient to their parents should die! There were even punishments such as flaying or slow deaths for such actions, it was obvious the level of filial piety was respected at a very high level.

In contrast, in modern eras, especially during the new eras, not taking care of one's parents and even hitting them had become common.

However without the background of ancient chinese culture, people didn't think of it as a crime at all.

Luo Feng however, trained in mental states...

He had always respected his parents from young. After which, when he found himself through mental state training, he understood more of the ancient history texts.

Like during the Spring and Autumn era, there was an incident of which a son reported his father for stealing a goat, the son however was punished instead for not being filial!

Qin Guo of ancient china was incredibly strict and heavy on its

rules, it was however more lax on being filial.With the entire country lacking the most basic respect, how could its citizens truly be loyal? How could the country be steady? Hence, both of them had naturally collapsed!

There were many stories regarding this in history, but it all showed one thing.

Filial piety!

It was humanity's most basic element, if a person couldn't even do this, and was bad to his parents, then how could he be loyal to anybody else? Especially to a country? For such a person, if he wasn't brainwashed he was extremely selfish!

If he can't even be filial to his parents, then within his heart... there would never truly be anybody he respected other than himself!

Extreme selfishness!

Of all virtues, filial piety comes first!

"Even if my father had sinned, I will bear it for him! I will also advise him to change. As for punishment...as a son, I will never do it." Luo Feng thought, "Separating business and personal matters?"

"Maybe what the Virtual Universe Company needs is one that would perfectly execute its missions, and one that would never

disobey their orders! Even if it involved family, their mission importance should still exceed that of even their family, this is probably what they need."

"A pity!"

"The company's orders, are not even worth a fraction of my father's importance."

"Excessive?"

"I don't think so."

Luo Feng thought.

The next day.

Virtual Universe Company, Black Dragon Mountain 9 star bay, Luo Feng sat with his father Luo Hong Guo and mother Gong Xin Lan.

"Dad, Mum." Luo Feng poured tea for them.

"Why have you called us over today?" Gong Xin Lan looked at their son, smiling.

Luo Feng smiled and changed the subject. "Dad mum, did you

two build a Nirvana union in the virtual games?"

"How do you know?" Luo Hong Guo's eyes gleamed as he heard. He said, "That Grey Snow world is incredibly vast, it makes one go dizzy within. I can ride a flying beast and fly through endless snow worlds. Hehe...a million strong army clashing against each other is just too cool."

The word cool was something his father's generation often used.

"Haha." Luo feng saw his father's excitement and couldn't help but laugh. For his father to live the life of his dreams, he was already very satisfied.

"Dad Mum, let me show you something." Luo Feng said.

After which he brandished some information with regards to Nirvana union's people killing others, after getting the data from the information department...with Luo Feng's questioning, he had confirmed that the information was the lowest level of information and with his position, he could show it to them.

"What is this?" His parents looked on curiously, as they received the file and looked at it.

They grew silent for awhile.

Luo Feng sat there and patiently waited.

As they stared at the file, their expressions grew uglier, even to the point where Luo Hong Guo slammed the table fiercely. His eyes were gleaming as he cursed, "Bastards, a bunch of ingrates. I treated them as my life and death brothers, I didn't expect them to use me. Xin Lan, when you advised me not to be so trusting before, I thought...that all these were simply within the virtual universe, and that we can eat, drink and kill others without any repercussions, how thrilling. I didn't expect... I didn't know..."

"Dad." Luo Feng saw the state his father was in and knew he had taken quite a blow.

Luo Hong Guo sat down, his eyes pained.

Gong Xin Lan sat beside him and consoled him.

"So many people died." Luo Hong Guo's voice shook.

"Dad, you can only be blamed for your poor judgment of character. However, the ones truly responsible for killing are those bastards." Luo Feng said.

"But they used my position and power." He shook his head.

"Wrong, in truth, they are using my position." Luo Feng said. "If it weren't for me, why would the Black Dragon Mountain empire and Ganwu Universe Country avoid and fear you."

Luo Hong Guo felt extremely bad within.

Luo Feng was very clear that showing them the data would hurt his parents badly. But despite that, he still had to show them that he had to admonish them.

"Dad Mum." Luo Feng changed the topic to take their minds off it, "I’m about to leave."

"Leave?" The two of them looked at him curiously.

Doesn’t he leave often?

"I will be going away for a very long this time, at least a 1,000 years." Luo Feng emphasized. "Hence, it will be quite awhile before I can return to earth, even the virtual universe...I will only come once in a long while."

"Where are you going?" The 2 asked.

"Primal chaos city." Luo Feng replied.

He had been there before, hence his parents knew some simple things about it.

...

After the highest point mission was completed, Luo Feng had immediately requested to head to primal chaos city. As a core disciple, during universe level, domain lord level and sector lord level, he could enter to train there...Luo Feng's request naturally went through quickly. After which...

Through god country teleportation, Dylan sent him straight to the Virtual Universe Company's main headquarters.

After which, he took the company's ship along with other undyings and entered primal chaos city.

Dylan and the other guards couldn't follow.

According to his plan.

When he left primal chaos city, he would already be sector lord pinnacle. When that happened, he would no longer have a guard team. Meaning, at this time, the guard team had left him for good.

Chapter 728: Safe Haven Primal Chaos City

The universe was evolving all the time. The primal universe however was a small universe that was in its early evolution stage. There were many splits and tears in the space with thread like crystal energies flowing and repairing. Each time it repaired, it would tear open again and repeat for eternity...

Primal chaos city was the only ancient city within this entire universe.

Rumble...an oval ship stopped in the air above, its cabin door opened and a large group of human silhouettes flew out. Amongst which, a green armored Luo Feng was mixed within, he wasn't noticeable at all.

100 people flew out.

A black beam of light flew over to greet them. It was a black robed man with green scales covering his head, this man smiled malevolently. "I am the emissary of primal chaos city. Most of you aren't here for the first time. Those familiar with the rules of primal chaos city can carry on, I believe you know what to do. And for those that are here for the 1st time, please follow me."

Sou! Sou! Sou!

22 silhouettes followed the black robed man as he led them away. These 22 were those that had gotten in through auctions or other methods and were here for the 1st time.

And the rest of the hundred headed in their own directions, dispersing.

Luo Feng gently landed in a spacious pathway. As he looked around, he noticed that the distant balconies had large amounts of warriors sitting crossed legged and training. Sector lords and undyings could be seen everywhere. However, most of them were undyings. As for the energies emanating from them...even the sector lord energies, since these were sector lords training in primal chaos city, they were much stronger than the normal sector lords outside.

"Primal chaos city, humanity's sacred training ground." Luo Feng exclaimed.

Just from the sacred training ground one could see the difference.

The gold horn race's sacred training ground was simply a piece of land carved out from the world they lived in. Humanity's sacred training ground however was a primal universe specially used to hold 52 primal chaos tablets, and the leader of the city was one that far exceeded the power of the doyens in the gold horn race.

This was humanity, a pinnacle race in the universe.

"Very good, this a good training place." Luo Feng looked around. "Hm, I have to choose a good living spot, I'll pick somewhere close to teacher."

After awhile.

Luo Feng picked a quiet spot about 1,000km away from his teacher's residence. Once he walked near the white entrance door, he gently placed his hand on it and it triggered the system. The color began to change to a dark grey. From then on, Luo Feng was the owner of this residence.

Every room within the quarters was spacious, even though there were rooms within, large amounts of the warriors still sat crossed legged on the balconies.

"From today on, I'm going to live here for over a thousand years, this will be my home." Luo Feng followed the staircase up and quickly reached the balcony.

The balcony was close to 100m wide, much bigger than the field he had in high school. There were random scribbles all around the balcony, these were obviously left behind by the warriors that had trained and stayed here before in history. Luo Feng believed...that someday he too would leave behind his own scribbles.

He sat crossed legged, feeling the coldness of the balcony.

He looked up at the skies!

The primal energies revolved in the sky, tears stretching across the skies with complex engravings and threads of energies flowing

about. The laws were visible and it was calming to one's soul.

"From today on, I will be here on this balcony for a long time." Luo Feng smiled.

After returning to the 1st floors' living room, the service AI of the place had already prepared a hot pot of tea.

He lay on the fur sofa, lifting the cup of hot tea, he gently smelled the fragrant tea and sipped. As he drank it down from his mouth, he felt the warmth spread throughout his body. After which, he began to think at an incredibly fast speed.

He loved to sip tea and ponder at the same time.

"I now have the beast god statue and the picture of the large sleeping beast god, time space scribbles 3rd volume, Floating snow, Nan Shen armament's 36 levels, Illusionary techniques, Deities of the world, Absolute space, ancient pictures, and Sky tearing claw. I also have over 6 million mixed elements and over 1 million points." Luo Feng pondered on all his possessions.

He clearly planned out his training.

Normally, sector lords would all begin to create their own techniques and their own weapons. Luo Feng was prepared to hit sector lord level in primal chaos city. Since his law comprehension now was already at a very high level, he could begin to create his own technique.

Techniques were mostly separated into study and battle.

The study type was basically used to aid in raising one's comprehension of the laws. The higher the comprehension...the stronger the power, the laws were akin to internal strength. The battle techniques however were more about the usage of these laws, when learning the same laws but with different usages, one's strength would definitely be different.

Law comprehension was the inner work, the techniques were blade work etc.

Of course these were just examples.

"The golden horned beast's technique is the sky tearing claw."

"The Mosha clansman uses the Illusionary techniques."

"The earth body uses the Nan Shen Armament, as it slowly gets more and more ineffective, I will begin to study the Nan Shen 36 levels and create a better technique for myself."

"As for time space scribbles, the beast god statue and so on, these are all for my comprehension. Even the Deities of the world is a strengthening technique."

"Law comprehension is the absolute."

"Hence I will spend most of my focus on it, when they reach a bottleneck level, then I will study the battle techniques." Luo Feng thought, "That will be the way."

After planning out his long period stay, Luo Feng left his living quarters and headed to his teacher True Yan emperor's residence to visit him.

The entrance to the residence was wide open.

Di.

The scanning system on the door scanned Luo Feng and confirmed that he had the right to enter, naturally not stopping him. Luo Feng sneaked into the residence and quickly reached a 10km wide and long plaza. There, close to 1,000 warriors had gathered and were respectfully sitting and listening.

Ahead was a golden armored apeman sitting crossed legged, explaining the 9 universe tablet's 4th picture.

"Teacher." Luo Feng thought within, not daring to disrupt his class and he sat in the corner.

True Yan noticed an additional Luo Feng in the corner as he taught, smiling before he continued on with his class...

After awhile!

"Today’s class ends here." True Yan said indifferently.

"Thank you teacher." The close to 1,000 warriors all bowed respectfully below.

"True Yan emperor sure is powerful, I’ve already comprehended the 5th picture, but hearing him explain the 4th picture still gives me greater insight. Looks like I haven’t fully comprehended the 4th picture."

"Completely comprehending it is really hard. I heard that the 1st 3 pictures have a total of 108 wonders, and fully comprehending these 108 wonders is ten to hundreds of times harder than simply finishing the 4th picture."

The warriors all discussed and dispersed from the plaza.

Luo Feng however walked up to his teacher.

...

"Junior."

"Junior is here."

"It’s been awhile since we’ve seen you." True Yan’s ten disciples there all smiled and waved at Luo Feng, Luo Feng waved back. These seniors of his were mostly Official level undyings, and many of them were at official pinnacle. However, it was a pity that none of them had formally reached emperor level yet.

Normally, an emperor pinnacle level person can easily ask people to help and get the official level pinnacles to be named emperors too.

True Yan had high expectations of his disciples, hence he never did such a thing, he regarded it as a disgrace.

"Luo Feng, follow me." True Yan said.

"Yes teacher." Luo Feng said respectfully.

"My seniors, I will formally greet you all later." Luo feng bid goodbye to them and followed True Yan, arriving in his quiet yard.

This yard was a few km wide and long, it was simply a grassland.

True Yan sat crossed legged within casually and said, "Sit."

Luo Feng obediently complied.

"Have you completed the highest point mission?" True Yan smiled.

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

"Tell me about it, including the final evaluation etc." True Yan said.

"Yes." Luo Feng said respectfully, "The 4th level mission was..." He explained in detail about the points he got, evaluation etc, not hiding any details about it at all.

True Yan was displeased as he heard the story. "This group of idiots, are they really expecting a son to lock his father up in jail, will they only be satisfied that way?"

Luo Feng was stunned.

His teacher was scolding them as idiots?

"If one doesn't even protect his loved ones, then what's the point in training?" True Yan glanced at Luo Feng. "Luo Feng, stick to your beliefs, don't be poisoned by those punks. Our upper echelon of the Virtual Universe Company has indeed become very rigid...do they wish for all the warriors to simply be their pawns? Hmph, the strong are strong because they are independently strong. And those upper echelon, they only show themselves once in awhile."

Luo Feng blinked at his teacher.

"Haha...why, are you shocked?" True Yan laughed, exclaiming, "Your teacher has a bad temper. Back then, I had kicked up such a ruckus that they didn't have any choice but to toss me into primal chaos city, not giving me any authority or status. However, as I am hidden here, I don't have to take their orders. Unless it's truly a grave matter, otherwise I don't have to bother with them."

Luo Feng laughed.

His teacher had once kicked up a ruckus, regarding his matters, he knew very little.

"How long are you prepared to stay in primal chaos city this time?" True Yan asked.

"Until sector lord level." Luo Feng said.

"Ah, are you giving up the other missions?" True Yan was shocked. During domain lord level, the company would occasionally send missions, Luo Feng had currently only completed 2 of them, one giving him 200,000 points and the other was the highest point mission which could at most give him 2 million points. There were others to do still left.

However, if he stayed in primal chaos city, he naturally couldn't do any more.

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

Chapter 729: Teacher's Gift

True Yan sat crossed legged on the grass, pondering a while, he nodded, "Alright, since the highest point mission is over, the other scattered missions at domain lord level all only add up to so little points. You wanting to train in primal chaos city is good too. Since you are prepared to train to sector lord level...then, I've prepared a gift for you."

"A gift." Luo Feng was shocked.

True yan laughed carefree, "You are my disciple, and sector lord is the most critical training period of time. If I don't help you now, can I still be called a teacher? Enter the virtual universe, I'll pass you a manual."

"Yes." Luo Feng nodded excitedly.

Virtual universe primal region, Luo Feng's villa.

Luo Feng stood in the villa and looked up, a silhouette flew straight towards him, it was True Yan emperor. In his hand, he held a 2m long and wide large metal briefcase. It felt like a shipping container altogether.

"This is?" Luo Feng was stunned. The normal handheld briefcases were much smaller, yet his teacher carried such a huge one, how many manuals were there within it.

"Come here." True Yan brought the briefcase straight into the living room.

With a toss, bang, the huge briefcase fell on the floor of the living room.

"A sector lord needs to create his own techniques, and a sector lord’s comprehension speed is the fastest. Hence, you will need the highest levels of technique manuals! Hence, I have exchanged for a bunch of manuals for you." True Yan laughed loudly, pointing at the briefcase, seemingly proud of it.

"Teacher, I can exchange for these manuals myself." Luo Feng had just begun to speak.

True Yan retorted, "You think your little bit of points is worth anything? You could at most exchange for some very basic manuals, you wouldn’t be able to exchange for any true powerful manuals at all. Time space scribbles is but an assisting guide, yet it’s already worth 100 billion points. As for the true study and battle technique manuals, those with absolute top notch power... your 1 million points is useless."

Luo Feng couldn’t help but choke as he heard.

1 million points is useless? For someone extremely close to becoming a knight like True Yan emperor, this made total sense.

"Look carefully." True Yan walked forward and immediately

opened the huge briefcase.

Rumble!

Its metal lock was opened and within lay many thick books. The thinner ones alone were about 20cm thick, the thickest being 1m long and wide and half a meter thick. They were completely dark gold in color and were made of metal. There were a total of 3 such metal books within!

Just these 3 books took up a lot of space, the rest were scattered about within.

"There’s a total of 106 normal techniques manuals and one valuable one within." True Yan laughed. "The 106 books are cheap, adding up to a few million points only. They are mainly to assist you, some are for study while others are for building weapons and techniques etc."

Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed and nodded.

These 106 techniques, they seem to cover just about everything.

"As for this one!" True Yan pointed to the neatly arranged 3 dark gold books, "This is expensive."

1 set, 3 volumes.

Every volume was 1m wide and half a meter thick.

"How expensive is it?" Luo Feng asked.

"8 billion points." True Yan smiled, looking at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng stared wide eyed.

My god!

8 billion points!

This bit of wealth was enough to be an entire emperor level undying's fortune. Of course to the emperor pinnacle, even a normal knight, it was still something they could afford. Even so, this was still a huge gesture from True Yan. Luo Feng was completely stunned by the amount.

An undying could use money to exchange for points, 1 mixed element for 1 point. This was akin to 8 billion mixed elements, even for an undying, it was a huge amount!

Because of earth, Luo Feng had signed a deal with the Virtual Universe Company.

However that amount was split up and was to be distributed at 3 occasions.

Before undying, he would get less than 100 million mixed elements. Only after becoming undying...would he get close to 50 billion mixed elements. However, the golden horned beast was extremely hard to breakthrough to undying, who knew when that would ever happen.

"Haha, just from this 8 billion points, I spent a good half of my points." True Yan laughed. He didn't hide anything from Luo Feng, "When I want to exchange for something in the future, I probably have to use my money."

"Teacher." Luo Feng said, "I cannot accept this, this..."

Back when his teacher had persuaded him to get the time space scribbles, he had told him that even he couldn't afford the entire set, and that was worth 100 billion points. It was obvious that this 8 billion was a huge sum to him too.

And in truth.

True Yan naturally didn't have many points. However, just like Luo Feng, who had the Luo Ke holy water and close to 10,000 blood river crystals along with other treasures. True Yan emperor, as an absolute warrior naturally had many treasures. The worth of his wealth was much more than a normal emperor level undying. If he was willing to sell some treasures, he'd probably have a lot more.

"Your teacher is now at the final step before becoming a knight, the materialistic things are useless now." True Yan shook his head. "I haven't spent much over a trillion years, and it's been easy for

me to nurture your seniors. Your seniors however, I've never spent more than 1 billion. You are the most."

Luo Feng looked curiously at him, "Why?"

"I've seen your bladework, your control of the Nan Shen armament, and your claw techniques." True Yan emphasized. "I discovered...whether you are conscious of it or not, your fusion of the gold and space laws are extremely ingenious. Hence, I know this valuable manual will fit you well."

Luo Feng couldn't even force a smile.

Fusion was ingenious?

He had been studying the beast god presence, and it was a pinnacle level fusion of the gold and space laws. After having a grasp of the beast god presence, he often sought help from his teacher, during his demonstrations he would display some of its flavor.

"This manual will definitely fit you well, the moment you have some progress in it, your power will catch up to mine." True Yan's eyes were filled with anticipation. "If you can catch up to me, even against normal knights, you won't die."

"Work hard." True Yan rubbed Luo Feng's head, laughing loudly, after which he vanished.

Luo Feng looked at the briefcase full of 106 normal manuals and 1 valuable one, for a total of a few hundred books. He felt extremely grateful within.

"Teacher!"

"Your student will always remember this debt." Luo Feng decided to return the favor the moment he achieved anything.

Over a long period of time, True Yan's family had all long died, hence his treatment of his students was like a parent to his children. A teacher like that was very special...and now he even gave Luo Feng these valuable manuals. One had to know that if Luo Feng were to fall along the way, everything would simply be wasted, yet he still did such a thing.

This was also why his students were all very united, no one wanting to ever hurt their teacher.

107 manuals, a total of 582 books, Luo Feng swiftly brought all of them over to his study.

"106 normal manuals, buying them through the treasure trove actually requires close to 6 million points." Luo Feng was shocked. Even though these manuals were normal according to True Yan, in truth everyone of them was still stronger than Illusionary techniques.

"This valuable manual."

Luo Feng looked at the top 3 dark gold metal books. Their covers only had the words, 1, 2 and 3 on them, representing each volume. They didn't have any other information.

Luo Feng gently flipped open the 1st volume.

It's details were...

"Through the primal universe's evolution, over a trillion races have been produced. There have been many mysterious life forms of which, there's the powerful beast god. This beast god is a super being developed by the universe itself, its body is a fusion of the space and gold laws. A slash or whip of its tail, or even a headbutt all has the universe laws melded within. Wu Xi Luo Duo, has studied the beast god's 7 techniques to create the Nan Shen 7 forms."

Beast god 7 techniques, Nan Shen 7 forms.

Completing the 1st 3 levels, one will be invincible amongst anything below the knights.

Completing the 1st 6 levels, one will be invincible amongst anything below the universe masters.

Completing the 7th level, one can become like a true beast god, akin to a true universe master, standing at the pinnacle of the universe.

Creating the beast god 7 techniques, Nan Shen 7 forms, he only finished the 1st 6 levels, the 7 is purely imagination, it isn't truly perfect. To become a true beast god...as powerful and invincible as it is. It is extremely hard and difficult! He hoped that the later generations of the gold horn race would be able to perfect it and complete it."

Luo Feng was stunned from the book.

Xi Luo Duo?

The greatest being of the gold horn race?

"Completing the 6th level, meant one would be invincible amongst anything below the universe masters? 7th level was akin to a universe master? Such a terrifying manual...is it not as expensive as Time space scribbles? No." Luo Feng was shocked, quickly flipping through the 2nd and 3rd volume, he couldn't help but feel a sense of regret.

His guess was right.

These 3 manuals were simply the 1st 3 levels of the Nan Shen 7 forms.

"So it's only the beginning. Yet, finishing these 3 and one would be invincible amongst anything below the knights, and these alone were worth 8 billion points." Luo Feng exclaimed, he now truly

understood just how powerful the great Xi Luo Duo was.

It was no wonder...

That he alone could support the entire gold horn race. He had reached a level where he was invincible amongst anything below a universe master.

"Universe master? So Void gold master, primal chaos city leader and the beast god, they are all the same level?" Luo Feng pondered.

Chapter 730: Beast God 7 Techniques

After looking through the beast god 7 techniques again, Luo Feng got a rough idea of how, above the universe knights, there was an even higher level. Like the powerful Void gold master, beast god, and primal chaos city leader, it was obvious that they were much more powerful than the knights. Even Xi luo Duo...he supported the entire race.

"So it’s that way." Luo Feng muttered.

Undying...Universe knights...Universe master.

As a middle level race, the gold horn race only had Xi Luo Duo back then as their leader, not requiring anybody else to protect them. And he had trained till the 6th level of the beast god 7 techniques back then, it meant that he was invincible amongst anything below universe master...he had true power.

And the universe master, even amongst a pinnacle race like humanity, was still a pinnacle being.

According to the information, Luo Feng began to get a grasp of the power levels of the absolute warriors of the universe.

"My teacher True Yan emperor is already considered an absolute warrior, and the knights are the next level. Universe masters however, they are the true rulers of the universe! Even at Xi Luo Duo’s level...he was already a ruler." Luo Feng was extremely excited within, after which he began to read through the thick and

valuable manual.

The entire 1st 3 volumes of the beast god 7 techniques.

Luo Feng simply read through everything at one go, even though he didn't fully understand a lot of things, he still learnt a lot.

"It actually...."

"Meld the laws?"

Luo Feng was shocked within. After reading through the entire volume, he understood the theory behind the beast god 7 techniques.

The universe had gold, wood, water, fire, ground, wind, thunder, light, space and time. These 10 laws, according to Xi Luo Duo's manual, said that when the universe was 1st evolving, there were only two great laws. Of which one split into gold, wood, water, fire, ground and space, while the other became wind, thunder, light and time!

Hence two sects were formed.

The space sect with space as the main and the 4 under it, gold, wood, water, fire and wood.

The time sect with time as the main and thunder, wind and light

under it.

...

Completely comprehending the space law would make one a space knight.

Completely comprehending the time law would make one a time knight.

When one comprehended both these laws, truly grasping time and space, with the unbelievable power to warp time and space... that was a universe master.

...

Even amongst the trillions of races and countless warriors, there had never been one that had completely melded the gold, wood, water, fire, wood and space laws into one, returning it to one of the original two great laws. And there hadn't been one that had melded thunder, wind, light and time back into the other.

And through the passages of time, the countless warriors have discovered...

Simply melding gold and space, or wood and space, or water and space, or fire and space, or wood and space, these alone were extremely difficult! Simply melding two laws as such would already make one an absolute warrior.

Melding gold and space, once it reached a level of perfection, that alone was enough to become a universe master.

The beast god 7 techniques Xi Luo Duo created were very strange too.

The 1st level was a partial fusion between gold and space.

The 2nd level...

...

The 6th level, was a complete fusion between gold and space, forming a fusion law! Xi Luo Duo had reached this level back then...and he already was invincible between anything below universe master.

However Xi Luo Duo knew too...that the universe could produce something as powerful as the beast god with universe master level strength, and it was an embodiment of the fusion between gold and space laws itself. Every attack was naturally infused with the fusion of laws, even the statue of it was a fusion of the laws.

Hence he strongly believed...the fusion of space and gold could match a universe master.

The beast god 7 techniques he created should have a 7th level!

The 7th level should allow one to become a true beast god, akin to a universe master. Of course, these were simply his thought process and had yet to be completed, hence even though it was called the beast god 7 techniques, in truth it could only be trained till the 6th.

...

"Comprehending the space law completely and becoming a knight, that alone is already incredibly hard, many absolute geniuses barely become a knight." Luo Feng exclaimed. "And according to Xi Luo Duo, melding space and gold is thousands to tens of thousands of times harder than simply comprehending space."

This path was hard!

However, at least Luo Feng got a clear path to follow now.

"Beast god path?"

"I have the beast god 7 techniques from Xi Luo Duo as guidance and the beast god statue to refer to." Luo Feng's mind flashed, he suddenly thought of something, sending his consciousness into his internal world.

Within his internal world, the spacious grassland.

Black clothed Luo Feng was carrying the beast god statue, beside him was a continuous black mountain range like golden horned beast lying on the ground. Its large river like eyes were staring at the little beast god statue too, this statue...was the one he had gotten from Blood River world back then luckily.

In terms of pressure, it couldn't compare to the huge beast god statue in the gold horn race beast god canyon.

However, it was much more condensed, comparable to a true beast god.

Howl...The golden horned beast suddenly raised its head and howled, it was extremely happy and excited within.

"I know, I got it." Black clothed Luo Feng's eyes gleamed, he said excitedly, "I finally know why this statue gives off a special presence and pressure. It's because...because this statue itself is a fusion of the laws! A true beast god's every move is infused with the fusion laws...and this statue was from where it lived back then within the Blood River world. Who knows how this statue was created, however it's akin to a true beast god. As it's a fusion of the laws, even if this statue cannot be considered a full fusion, it is still infused with the fusion laws within!"

It's no wonder.

No wonder that while seeking the beast god presence, and constantly imitating it, he was able to grasp the pressure from the beast god presence.

So he was actually looking at the fusion of laws over and over, imitating it...

"Haha..."

"I have this beast god statue, it is a body of the fusion laws itself."

"And now I have the beast god 7 techniques. It's extremely valuable, and is the gold horn race's most valuable manual." Black clothed Luo Feng's eyes gleamed with madness. "Even though... even though this path is much much harder than the path of becoming a knight. However with these two to assist me, I will definitely have high achievements."

The beast god statue and the beast god 7 techniques, these could be considered miraculous encounters.

And simply having these wasn't enough, one still needed talent, hard work, luck and many more factors. Afterall, standing at the pinnacle of the universe was simply too hard.

Even though the beast god statue was special, it was condensed and hidden. The undyings in Blood River world couldn't even understand it, and the golden horned beast is a favored child of the gold laws itself. It had a natural talent for the space laws too. Like it's natural ability Swallow, that was a space technique as well.

And the golden horned beast had the strongest bloodline with

gold and space laws.

The beast god was a fusion of gold and space.

The two had a special connection, otherwise it wouldn’t be that easy for the golden horned beast to absorb that many blood river crystals. Other life forms found it hard to simply absorb 10 crystals, but the beast could absorb a 100...and it was still only because its willpower couldn’t take more, otherwise it could absorb even more! It could be seen that the golden horned beast and the beast god did have some relationship. Hence, he could faintly feel the fusion laws within the condensed beast god statue.

If it weren’t for the golden horned beast, other life forms would have to reach an extremely high level of fusion between the two laws before being able to sense anything special about the statue.

Primal chaos city, True Yan’s residence.

"Teacher." Luo Feng bowed with gratitude.

"Sit." True Yan sat cross legged in the grass.

"Yes." Luo Feng sat beside him.

"Have you finished the manual?" True Yan laughed.

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

"How is it, does it fit you well?" True Yan's eyes were filled with anticipation. No one would know before beginning the training whether something would fit well, however his vision had always been accurate. Having frequently seen Luo Feng demonstrated his techniques, he discovered that Luo Feng was naturally talented in this field. Hence he bought the manual for him.

True Yan's entire fortune wasn't even enough to buy 1/10th of the entire 7 volumes! Buying the 1st 3 was still acceptable to him.

"It suits me well." Luo Feng said.

"That's good, haha, if it didn't, I would feel the pinch." True Yan laughed.

"However, back then I had planned to stay for a few hundred years in primal chaos city, and melding the laws is obviously a lot harder. I may have to stay for a few thousand years now." Luo Feng said. When he told his family that he would be leaving for over a thousand years, that was still actual universe time, and the time flow between the two universes was different.

1,000 years in the actual universe was only a little more than 300 years in the primal universe.

Hence, a few hundred years in primal chaos city seemed ok. But, from the looks of it now...it was obviously not enough.

"No rush at all, the basics are the most fundamental." True Yan said.

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded, filled with confidence within.

Walking the true pinnacle path of the beast god, he was filled with confidence.

"Ah, right." True Yan said, "Luo Feng, I know you are very strong, much stronger than what you show the Virtual Universe Company."

Luo Feng laughed.

He frequently sought help from his teacher, naturally he showed him quite a bit of his strength.

"You have no need to hide your strength, you have to show it." True Yan emphasized. "Show you heavenly talents, only then will they favor you more. And every primal region sector lord will get a sea of resources for nurture. The stronger you are, the more you'll get. If you perform very well...the moment you break through to sector lord, you will immediately be given a huge amount of resources!"

"If you are weak, you'll get less."

"The strong get more."

"Ah?" Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

That was right, he was in primal chaos city, there was no more need to stay low profile.

Chapter 731: Training Way of Life

Luo Feng devoted himself to studying the beast god's seven technique's 1st manual.

The 1st level was a partial fusion of space and gold.

The gold laws...Luo Feng had already received the recognition of the laws, he was close to almost fully comprehending the gold laws. In that sense, he was already adequate enough to reach up to the 5th level of the beast god seven techniques.

In terms of the space laws, the 1st level's requirements were...1st 3 pictures of the 9 universe tablet.

"Xi Luo Duo went through normal comprehension back then too, he didn't truly comprehend all 108 wonders like I will." Luo Feng thought. "However, according to his book, if one fully comprehended all 108 wonders of the space and gold law foundation, then the power of the 1st level would be even greater."

"Hm!"

"I'll first finish up the 108 wonders of the space law." Luo Feng thought.

The path of comprehending the wonders was extremely tough. Luo Feng had the mosha clansman, the golden horned beast and he was sector lord level, hence his training was much faster. The over

180 years of training that he did in the gold horn race world, which was during sector lord level, was worth more than tens of thousands of years of domain lord level training.

Tens of thousands of years of training!

With Luo Feng's talent, if he hadn't studied the wonders of space, and simply studied the basic 9 universe tablet like others, he probably would have finished the 4th picture already.

Back then, Lian Luo took 3,000 years at sector lord level to fully comprehend the 108 wonders.

"Before comprehending the wonders fully, I won't study the 4th or 5th picture...or there will be distractions." Luo Feng took a deep breath.

Choosing this path.

It was set to be tough...

And he even picked a path which was even tougher than simply comprehending the laws...this was the fusion of laws!

"Bring it!"

Luo Feng's eyes gleamed with anticipation.

After which, he began his period of training, sitting crossed legged everyday on his balcony, while looking up occasionally to observe the law revolutions. The golden horned beast kept studying the huge beast god statue, and was also comprehending the beast god presence from the little statue. The mosa clansman on the other hand was studying the space laws.

3 as 1!

With the help of the beast god statue, he was able to observe the law revolutions in the primal universe. He would occasionally head over to the city leader's residence to view the tablet personally...also, he could head over to some emperor level undyings teaching classes. This way, his training speed was many times faster than in the actual universe!

...

Time passed.

His life had turned into a routine of listening to his teacher, attending other emperor level undyings' classes, studying the beast god statue, and training.

Luo Feng was like a well oiled machine continuously growing, like a dry sponge desperately soaking up moisture.

...

In the blink of an eye, close to 90 years had passed, but this was the Primal universe time. As for the actual universe time, it was already close to 300 years.

Primal chaos city, within a majestic ancient residence, there gathered over a thousands warriors who were sitting crossed legged. They listened to an old man covered in green scales with a long beard teach a class.

"So, it’s that way."

"Wonderful."

Luo Feng sat crossed legged amidst the others and listened intently. He couldn’t help but reveal a look of glee, as the doubts in his mind started clearing up. The old man teaching the class...was one of those that he frequented in this close to 90 years. This warrior was Yan Long emperor, he was well reputed in primal chaos city, as he was definitely a true pinnacle level being amongst the emperor level undyings. In terms of strength alone, he was very close to True Yan emperor.

True Yan emperor and Yan Long emperor along with other pinnacle level emperors would often draw a lot of people to their classes.

Yan Long emperor was from the Virtual Universe Company faction, and he specialized in space and gold laws. Hence, Luo Feng enjoyed his classes and frequented them.

"We will end here today."

The green scaled old man smiled and said, his long beard flowed in the wind as he got up.

"Thank you teacher!"

Over a 1,000 warriors below, and more than half of them were undyings, along with the other geniuses, got up and bowed extremely respectfully as they shouted with gratitude.

These classes were afterall free, they were definitely grateful for them.

Yan Long emperor smiled and brought his disciples and left, the crowd down below began to disperse as well.

"Ah, Tuo Ka, that must be Luo Feng. Even though I've heard of his name in the Huge Axe dojo, and know that he's an absolute genius, this is the 1st time I've seen him. Ah, right, he should be a primal region domain lord. You are also a domain lord primal region member, you should be familiar with him right. Tell me about him." In the distance, two men were chatting.

Among these two, one was fatter with 3 soft horns on his forehead, and his skin was red as he smiled at Luo Feng. The other was a skinny cold man in black armor.

"Hm, he is indeed a primal region domain lord. There are a total

of 11 people in the domain lord level primal region right now." The skinny man said coldly. "He just rose from the universe level, and he hasn't even taken part in any qualification battles. Hence, I'm not close to him."

"Ah, what a pity." The fatter man shook his head.

"What's there to pity." The skinny man said coldly, "Ti Si Pu Luo, do you really care about him?"

"He is afterall a rare genius." The fatter man said.

"Hmph...he just recently became a domain lord, he hasn't even taken part in one qualification battle. And the next domain lord battle will be in 18 years. The primal region universe level members have very low standards, the strongest only passing the 8th level of the heavenly bridge. And at our domain lord level...the lowest primal region members have all passed the 10th level." The skinny man said coldly, "This Luo Feng is set...to be eliminated to the absolute beginning region."

"Newbies. It's normal to be eliminated temporarily." The fatter man said.

"That'll depend on his strength then." The skinny man glanced at Luo feng and smiled coldly. "My teacher said that he was an absolute genius, he would definitely take the primal region slot in the future. However, I don't believe it...geniuses normally start off fast and slide down slowly...there's so many cases of it."

"That does seem right." The fatter man nodded.

"What's more, our domain lord primal region has 10 seniors. Even though on the surface, only 1 has passed the 11th level, they are all incredibly crafty. Even if they had the ability to pass the 11th, they will all hide it well. This way, they can surprise their opponents during the qualification battles." The skinny man said softly, "I dare guarantee, that there are at least 3 of the seniors that can pass the 11th level. As for the rest, they all have passed the 10th a long time ago...but, they all have their own secret techniques..."

The fatter man nodded.

"The qualification battles 18 years from now will have the 10 seniors and Luo Feng, the single newbie. Just watch, he will lose very badly." The skinny man said confidently.

"Haha..." The fatter man laughed.

...

Luo Feng, who was walking out with the crowd heard everything clearly, it was obvious this Tuo Ka wasn't trying to hide it.

"These bunch of punks...they don't know that I don't even consider them as opponents." Luo Feng thought.

Tuo Ka was one of the 10 seniors of the domain lord primal region members, he was pretty strong.

Actually over so many years...

Luo Feng had discovered that the 10 seniors of the primal region had some conflict with him due to his swift uprising! It made many within the Virtual Universe Company regard him as a rare genius of the past 10,000 eras, and that he would take a spot in the sector lord primal region.

Amongst the four secret regions, the primal region was the most respected and valuable.

Universe level, domain lord level, sector lord!

It was obvious that the competition was most intense at the sector lord level, of which it involved a large amount of resource distribution. As the upper echelon all complimented Luo Feng...it naturally made the similar primal region geniuses all unhappy. All of them were afterall vying for the same sector lord primal region spots!

"Looking down on me?" Luo Feng thought as he shook his head, mocking within, "During the qualification battles in 18 years, I'll give them something to look at."

"Luo Feng."

Babata's voice resounded within his mind, "Even though on the surface you are a domain lord, in truth you are already sector lord

level! Your training efficiency for one day equates to their 1 year... and now, with the 3 clones, and the beast god statue, you are already stronger than them. You will simply be bullying them."

"Bully?" Luo Feng laughed.

Indeed.

During the close to 90 years in primal chaos city, Luo Feng had completely comprehended 102 of the 108 wonders. In terms of efficiency...it was 20 times that of Lian Luo! The main thing was that he had 3 clones, all extremely gifted and the heavenly beast god statue, naturally his efficiency was much higher.

"I hope I can finish the 108 wonders before the qualification battles." Luo Feng thought.

The moment he did that.

Then his space law comprehension would be sufficient to pass the 12th level of the heavenly bridge. This was what Lian Luo said back then...and Luo Feng had realized himself as well, that even without relying on his shocking spirit energy amplitude, he could still pass the 11th level already.

"Let’s go to the city leader’s residence." Luo Feng turned and headed that way.

"Why are we heading there?" Babata asked.

"To study the 9 universe tablet." Luo Feng smiled.

"But you've already used up all your chances." Babata said.

Having been in primal chaos city for close to 90 years, Luo Feng had never once attempted the heavenly bridge. Hence, he only had two chances at studying the tablet, and 30 years ago, he had already used it up.

"Simple, I'll attempt the heavenly bridge." Luo Feng smiled. "My walk from here to the city leader's residence...should be enough for me to pass the 12th level."

Immediately, he sent a thread of consciousness into the virtual universe network.

Standing at the entrance of the heavenly bridge.

Right in the center of the beautiful island stood the watchman Bevin who had been here for countless years. He stood there patiently, suddenly a silhouette appeared out of nowhere in the center, it was a black haired youth.

"Ah, Luo Feng." Watchman Bevin revealed a smile, dressed in a fiery red long robe, he smiled and walked over.

"Watchman Bevin, you've changed your robe." Luo Feng smiled.

"Haha, I can’t always be wearing the same thing." He smiled and replied. "I haven’t seen you in a long time, ever since you passed the 7th level, you haven’t attempted it even once. In the blink of an eye...several hundred years have passed. I know you, the moment you attempt the bridge, it’s always shocking. How are you prepared to shock us this time? Passing straight to the 9th? Or... the barrier of the 10th?"

Most of the domain lord primal region members had all only passed the 10th.

Luo Feng had only been training for a few hundred years...

Watchman Bevin was mocking him too, he didn’t think Luo Feng was truly that exceptional.

Luo Feng smiled, "I’ll surprise you."

"Ah?" Watchman Bevin was shocked, "I’ll be waiting."

Luo Feng smiled and became a beam of light flying towards the 9 universe bridge.

Chapter 732: Attempting The Heavenly Bridge

Luo Feng stood before the 9 universe bridge and gazed at the never ending bridge before him. Smiling he said, "Old friend, it's been awhile, naturally I'm going to shock everyone today. It's time to give it my all and show everybody my strength."

Sou!

He instantly became a gold beam of light and disappeared into the distance, beginning his attempt.

...

As he began his attempt, watchman Bevin began sending out a group of mails.

"The absolute genius of the past 10,000 eras Luo Feng sure is watched by many of the upper echelons." Watchman Bevin muttered. "They all ordered me to let them know the moment he attempts the bridge."

In an instant, tens of mails were sent out.

There were 3 exceptional members from Luo Feng's batch of geniuses. One of them was Bolan, another was Rong Jun and the last was Luo Feng! Bolan and Luo Feng were both regarded as

geniuses of the past 10,000 eras. Rong Jun however was looked on as a treasure by the upper echelon of the Virtual Universe Company, they even competed against each other to accept him as their disciple.

However at least for now, of the 3 geniuses, Luo Feng was in the lead.

...

Jade emperor extended her crystal like finger and gently tapped open a screen, a mail appeared on it.

"Luo Feng is attempting the heavenly bridge?" Her perfect face revealed a peculiar smile as she said softly, "This punk never rests till he shocks everybody. The other geniuses from his batch that had attempt the bridge regularly, especially that Bolan...he's already passed the 8th level!"

"Who knows how many levels he'll pass this time, 9th? Or...the unbelievable 10th?" Jade Emperor smiled and immediately rushed to the bridge.

In less than 10 seconds, Ture Yan, Jade, Tie Nan...Bei Cang official and so on, a total of 86 undyings, where over half of them were emperors, and the rest of them were officials, had all gathered at the bridge.

On the island in the center of the heavenly bridge area, True Yan

and the other undyings gathered.

"Haha, so many people." True Yan laughed and looked about.

"True Yan, it’s your fault for producing such an exceptional disciple." A huge man with a huge golden beard laughed. "The knight ordered me to take note of this punk, I don’t dare slack off. The moment I found out he was attempting the bridge, I had to come immediately."

"Yea, I’m here on the knight’s orders too." The other emperors along with some officials smiled.

The atmosphere was good.

True Yan laughed as he turned to look at Jade behind him, mocking, "Jade, you have to tell the 9 blade knight the news. With so many of the upper echelon watching him...9 blade sure has pressure on him. When my disciple does well, others may want to steal him away."

"Whatever belongs to the knight is his, no one can take him away." Jade’s gaze swept past the group of undyings, making many of them laugh out loud.

The knights (universe country leaders) within the Virtual Universe Company were all competing, and the number of warriors below them...were naturally different. And getting more pinnacle level emperors under them may give them the chance to

actually break through to becoming knights.

These naturally formed sects even amongst the knights. There were many situations where the knights couldn't personally attend to, naturally having a powerful warrior under them made a huge difference.

"It's hard enough to get a normal emperor level undying. However as for when Luo Feng will reach emperor level pinnacle like his teacher True Yan, when that time comes, he can form his own sect." A black robed lady with a long snake tail smiled, "9 blade knight won't be able to stop him either. When that happens, the many knights and country leaders will use all methods to attract him...it'll be hard to say who he will go to."

"You seem to really favor him." Jade looked over.

"That is at least a possibility." The black robed lady smiled, "Everybody, how far do you think he'll go this time?"

"At least the 8th! The Bolan from his batch has already passed the 8th."

"From what I see, it may be the 9th, he's used to shocking people."

"Hm, I think it's the 9th too."

"9th is the limit! Every 3 levels is a barrier, it's highly unlikely he

passes the 10th."

"9th."

"It may be the 10th, don't get too shocked when he does it."

"True Yan, what do you think."

A big group of emperors and officials representing their knights, even though the officials were weaker in strength, they could still take on such matters. It was obvious they were all trusted aides... hence everybody was carefree about the matter.

"It seems like most think he'll reach the 9th level." True Yan wasn't exactly laughing as he smiled, his gaze sweeping past the crowd, "Everybody will just have to wait and see, ah. The battle's starting!"

After which the 86 undyings all turned to look at the screen.

On it, Luo Feng had just reached the end of the 8th level, the asteroid had just turned into a blue clothed man as they faced off and began.

The battle ensued for just a second before it ended.

He had passed the 8th level!

"He didn’t win completely over the 8th, the 9th should be his limit."

"Hm."

86 undyings all watched the screen and commented; however they quickly grew silent.

...

The 9th level’s opponent still used the Nan Shen Armament’s 6th level Blade world, but it had reached a very high level. Luo Feng used his blade world as well to clash about 10 times, after getting a good grasp on his opponent’s attack...only then did he defeat him.

9th level, pass!

...

The 10th level was a yellow clothed man, he used the Nan Shen Armament’s 7th level, Land and sky crushing rod. This rod belonged to the extreme high level of the blade world. Luo Feng similarly clashed with him for about 10 times before fiercely crushing him.

10th level, pass!

...

11th level, the yellow clothed opponent used the Nan Shen Armament’s 8th level, Space slicing Gold blade, Luo Feng still clashed with him for awhile before killing him.

11th level, pass!

On the island.

The group of undyings were all silent, as all of them were shocked as they stared at the screen, all in disbelief.

Was this possible?

He was initially leading the geniuses by passing the 7th level of the heavenly bridge in the past. But, within just a few hundred years, suddenly he had the strength to pass the 11th level. Also, from what the undyings saw, he was obviously still not giving his all, he would purposely clash a few times with the opponents before killing them. It was obvious the 11th level opponent hadn’t even given him much of a challenge.

"My god."

"How is this possible?"

"His improvement is so fast, and he’s only a domain lord. Even if he was a sector lord, it’s still impossible for him to improve so

much in just a few hundred years."

"Terrifying!"

"Too terrifying."

The emperors and officials were all stunned. Luo Feng's improvement speed had far exceeded an absolute genius, even exceeding that of a demon. Hence, they could only call him a monster! one that exceeded all expectations and imaginations, an absolute genius monster!

Just like Ke Di back then...universe level, domain lord, sector lord level, he could all pass the primal region sky mountain. And at sector lord level pinnacle he was akin to an emperor level undying, he could even kill official level undyings!

This was a monster!

In terms of strength, Luo Feng was still far from Ke Di back then. However, his speed improvement over these few hundred years... was definitely not ordinary!

"Will he pass the 12th?"

"Is law comprehension as easy as drinking water to him. How is this even possible? There should be a limit, no?"

"Right now amongst the 10 seniors of the domain lord primal region members, the strongest has only passed the 11th level, and he's already trained for tens of thousands of years. As for this Luo Feng, has he exceeded him from just a few hundred years of training? This is impossible!"

The undyings all held their breaths.

It was pure silence on the island, no one dared say anything, all of them were staring hard at the screen.

...

Levels 7-9 were in space. 10-12 were within a planet itself, the bridge extended into the core and lava region of the planet itself.

Within the planet.

Luo Feng stood at the end of the 12th level, gazing down at the vast land below, "I've finally reached the surface."

There was rumbling from below the ground and a voice resounded, "Pick your opponent, fighter, controller, or hypnotist. Pick one, defeat him and you will pass the 12th level."

"Controller." Luo Feng said.

Rumble...

The ground shook and countless yellow lights shot out from all about below, swiftly gathering in mid air. In an instant, it became a yellow armored mysterious warrior wearing a mask, he carried a dark golden long rod on his back and stood on a dark cloud shuttle. He looked at Luo Feng and said, "To reach the 12th level at domain lord level, you are very exceptional. As of now, none of the domain lord members of the Virtual Universe Company have passed this."

"Then let me break the record." Luo feng smiled.

"You seem confident." The yellow clothed man said coldly. "I'll still be using the Nan Shen Armament's 8th level, Space slicing gold blade. However, it'll be much stronger than the 11th level, you will have to be careful."

"Come." Luo Feng smiled.

Rumble! Rumble!

Luo Feng and the yellow clothed man immediately shot out countless gold lights, every 81 of them swiftly becoming a golden little blade.

The two of them had 108 golden little blades around them. These 108 blades immediately revolved around and shot out many gold threads, as the powerful law ripples filled up their surroundings, space and gold laws, in perfect harmony, swiftly fusing.

"Combine!" Luo Feng and the man shouted simultaneously.

108 gold blades swiftly gathered and became a 2.8m tall gold broadsword.

The two of them floated in mid air with their broadswords.

Weng weng... Luo Feng's broadsword shook before him.

"Spirit energy amplitude! Explode!" Luo Feng could feel his control over the broadsword feeling somewhat taxing. He immediately increased his spirit energy amplitude to 1,200, it was immediately much easier. It was almost like a normal person lifting a barbell, if he had 12 times the strength suddenly...it would suddenly seem much easier.

Chapter 733: Explode! Explode! Explode!

Luo Feng stood on his dark cloud shuttle. 1,200 threads of spirit energy poured into controlling the Nan Shen gold broadsword, precisely controlling the entire blade's complex law engravings, triggering the space and gold laws. Luo Feng looked at the distant yellow clothed man and shouted, "Space slice!"

Hua!

The gold blade was strong and unwavering. The space around it warped as it followed the flow of space itself, almost like it flowed through the most precise path or slit in space. What was visible was a golden thread slicing through space, leaving behind a visible slit as it flew. It was obvious that if it was any stronger, it would instantly tear apart space itself.

"Hua!" The yellow clothed man stood on his dark cloud shuttle as he controlled his blade, fast as lightning.

The two blades instantly clashed in mid air.

It was almost like two absolute swordsman exchanging blades. Luo feng and the man had already reached an unbelievable level of control of the gold blades, they were so fast that only gold threads were visible in mid air, which spread throughout the skin and covered the area.

Clashing time and again.

It was very intense.

This scene had complete stunned the group of undyings watching the broadcast of the battle. This was a scene where the 8th level of the Nan Shen armament had reached an extremely high level...the gold blade was not even clearly visible, one could only see the gold threads move about. And this thread was caused by space being sliced apart.

Luo Feng and the yellow clothed man both were at domain lord level 9. Hence, they only left behind slits in space. If the two of them were sector lords, with their spirit energies 1,000 times stronger...using the space slice gold blade would slice through space like tofu. And only very very few sector lords could reach this level, yet Luo Feng had done it at domain lord level.

"Haha, this sure is savage."

"Not bad."

Clashing tens of times, Luo Feng got a clear grasp of his opponent's ability, he finally smiled widely and increased his spirit energy amplitude to 1,600.

Xiu!

A gold thread got even faster, swiftly passing through the yellow clothed man's body, so fast he couldn't even dodge.

Papapapa...his body was instantly sliced apart like tofu. In an instant, the gold blade's fierce blade energy sliced through and tore his body to shreds, his life core was broken...

12th level!

Passed!

"13th level!" Luo Feng took a deep breath, and his eyes were filled with anticipation and madness.

Rumble...the end of the bridge once again began to extend...

10th level, 11th level, 12th level, these were all within the core of the planet, the lava region and the surface of the planet.

Every three levels was a barrier.

The 13th...

The bridge extended upwards towards a star in space, it was obvious the battle would take place there.

"Star?" Luo Feng followed the never ending bridge up towards the fiery star, smiling as he swiftly flew along to begin the 13th level.

In the island at the center of the bridges.

86 undyings were all watching as Luo Feng once again exchanged blows with his opponent tens of times before killing him, they were all shocked.

"12th level, he has passed the 12th level! This Luo Feng keeps picking the most disadvantaged controller route...and he actually succeeded?" Jade was shocked within. She was completely dumbfounded, Luo Feng's improvement speed had reached an unbelievable level, it completely surpassed her expectations.

"Could, could he..."

Jade looked at Luo Feng on the screen heading towards the 13th level, her eyes were filled with shock, "He's attempting the 13th?"

It was not just Jade at this time, all the undyings including his teacher True Yan were all in shock. True Yan muttered to himself, "Luo Feng frequently demonstrates to me when he asks for guidance, I always felt that he could barely pass the 12th level. However from the looks of it...it wasn't even taxing for him, could he really just pass the 13th? It's not that possible, this is truly quite impossible."

"Impossible."

"How could it be."

The group of undyings all couldn't believe that Luo Feng would be able to pass the 13th level, however no one dared to make a guaranteed bet anymore. Luo Feng had just consecutively passed from the 8th to the 12th level, 5 levels in a row. This level of steadiness, clashing a few times before killing his opponents.

This level of steady self confidence had influenced them, it made them all unsure...of whether he could pass the 13th level.

Theoretically they all felt it was impossible!

...

Every three levels was a barrier, 1-3, 4-6, 7-9, 10-12...

It was obvious that the 12th to the 13th would be a huge difficulty jump, and it was very hard to breakthrough. As for Luo Feng's attempt this time...many undyings had initially thought that he wouldn't even pass the 10th level, yet now he had even passed the 12th.

One had to know that the strongest and most exceptional of the 10 seniors in the primal region domain lords had just passed the 11th, and these seniors had all been training for tens of thousands of years. But, how long had Luo Feng trained for?

It was absurd!

Passing the 12th level alone was crazy, would he really think of being able to pass the barrier, pass the 13th?

The heavenly bridge stretched from the planet all the way to space and into a star.

Luo feng swiftly flew to the surface of the star.

"Pick your opponent, fighter, controller, hypnotist, pick any one and if you defeat him, you will pass the 13th level." A deep voice rumbled from the star.

"Controller." Luo Feng held his breath.

When it came to the 13th level, he didn't have much of a guarantee.

Completely comprehending the 108 wonders of the space laws was only sufficient to pass the 12th level, and right now he had comprehended 102 of the wonders. In terms of the space laws, he only had the capability to pass the 11th. Relying on his 1,600 spirit energy amplitude, only then could he defeat the 12th level.

And the opponent of this 13th level...his power was heavenly.

Could he still win?

"I'll do my best and give it a shot. Let's see if my hard labour for

the past 90 years in primal chaos city bore fruit." Luo Feng stared ahead.

Rumble!

The surface flames of the star suddenly shot out a fireball. This fireball floated and gathered on the surface of the star, becoming a red armored masked man. He had fiery red hair and carried a dark golden long rod and stood on the dark cloud shuttle.

His gold eyes stared at Luo Feng.

"To reach the 13th level at domain lord level, it’s been too long since this happened." The flame armored man looked at Luo Feng as his powerful voice resounded.

"Then let me break the record." Luo Feng smiled.

"The 13th level is much harder than the 12th. Little punk...let’s hope you can take it." The man smiled, "I believe you’ve guessed it, I use the Nan Shen Armament’s 9th and final level...A match against undying."

Luo Feng squinted.

He actually...this punk could actually unleash the last level.

Nan Shen Armament, also known as the Heavenly armament, the

full name was 9 levels heavenly armament, which had 9 levels in total. From the 1st level's Illusion blade rising to the final and strongest 9th level A Match against undying. Even many sector lord pinnacle warriors couldn't reach this level. In fact, many undyings couldn't even use this.

"Let's begin." Luo Feng held his breath, "I have to give it my all. Whether I lose or win, it'll depend on luck."

"Very good, you seem to have fighting spirit. "The flame armored man laughed.

Rumble!

The flame armored man's dark golden long rod immediately exploded open, and countless little golden blades spread throughout the sky. From there, a peculiar fusion began to occur, it was completely different from the 9th level's combination. It was the final and strongest combination of the Nan Shen Armament!

In an instant!

A completely golden 3.3m blade that seemed normal floated there in space. It seemed like it was there and yet not, almost like it could vanish into space.

Nan Shen Armament's 9th level...A Match against undying!

This was actually called that because if a sector lord pinnacle could use this, it could instantly pass through space like teleportation and vanish, suddenly appearing at any spot and instantly killing the opponent.

The weapon could pass through space and time to appear anywhere. Naturally, it was much simpler than one teleporting himself, hence when one's space comprehension reached the 13th level of the heavenly bridge, along with their gold laws at the extreme, they could barely begin to unleash this move.

Even at the basic level of strength, this move as still called A Match against undying!

That was because, If a sector lord pinnacle could use this move, its powerful force along with its instantaneous ability to attack... even a normal undying would have to be on guard against it and not let it accelerate against him. The moment he got careless and let the sector lord chase up to him with the blade appearing instantly...

Chi, even an undying would be heavily injured, if he wasn't killed. And this would make it so that they would be unable to use their fastest speed to chase the sector lord.

Hence, this move was called A Match against undying.

...

The flame armored man’s dark golden long rod exploded behind him, becoming the perfect form of the Nan Shen Armament, a 3.3 m long golden blade.

Luo Feng was going all out.

Rumble. The golden long rod on his back immediately shot out countless gold lights and became 108 little blades before swiftly forming the 2.8m long golden broadsword. It was the 8th form Space slicing gold blade. Afterall, he couldn’t unleash the 9th level yet.

"The maximum power of the 8th level can still beat the 9th." Luo Feng howled within.

Rumble!

The golden horned beast in his internal world raised its head and howled, using its natural ability strengthen.

Rumble!

His spirit energy amplitude rose instantly from 1,600 to over 3,200, reaching its limit!

"I spent 90 years in primal chaos city studying the beast god statue hard, also studying the laws and resonating between the two of them. These 90 years add up to over 900 years in the actual universe. After such a long period of training, I can control a bit of

the powerful beast god presence. Even though I still don’t know how to fuse the laws, after trillions of times imitating it, I can still use some of it." Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed with madness.

"Kill!"

His maximum spirit energy unleashed as he controlled the blade.

Searching for that thread of terrifying beast god presence, the 2.8 m broadsword instantly tore through the air. The noiseless and somewhat traceless perfect form of the Nan Shen armament, the 3.3m gold blade instantly flew through the air and the two blades finally clashed for the 1st time.

Neither was prepared to give an inch!

Rumble!

Chapter 734: Huge Shocks

The two blades clashed!

The space around the flames of the star instantly exploded apart, revealing a visible black hole. Many spatial tears appeared throughout with shards of space floating about. The black hole broke open as swiftly as it sealed itself back up.

The broadsword floated in mid air, it was knocked back a few thousand km before once again tearing through space and rushing towards the 3.3m long Nan Shen gold blade.

That blade was knocked back over 10,000 km before it flashed forward again.

"I have the advantage." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed at the situation.

Actually, the opponent had unleashed the Nan Shen's perfect form...using 10,081 little gold blades to form the perfect 3.3.m Nan Shen blade. However, he didn't unleash the legendary teleportation ability, and if his opponent was sector lord pinnacle, using the world energy of a sector lord pinnacle...he could trigger the perfect Nan Shen blade and travel through space, disappearing occasionally, and was also extremely hard to follow and predict.

However, the opponent was only a domain lord level 9, hence he was unable to unleash its full potential!

The theory was simple.

Basic foundation strength was important, if there was a star traveller monster that could unleash the 9th level of the Nan Shen armament, he could at most form it, but with a star traveller's spirit energy, they could only make it fly at a pitiful speed. It could never compare to a sector lord's speed.

The opponent was disadvantaged, but so was Luo Feng.

The body he used in the virtual universe network was that of a basic domain lord level 9 with a domain lord level 9 spirit energy, and that compared to a sector lord pinnacle was a difference of 1,000 times! If Luo Feng reached the sector lord pinnacle, using the terrifying beast god presence in his blade...its power would be absurd!

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

In the space above the star, the broadsword and the Nan Shen gold blade clashed over and over.

The gold blade was vicious and piercing, almost like a silent assassin, as it unpredictably flashed about. However, the moment it got an opportunity, it would strike!

The broadsword was brutal and powerful, like a true tyrant. It was infused with a powerful sense of the beast god, almost like a force that rushed forward without any obstruction in space. Of

course, in terms of control of the weapon, it seemed simple and brute like, but it had the sense of an unpolished gem.

The two blades clashed, the assassin against the brute.

It was very clear…

The brute was taking the advantage.

"This is the true Space slicing gold blade! It's infused with brutality and will power, slashing through space itself!" Luo Feng was completely immersed in his control of the beast god presence. The broadsword flashed through the space and left behind slits and tears. Everytime they clashed it left behind huge tears in the space around it.

Battle!

The broadsword was obviously winning. With each clash, he was getting better and better, forcing the opponent's Nan Shen gold blade to be knocked back and its area getting smaller.

"Go and die!" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed as he determined he could win.

Xiu!

The broadsword became a piercing gold thread and tore through

space, piercing straight at the flame armored man.

The Nan Shen gold blade tried to stop it.

But the broadsword simply dodged it and pierced straight at the man! It was a risky tactic, regardless of the opponent's attack, he would still aim to kill the other.

"No!" The flame armored man retreated quickly on the dark cloud shuttle and controlled the gold blade to pierce at Luo Feng.

It couldn't be helped...

The clashes before had forced the flame armored man into having very little space to move about, hence the broadsword instantly reached him. The Nan Shen gold blade however took quite a while to get to Luo Feng.

With such a gap...

It determined the victor instantly!

Pu Chi! The broadsword flashed past the body of the flame armored man, as countless amounts of blade energy tore his body to shreds and destroyed his life core.

13th level!

Passed!

The 86 undyings standing in the middle of the island of the heavenly bridges all looked up at the broadcast. When Luo Feng finally defeated and passed the 13th level, all of them, including True Yan were completely stunned.

Domain lord passing the 13th level?

How long has it been?

There were definitely such absolute geniuses in history. However, whenever such a person would appear, 99% of them were domain lord geniuses that had trained much longer than Luo feng had. Afterall, to pass the 13th level after a few short hundred years of training was indeed amazing when compared to those that trained for tens of thousands of years and only passed the 11th... and that person was the strongest genius amongst the seniors of the primal region domain lords.

The 11th level compared to the 13th, these were two completely different standards.

Especially since the 12th to the 13th was a barrier, breaking through was extremely hard.

"It’s, it’s only been a few hundred years."

"This Luo Feng..."

"He actually passed the 13th level!"

"From the 8th to the 13th, 6 levels consecutively?"

The group of undyings including Bevin all held their breaths and watched. No one dared to say anything...they were all stunned by the miraculous run of 6 consecutive levels. Against the appearance of this monster, they couldn't say anything at all.

...

Luo Feng stood at the end of the 13th level, looking ahead as the bridge extended into the star itself.

"I barely won the 13th level. My advantage was very slight, I probably don't have much hope for the 14th. Even though there's no guarantee, I still have to try." Luo Feng swiftly flew to the 14th level and continued, quickly reaching the insides of the star...deep into the sea of flames.

Even though it was extremely hot, it was nothing against a domain lord level 9 body.

A domain lord level 9's flying speed was afterall faster than over 10,000 km per second. Even a universe level could fight on a White dwarf star, a domain lord level 9's body was much tougher than that after all.

Chi chi chi...

There were endless flames everywhere.

At the end of the 14th level, Luo Feng stood there and chose controller again as his opponent. The opponent was similarly a flame armored man.

"Passing the 13th level at domain lord level, you have a boundless future." The flame armored man's gold eyes looked at Luo Feng. "If you pick controller, these levels 13 to 15 all use the Nan Shen Armament's 9th level. Although they will all use the same move... the power however is very different, if you didn't have anything in reserve before, then you probably have no chance of victory."

Luo Feng smiled as he listened.

A match against Undying, it was the final and most perfect move of the Nan Shen Armament.

Just like how blade world was used in levels 7-9.

A match against undying was being used from levels 13-15, this was within his expectations.

Rumble!

Both unleashed their Nan Shen Armament simultaneously.

They clashed instantly!

Chi!

The Nan Shen gold blade brushed past Luo Feng’s broadsword, shaking slightly, fast as lightning, unpredictable as it instantly pierced through Luo Feng’s body, tearing him apart.

Brush, shake and pierce.

Luo Feng didn’t even have a fighting chance, he simply lost.

"From the Nan Shen 36 levels, A match against undying is also separated by its power levels." Luo Feng thought before being kicked out of the heavenly bridge.

Luo Feng had lost!

This attempt at the bridge had officially ended, he finally lost at the 14th level.

The 86 undyings in the center island, including the watchman Bevin all watched as he finally lost at the 14th level. Many of them who had held their breaths nervously finally let out a sigh of relief.

"He finally lost."

"He, can lose too."

Many undyings within the group all laughed, even beginning their discussions.

However what followed was a rush of shock over all of them, they were actually pressured by this monster's performance. They couldn't be blamed...his performance was simply too terrifying, just how many levels were there on bridge?

Reaching the 18th level was already the emperor undying level.

Reaching the 15th was the official level undying level.

Reaching the 10th was the most normal undying level.

Of course, law comprehension level didn't represent that a sector lord was weaker than an undying. Many sector lords would immediately become official level the moment they broke through, even emperor level.

Luo Feng had passed up to the 13th level. If a sector lord that had trained for hundreds of thousands of years had passed the 13th level, it wouldn't even be shocking. However, this domain lord that had trained for a few hundred years...this was simply beyond anyone's expectations.

"True Yan, congratulations."

"Haha, you have a good disciple."

"Congratulations."

The group of undyings all laughed.

"Hahaha..." True Yan was extremely happy too, he thought within, "This kid sure knows how to hide. He probably had a few special encounters, he normally displays to only me, his true law comprehension levels. And when he attempted the bridge earlier... he should have used some extra strengthening abilities. Sick, in a few hundred years, he's passed the 13th level. Back when he first came to primal chaos city, he didn't even pass the 1st level."

"Jade." True Yan looked at her, "You have to be careful, there will be many knights after my disciple."

Jade glanced at him.

Shua.

She vanished, obviously rushing to report to 9 blade knight. She was also very clear...that the appearance of such a monster would immediately arouse all the superpowers.

Following her, many other undyings swiftly left too to report to

their superiors, True Yan simply laughed loudly and left. Only watchman Bevin was left on the island, he took a deep breath, "This Luo Feng's performance was simply too, too..."

Watchman Bevin secretly sent out a bunch of mails, this monster that probably only appears only once every trillion eras, he didn't dare not to report him.

...

"What did you say?" 9 blade knight sat high up in his throne, he stood up fiercely and gazed down at Jade emperor.

"Luo Feng passed 6 levels consecutively, he's passed the 13th level of the heavenly bridge." Jade said respectfully.

...

"Sir knight, I'm cutting to the chase, Luo Feng has indeed passed the 13th level. I know that the primal region domain lord 10 seniors, even the strongest one has only passed the 11th...you can watch the footage here."

...

"A few hundred years and he's already surpassed the other geniuses that have trained for tens of thousands of years, and is even stronger by a hundred times? Is he another absolute genius like Ke Di?"

…

The group of undyings along with Bevin’s report had resulted in almost all the upper echelon of the Virtual Universe Company hearing the news of Luo Feng’s heavenly bridge attempt almost immediately.

Chapter 735: Storm

Such a miraculous occurrence, it spread like wildfire. The group of undyings couldn't help but share it with their friends...hence, within a short half an hour, the news of the punk that had only trained for a few hundred years passing the 13th level had already spread throughout...

And the main lead Luo Feng however wasn't in the least bit excited.

"I won't go study the 9 universe tablet yet." He suddenly stopped as he headed towards the city leader's residence. Frowning, "I had some revelation earlier when I passed the 6 levels, I'll first head back to reflect on it before heading out to study the 9 universe tablet."

After which he turned and headed back to this training quarters.

Every level he fought, he had exchanged tens of rounds with his opponents. Hence, he had clearly seen their skill and they way they handled their Nan Shen Armament. All of them had different styles from him, hence it triggered quite a bit of inspiration in him.

...

On the quiet balcony of his training quarters, Luo Feng jumped up and sat crossed legged there, and began to reflect on the many battles. This was very important to him, hence he immediately closed his virtual universe connection to prevent any disruptions.

Hu...hu...

The flow of the primal chaos energies, Luo Feng pondered calmly.

He didn’t know that he had created a huge commotion throughout.

Virtual universe, Thunder island, 9 blade knight’s palace.

9 Blade knight stood there and frowned, he was dressed in his green armor with purple scales on his head.

"Knight, this Luo Feng is too terrifying. Many absolute geniuses start off strong but slow down towards the back. His improvement however simply gets more shocking...he’s only lived for a few hundred years, yet he’s already passed the 13th level. He is definitely a rare genius of 10 million eras. The other knights and universe country leaders will definitely want to accept him as their student. When that happens, he may become someone else’s underling, you cannot hesitate anymore." Jade stood nervously beside.

9 blade knight gently held out his hand in mid air.

Jade emperor immediately held back whatever else she wanted to say, keeping silent.

"I understand." 9 blade nodded.

"However..." Jade said nervously.

Jade was 9 blade knight's number 1 emperor level undying. Hence they were very close, and the two of them often discussed problems together. Even though it was 9 blade that gave the orders...jade was usually the one that organized and led his armies, along with other duties etc.

9 blade shook his head and smiled, "How can I not be clear about it, that Bolan and him have trained for about the same amount of time. However, he only just passed the 8th level...and yet he's already considered exceptional amongst the universe levels. This Luo Feng however has already passed the 13th level, he is thousands to tens of thousands of times stronger than Bolan. Bolan is a rare genius of 10,000 eras, yet, this Luo Feng naturally is one of one in 10 million eras."

"But look, which of these geniuses of the 10 million eras have never aroused the many powerful people to want them. I'm clear on this, Luo Feng must be clear too." 9 blade shook his head, "Otherwise, he wouldn't have ignored the mail I personally sent to him."

"Knight, you've already sent the mail?" Jade was shocked.

She didn't expect his action to be that fast.

"He didn’t reply, how can he dare not to reply?" Jade was shocked.

"He naturally wouldn’t dare not to reply me. However, he’s closed his connection to the virtual universe network." 9 blade knight shook his head. "Since he’s done that...he naturally cannot receive anything, hence I cannot blame him."

Jade was shocked.

Clever punk.

This Luo Feng sure was cunning, he had probably already expected many powerful people to invite him, or have the intention of accepting him as their disciple, and as he was low in position himself, he wouldn’t dare reject anyone. Hence he purposely shut off his connections, this would naturally leave him innocent.

Reopening it after awhile after amassing large amounts of mail, he would then be able to pick from the lot.

"Cunning." Jade said softly.

"Such a genius, it’s natural he has such smarts about him." 9 blade knight shook his head and smiled. "Relax, I am after all the knight above him and am either directly or indirectly responsible for him. The 1st mail he should receive should still be mine."

After Luo Feng passed the 13th level of the heavenly bridge, a huge storm was caused. It didn’t only affect the upper echelons of the Virtual Universe Company, it also reached the other races.

...

In a starfield in desolate universe country, there was a slit in space which held a god country within.

This majestic god country was where the bug clan organization lay in hiding.

Within the god country, there was a mountain range that was over 1 million km high. It was the tallest mountain there, and at its peak...there was a shrine that was over 100,000 km tall. It glowed in a dazzling gold light, shining over the land, and silhouettes could be seen within the shrine.

Humans, intrepid bug soldiers, they worked harmoniously within.

"Master, master."

Within the highest level of the shrine, a gold robed silhouette flashed and appeared within the vast palace, shouting anxiously, "I have important matters to report, important matters."

Howl...howl...Over 10,000 gold bug soldiers (Undying bug soldiers) scattered within the palace immediately raged as they

noticed the gold robed man rushing straight in, they let out warning signals to him. Almost like they were saying if he showed anymore disrespect, they would attack him.

"Why the rush, what's there to report." A gentle voice resounded within the hall, a voice that calmed one's entire body.

The gold robed man looked respectfully at the large amount of undying soldiers protecting a 10km tall mother nest. "I just got news that the human genius Luo Feng, no. 3, has just attempted the heavenly bridge today. He's only lived for a few hundred years and yet now he's already passed the 13th level!"

"13th level?"

Her gentle voice had some suspicion within, "Passing the 10th is a normal undying's level. This means that no.3's law comprehension is already akin or even better than a general already."

"Yes master." The man replied respectfully but urgently. "And to reach such a level in a few short years, compared to the most exceptional Bolan that came from the same batch of the genius competition, he only just passed the 8th level, he cannot compare to Luo Feng at all. That Bolan is already considered a rare genius of the past 10,000 eras, but, this Luo Feng is worthy of being one of the past 10million eras."

10 million eras, that was 100 billion years.

Even though the universe had been around for a long time, 10 million eras was still considered a long period of time. Any genius capable of taking that title, such as Ke Di and Shi Huo knight, even though many had fallen during their time, whoever that didn't... would have shocking achievements!

The absolute genius of 10 million eras that didn't die, the weakest would also be an emperor pinnacle level.

"Rare genius of 10 million eras, comparable to Ke Di?" The gentle voice resounded.

"Yes." The gold robed man said.

"When we got rid of Ke Di's threat back then, our bug clan had spent quite a bit of energy and resources to cause his teacher, the primal chaos city leader to be unable to warp time and space and revive him." The gentle voice resounded. "Raise Luo Feng's position to no.1. I will report this to the race...our organization already doesn't have enough resources to deal with him, you can go."

"Yes."

The gold robed man left respectfully.

The universe was infinitely vast, humanity, bug clan, automaton race etc, all these together still only took up but a small portion of the universe. In the distant regions, there were other incredibly

powerful races. Of which, there was a god country hidden in a slit of space there.

This was a god country continent filled with black energy flow.

Within the majestic black shrine.

"Master."

A silhouette covered in black smog knelt respectfully, and within the chilly hall there sat a over 3km tall silhouette formed from countless black rocks. The surface of the rocks burned with red flames, his nose occasionally shot out black flames.

His two horns seemed to be made from a translucent ceramic glaze.

He looked down at the tiny black silhouette.

"Hm?" The majestic silhouette shot out black flames from his nostrils.

"Master, we just got word that the Hong Alliance humanity just produced an absolute genius, he’s called Luo Feng. He’s only trained for a few hundred years and yet he’s already passed the heavenly bridge’s 13th level." The little silhouette said respectfully. "He is definitely a rare genius of 10 million eras, however he is currently living in the sacred land of humanity primal chaos city, with their leader guarding there. Hence, our race has no way to

infiltrate."

The majestic silhouette gazed down at the silhouette below. Wherever the primal chaos city leader guards, there's no hope. We'll wait, when he becomes sector lord, he will definitely head out to the outer region wars...there'll naturally be a chance to get rid of him!"

Countless crystal metals floated about the majestic god country. The entire diameter of the place was about 3 million km, and was completely formed from a peculiar crystal.

In the core of the area.

A man sat in a jade green throne. He seemed like a perfect crystal carving which had the appearance of a human, and on his forehead he had one gold eye. The formless ripples revolved about his eye as it spread over the diameter of 300km area.

"Ah?"

"The distant Hong alliance human race has actually produced a rare genius of 10 million eras..."

"Looks like the bug clan, the demons and the automaton race will all try and find ways to kill him. Sending out knights to do the job will have a guarantee of killing Luo Feng. However, the price would be that of them sacrificing their knights to the powerful warriors of humanity. Using a knight in place for Luo Feng? No

race would do that. However if it’s just an undying...trying to assassinate him would be troublesome."

"Interesting, interesting."

"The 4 pinnacle races have territories close to each other, the more they fight the better." The man said to himself softly, after which he closed his 3 eyes.

...

The news of humanity producing an absolute genius had, within one day, spread throughout the universe to countless races.

Chapter 736: Thirst for Talents

Primal chaos city, amongst the countless living quarters, on a particular balcony.

Luo Feng opened his eyes while sitting crossed legged, revealing a smile on his face, "The reflections have given me good benefits."

"Babata." Luo Feng shouted within.

"Here!" Babata said passionately. As Babata had only recognized Luo Feng as his true master only after he hit domain lord level, he was now extremely swift and passionate in all his orders now.

"Open connection to virtual universe network." Luo Feng smiled, "There should be mail from quite a number of powerful people."

"Understood." Babata was very happy.

He immediately opened the network and a flood of mail entered.

"A total of 392 mail and 13 call requests." Babata said.

"So many?" Luo Feng was shocked as he smiled.

When he decided to attempt the bridge earlier he had guessed that passing the 12th and 13th level would create a storm. Afterall, the strongest of the primal region domain lords that have trained

for tens of thousands of years had only reached level 11...

He immediately sent a thread of consciousness into the virtual universe.

...

Virtual universe Yu Xiang mountain primal region, Luo Feng sat at his desk and opened the screen.

On it were many mails and some call requests.

"The main bulk of it is from knights, a total of 322 knights." The others are some powerful undyings, also Wuka and Rong Jun have sent mails. The call requests include those two, ah, and your teacher True Yan's call request is here as well." Babata stood on his shoulder and said.

Shua shua shua...

Luo Feng swiftly read through the mails, his viewing speed was shocking as he finished them quickly.

"The knights don't care about a rare genius of 10,000 eras."

"As for an absolute monster of 10 million eras however, this has aroused them." Luo Feng smiled. He could clearly feel their sincerity as they spoke affectionately to him via the mails, saying

how they were willing to accept him as their disciple.

Of course everything was still up to Luo feng’s decision, and these knights didn’t bother to force him at all.

"I’ll first pay a visit to my teacher." Luo Feng said.

Primal chaos city.

Luo Feng jumped down from his balcony and became a blur, swiftly heading to the not too distant True Yan Emperor’s residence.

"Teacher." Luo Feng walked into the yard and bowed respectfully.

"Sit." True Yan had some peculiar wine beside him, he poured a glass for Luo Feng.

"Yes." Luo Feng sat.

"Haha, you really gave me a shock." True Yan glanced at him, after which he laughed, "I’m sure many knights have sent you mails."

Luo Feng nodded, "Yes teacher."

"Hm, your improvement has been shocking. According to the level and speed, even if you slow down slightly in the future... becoming an emperor pinnacle undying shouldn't be too hard." True Yan smiled. "Afterall, a rare genius of 10 million eras, other than falling mid way, the weakest still become emperor pinnacle, and close to 1/3 of them become knights. After discovering your shocking improvement, they will definitely fight to accept you... after all, the student teacher relationship is the most sturdy."

Luo Feng nodded his head heavily.

The strong warriors all had incredibly long life spans, hence their relatives would all die off. Their next closest person would naturally be their teacher.

Respecting their teachers, this was something very important amongst humanity. Even if one of them exceeded his teacher in strength, he still would have to respect him. Because...the teacher was the one who guided and sped up your training, and a true teacher would have helped you time and again, this debt was huge. Naturally respect was a given. Whoever disrespected his teacher would be held with disdain by all the warriors.

This was also why the knights all wanted to accept Luo Feng as their disciple.

As long as he didn't die halfway.

He would at least reach the emperor level pinnacle, and would become someone who is completely able to become their right or

left arms! And the moment he became a knight...with a knight disciple, whether it was the wars or exploring the universe secret regions, outer region battles etc, with the student and teacher working together there was a higher guarantee of success. Others may backstab or kill others etc, however these sort of things hardly ever happen between student and teacher.

Whoever dared to kill their teacher, if it was discovered, they would be made a public enemy!

"Have you decided?" True Yan looked at him, "Then, who will you choose be your teacher."

"I..." Luo Feng was hesitating.

"Don’t hesitate, which warrior doesn’t have a group of teachers." True Yan laughed loudly. "Back then, I too climbed from a weak warrior to having a group of teachers. A teacher’s capability is afterall limited. For the sake of humanity’s growth, there’s naturally no limit to one person having only one teacher, it would only waste your talents."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

"There are many knights, however I don’t know which to choose." Luo Feng said.

Within, he was thinking of getting Tian Shi palace’s leader.

It couldn’t be helped.

Tian Shi palace’s leader never sent out any mail. As for the other over 300 knights, Luo Feng mostly didn’t even recognize them, he didn’t know who was strong or weak. The mail they all sent only briefly explained their abilities, however Luo Feng naturally understood the theory of overselling one self, and that not everything they said could be believed.

"Let me recommend you one." True Yan smiled.

"Hm?" Luo Feng was stunned.

"Primal chaos city leader!" True Yan emphasized.

"Ah." Luo Feng was shocked.

Primal chaos city leader?

The super being that guarded the sacred land of humanity itself? With the trillions of other races eyeing this sacred land constantly, the importance of this location could only be imagined. However after so long, no other race has ever dared come invade this primal chaos city, one could only imagine how powerful this being was.

"However teacher, he didn’t send me any mail." Luo Feng said. "Am I to personally go promote myself?"

"No." True Yan shook his head, "Even though he hasn't sent a mail, he sent someone to tell me...that he's willing to take you as a disciple in name."

"Disciple in name?" Luo Feng was stunned.

"Haha...The city leader's position and status is extremely high up. Even though your performance was not bad, you still haven't earned the right to become his true disciple." True Yan laughed loudly. "His disciples are all normally made up of knights. Of course...that Ke Di was his disciple too. But compared to Ke Di, you are still somewhat weaker."

Luo Feng nodded his head and accepted it.

Ke Di had passed the primal region Sky mountain at universe, domain lord and sector lord level.

At sector lord he was akin to an emperor level undying, who was even able to kill official level undyings. It was said that his law comprehension at sector lord level was capable of passing the 20th level...otherwise he wouldn't have been able to use his sector lord body to kill an official level undying.

Such an absolute genius, only he was accepted as a disciple.

"The city leader has also left a primal chaos tablet, do you know which one?" True Yan smiled at Luo Feng.

"52 tablets..." Luo Feng was shocked, in his mind the names of each tablet appeared.

"The universe Tablet." True Yan said.

"The 2nd ranked tablet?" Luo Feng took a deep breath.

52 primal chaos tablets, the huge axe tablet was number 1 and the universe tablet was number 2.

The huge axe tablet was left behind by the creator of the Huge Axe Dojo, and the universe tablet was left by the primal chaos city leader. From this, it could be seen that this city leader should be among the top 3 pinnacle beings of the entire humanity. He guarded primal chaos city for countless eras, making countless other races not dare to enter.

An absolute pinnacle being.

"Even though the other knights will take you as their disciple and the city leader is only taking you in name, however even in name... if you perform exceptionally in the future, you will rise to become his disciple." True Yan smiled. "With him as your teacher, no one in humanity will dare mess with you. Incidents like Yan Zhu emperor messing with you will never happen again. Of course...the warriors of the other races will not care about him."

Luo Feng nodded.

The other races...

Right.

Humanity was but one race, the other races and its warriors, and their great beings akin to the Huge Axe Dojo's founder, they existed. Even the Yan Shen race was left behind by a great being. The demon note inheritance, the ice mountain inheritance...they were probably left by other races too.

The universe was vast with many powerful beings, it was indeed important to always be humble.

"I've decided, "Luo Feng nodded, "I will take the primal chaos city leader as my teacher."

"Haha." True Yan nodded satisfied. "However, go see 9 blade knight first and tell him of your decision. He is afterall the knight in charge of you. Once he knows you are taking the primal chaos city leader as your teacher, he wouldn't dare say anything either. He is afterall one of the top people in the Virtual Universe Company."

"Top person in the Virtual Universe Company?" Luo Feng couldn't take it anymore. He really wanted to see this being personally, who was a true pinnacle being.

Compared to the Huge Axe Dojo founder, he couldn't be too far off.

Otherwise, how could he guard over the sacred land of humanity and stop all other races from invasion?

...

Luo Feng couldn’t wait anymore, he quickly first connected to the virtual universe and headed to 9 blade knight’s special space, respectfully visiting him.

9 blade knight was a lot more courteous to Luo Feng this time. Of course...once he knew the city leader was taking him as a disciple in name, 9 blade knight was helpless to stop it.

He was after all...the primal chaos city leader!

Even as a disciple in name, Luo Feng’s position was still much higher than any other knights’ disciples!

"Haha, you seem impatient." 9 blade knight said in the throne above. He gazed down and smiled, "Since the city leader has given the order, then hurry and head over. Remember, there should never be any disrespect before him. His has been the guardian of humanity’s sacred land for countless ages, his contribution to humanity is immeasurable."

"Yes, knight." Luo Feng bowed respectfully.

After which he vanished.

At the same time...

Luo Feng walked out of his teacher True Yan’s residence and followed the vast walkways to the city leader’s residence, from afar, he could already see the majestic palace.

"Primal chaos city leader." Luo Feng muttered to himself softly.

Chapter 737: Primal Chaos City Leader

The main entrance of the city leader’s residence was left open with people frequently heading in and out.

Luo Feng followed his usual path in. In the past, he had always been heading towards the 9 universe tablet, this time however, he was heading to visit the city leader.

"The city leader’s inner mansion!" Luo Feng took a deep breath and walked towards the highly guarded area.

The outer areas were all lax and free.

The inner areas however had guards all over. With just a glance, one could see that all of them were undyings.

"Clang!" Two guards simultaneously banged their pikes and stopped Luo Feng, looking coldly at him.

"I am Luo Feng, I’m here to visit the city leader." Luo Feng said respectfully.

"The city leader isn’t a person you can visit as you will." One of the guards engulfed in lightning looked coldly at him. "Without his order, even a knight won’t be able to see him." For him to actually become a guard of the primal chaos city leader, it was something very honorable. This was the primal chaos city leader, the no.1 being in the Virtual Universe Company, a true authority.

The undyings would all fight simply to guard the place, even though they were just guards, their authority allowed them to disregard even knights.

As they represented the primal chaos city leader.

"Please check." Luo Feng smiled, "I did indeed receive his order to come here."

"Ah?"

The surrounding group of undyings all looked at Luo Feng.

Right.

Without the city leader’s order, why would this little punk dare come here in the first place.

"Please wait, I’ll go check." The guard covered in lightning no longer had a cold expression, he smiled passionately.

"You are Luo Feng?" After awhile, the guard looked shocked at him.

Luo Feng nodded and smiled.

"Go in, Gui Yi knight is waiting for you within." The guard said and withdrew his blockade, allowing Luo Feng to enter.

Luo Feng smiled and entered the mansion, as the group of undying guards about all began to discuss amongst themselves. It was extremely rare, even within the past hundred million years, for a domain lord or sector lord to be able to enter the city leader's residence, this was his living quarters.

Within.

He followed the spacious walkways and quickly reached a primal stone plaza. He glanced into the distance, spotting a fiery red robed bald man. He was smiling indifferently, he seemed calm. Just from looking at this man...Luo Feng couldn't help but calm down, feeling as though he had melded into the spacious and calm space.

Everything about him seemed to vanish, leaving only that bald man.

"Hm?" Luo Feng was stunned as he awoke.

"What a terrifying being, Tian Shi palace, Undying knight, Shi Huo knight, 9 blade knight...I feel like these knights are all incredibly powerful. And even though the emperor level undyings are strong, I can still faintly determine their strength. As for this man before me...I cannot tell at all, he should be a knight." Luo Feng instantly confirmed. "He should be the Gui Yi knight the knights mentioned."

Luo Feng walked towards the red robed bald man.

"I am Gui Yi knight, I’m here to receive you on my teacher’s orders." He smiled. The energy he emitted had an immediate influence on Luo Feng’s soul.

"Luo Feng greets Gui Yi knight." Luo Feng bowed respectfully.

"Follow me." Gui Yi knight said.

"Yes." Luo Feng said respectfully and followed.

The knight led Luo Feng through the mansion, smiling as he turned towards him, "Teacher is willing to take you as his disciple in name, and from what I see, it seems that you’ve agreed?"

"Yes." Luo Feng nodded.

"Hm, since you’ve become his disciple in name, you don’t have to call me Gui Yi knight anymore. Just call me 2nd senior instead." Gui Yi knight smiled. "I went under him very early, hence I became the 2nd senior. He has other disciples under him with many of them stronger than even me. However he favors me, hence I get to stay close to him."

Luo Feng said, "Greetings 2nd senior."

"Hm." Gui Yi knight smiled and talked as they walked. "Teacher

has 3 great bodies, the one in primal chaos city is here to kill and punish. Hence, you have to be extremely respectful, you cannot offend him."

"Yes." Luo Feng was shocked as he replied.

My god.

That primal chaos city leader actually has 3 bodies, and the one left in the city was for killing and punishment? Just one body of his was enough to guard the entire primal chaos city? If that was so, the strength he had in total was unimaginable.

Actually, the city leader having 3 bodies was not a secret at all. The strong were still the strong, hence he was respected. He had massacred...and killed countless other warriors from other races. His 3 bodies are well known throughout the trillions of races in the universe, every one of them having unbelievable power.

"Primal chaos ruins?" Luo Feng looked into a quiet yard ahead. There was a stone tablet there with three words on it.

"Teacher is within." Gui Yi knight said and brought Luo Feng in.

Luo Feng stepped through.

Rumble...

Time and space warped. Initially, they were in the city leader's residence, however the moment he took a step into the yard, he felt the stars and everything warp, he had entered into a boundless world.

Endless ground before them, with bodies all about. Some were as big as planets, some smaller than humans, however they all emanated terrifying energies. This...was probably the ruins of a terrifying pinnacle battle.

Luo feng and Gui Yi knight walked through the endless ruins.

"Teacher." Gui Yi knight suddenly shouted.

"Hm?" Luo Feng was shocked to discover a 3 meter tall and sturdy man in the distance. He wore an incredibly complex ancient dark red armor with boots on, and a snake tail extending out of his armor behind.

As Luo Feng's gaze landed on him, he felt his soul shudder within. He had only spotted a silhouette initially, yet now he was looking at endless universe laws...the vast universe laws, and the killing intent emanating from him. It made Luo Feng's soul completely submit.

No sense of resistance.

"Luo Feng?" A very normal voice resounded. The illusion before was completely shattered as Luo Feng once again saw the man

standing before them.

This red armored man with a snake tail turned to look at him, there were two red horns on his forehead with peculiar engravings on them. It seemed evil and terrifying, however his eyes were calm like the vast ocean, like the endless space, it made one calm down from within.

"Luo Feng greets Lord city leader." Luo Feng knelt down.

"Terrifying, too terrifying." Luo Feng shuddered within. "That 1st glance, I thought I was staring at the universe laws themselves. Right, this is the level of which one becomes the laws! Xi Luo Duo had said so too...the beast god is fused with the laws, every action triggers them. Even the statue of it has the laws within! And the primal chaos city leader, since he's reached this level, naturally he carries the laws within. Just looking at him, it was like looking at the powerful amount of law energies he has."

This was an extreme realm.

One that definitely exceeded the knights, a true pinnacle being of the vast universe.

"Your performance was not bad, your encounters are quite plenty too." He looked at Luo Feng and smiled.

Luo Feng listened respectfully.

Within however, he was panicking, because he felt like the gaze of the city leader could see through him completely. It was almost like there was no secret he could keep from him, "My mosha body is keeping the core with him and he's hiding in the world ring. I've already refined that ring...I'll know if anybody scans it. And if anybody scans my core, I should know that too. Hm, however this city leader's power is unbelievable, it's hard to say. He is afterall the city leader, he wouldn't bother to scan my world ring."

"I've seen the footage of your heavenly bridge attempt, you are almost done with the 108 wonders of the space." The city leader smiled. "And it's been less than 90 years this time in primal chaos city. To almost finish the 108 wonders within this time frame is not bad."

Luo Feng listened obediently.

"You passing the 13th level, it should be from the beast god presence you got from the gold horn race's beast god canyon right." The city leader said.

"Yes." Luo Feng said.

Within however he shuddered.

Terrifying, even though the city leader's guess was somewhat off, it wasn't completely wrong. As Luo Feng had copied the huge sleeping beast god statue trillions of times in the beast god canyon, that was how he got some bit of the presence. The little beast god statue he got couldn't be copied at all. The moment he copied a

little too much of it, the universe would punish him, only the statue Xi Luo Duo left behind was possible.

"To be able to comprehend a bit of the presence is not bad already." The city leader said, "Are you willing to be my disciple in name."

"I'm willing." Luo Feng said respectfully.

The city leader nodded his head.

He, one that stood at the pinnacle of humanity, even though a genius was important, he was very clear that some people may have slow comprehension speeds. Regardless, after constantly break through their boundaries, they too could become knights. Hence unless it was an absolute genius of 10 million eras, he wouldn't care.

Even such a genius, he would still observe for awhile before actually accepting him as a true disciple.

"I know True Yan exchanged the top half of the Nan Shen 7 forms for you." The city leader said. "And since you can actually comprehend a little of the beast god presence, it shows that you have a talent in the fusion of the laws. However...fusion of the laws, is tens of thousands of times harder than simply comprehending one law."

"I'll give you time, 3,000 years." The city leader said.

"If you can finish the 1st form of the Nan Shen 7 forms in 3,000 years here in primal chaos city, I will accept you as my disciple." The city leader said to Luo Feng.

Chapter 738: Completion

"Finish the 1st form of the Nan Shen 7 forms within 3,000 years?" Gui Yi knight who stood beside was shocked within. The Nan Shen 7 forms or Beast god 7 techniques were well known as an extremely valuable manual amongst the pinnacle race humanity's upper echelon. There were two reasons for its reputation. One of them was because the gold horn race's Xi Luo Duo was well known amongst the trillions of races in the universe back then. The second reason was also because of the universe producing such a powerful creature, the Beast god. And because of it, humans back then had sacrificed quite a lot.

The strong were forged.

Xi Luo Duo and the Beast god were like that! And the Nan Shen 7 forms that Xi Luo Duo created was created with the Beast god in mind, naturally this was respected by humanity itself.

When the gold horn race became subservient to humanity, the strongest manual they had was this Nan Shen 7 forms. Naturally, it became humanity's and since then, as they respected Xi Luo Duo and the Beast god, there were many that exchanged for this manual and trained in it.

This training...

Made them discover that the Nan Shen 7 forms were incredibly difficult, it was tens of thousands of times harder than simply training in the space law alone. Especially the 1st level, even some

knights have yet to pass this 1st level. Completing this 1st level proved that one had talent in the fusion of the gold and space laws.

"I remember back then, Lian Luo took 3,000 years to completely comprehend the 108 wonders of space laws." Gui Yi knight was shocked within. "And teacher is only giving Luo Feng 3,000 years to comprehend the Nan Shen 7 forms 1st form, that's tough."

"3,000 years?" Luo Feng was nervous within.

Xi Luo duo had mentioned in the 1st volume that this was just the beginning, it was best to completely comprehend the 108 wonders first before trying this out, and the time spent on this would be hundreds to thousands of times longer than the time spent on the 108 wonders!

These were some words left behind by Xi Luo Duo in the manual, casual hundreds to thousands of times.

"I spent over 100 years comprehending the 108 wonders, then wouldn't the time I need be 10,000 to 100,000 years?" Luo Feng thought. "However, I have the little Beast god statue. Since I'm able to study it and imitate the way it fuses the laws...my efficiency will be much higher. If I work hard, I'll definitely be able to finish the Scale section within 3000 years."

...

"I will definitely do my best." Luo Feng stood before this body of

the city leader, not daring to show any disrespect.

He nodded.

After which walked into the distance, Gui Yi knight and Luo Feng followed.

"Your 9th senior is here." He said.

"Hm?"

Luo Feng turned around and suddenly amidst a tornado, a 9m tall huge man with 6 arms and 6 eyes walked over. Behind him was a huge gold axe almost as tall as him, it had incomparably complex engravings on it, and powerful energy emanated from it, causing the space around it to tear apart.

He took huge strides over, stepping through some bodies, the space about shook.

"Teacher." The huge man said respectfully as he got closer.

"This is your 9th senior Huge Axe knight." The city leader explained behind Luo Feng.

"9th senior." Luo Feng bowed.

"Your 9th senior Huge Axe knight has trained in the Nan Shen 7 forms before." The city leader revealed a smile. "From today on, within these 3,000 years, I allow you to go visit him for guidance once every decade, whatever questions you have, you can ask him."

Luo Feng was happy.

Even though it was said that no one had comprehended the secret of the sleeping Beast god statue in the gold horn race's beast god canyon, Luo feng had long guessed that there would be some warriors that had seen through it, but had not publicly announced anything. The strong were numerous as the clouds, they even had this manual, there would definitely be many that have tried it.

"Yes." Luo Feng said respectfully, after which he turned to the Huge Axe knight and said respectfully, "I'll be troubling you for the next 3,000 years 9th senior."

"No trouble at all." He laughed and said.

What a joke, the city leader ordered it, would he dare go against it?

"This Nan Shen 7 forms is too hard. Even though I've trained in it before, I can only roughly guide you." Huge axe knight explained. Even though he had tried training it before, he had only reached the 4th level. His body itself however was very strong, after a trillion years of practicing, he realized the gains didn't make up for the losses.

Right now he had completely given up on it, and was focusing on studying time itself.

He was already accomplished in space. Hence, he was waiting for the moment he reached the same level in time as well.

Time and space as one, he would naturally become a universe master!

Training time and space, this was the great path common amongst the universe's trillion races, 99.9% of knights all walked this path.

...

After the city leader ordered Huge axe knight, he turned to Luo feng, "The way our Virtual Universe Company nurtures its geniuses, is that the higher the talent, the more resources he would receive. Of course, you'll only get these when you reach sector lord level. Since you are under me now, I will naturally give you some resources too."

"Thank you teacher." Luo Feng was glad within.

"I'll give you an extra 20 times to study the 9 universe tablet." The city leader said. "I believe it's what you need the most now, go on, let's hope you'll finish the 1st form within 3,000 years."

"Yes." Luo Feng could barely suppress his joy, bowing

respectfully.

Gui Yi knight and Huge axe knight bowed too.

Hua!

The three of them simultaneously vanished and appeared within the Primal chaos ruins yard.

"Space warp?" Luo Feng realized as he stood in the yard, shocked.

"Luo Feng junior, work hard." Gui Yi knight said as he smiled, after which he vanished too.

"I'll visit you in the virtual universe Yu xiang mountain in 10 years." Huge Axe knight's voice rumbled, after which he vanished too.

"3,000 years?" Luo Feng thought, his eyes gleaming with joy, "And another 20 times to study the tablet, it's wonderful."

20 chances to study the 9 universe tablet. Although it seemed normal, in truth, it's worth was priceless.

That was because even with points, it was impossible to exchange for these chances!

Everytime one passed a level in the heavenly bridge, he would get one chance. After passing the 21st level, one would already be a knight. One would only get about 21 times. Every chance itself was extremely valuable...The main reason Luo Feng came to primal chaos city was mostly also to study this 9 universe tablet.

Out of nowhere, he suddenly got 20 more chances! It was even better than the many manuals he had, surprising him more than acquiring any treasure.

...

After exiting the residence, he headed straight to study the tablet.

He currently had a total of 26 times (he had 6 times left from the heavenly bridge and the city leader gave him another 20), using each time wisely would allow his improvement speed to grow extremely fast.

Time passed.

The news of Luo Feng becoming a disciple in name to the city leader was well known amongst the knights. And the Ganwu universe country leader too made a rare order to look after his family well. With that, the many undying families naturally were incredibly passionate to his family.

The Luo family power immediately soared even more, akin to a powerful undying family within the Ganwu universe country.

...

Luo Feng didn’t care much about this, he was clear this was the most important period of rising for him. The stronger he got and the higher he climbed, then his family would get even stronger... the moment he fell however, his family too would fall rapidly.

...

10 years later.

"Yes 9th senior."

"Understood."

"Ah."

"Hm."

Within his training grounds in the virtual universe Yu Xiang mountain primal region, Huge axe knight was guiding him, answering the questions he had bottled up for 10 years.

And as one of the early disciples of the city leader, with countless years of guidance from the city leader himself, his strength was no weaker than Shi Huo knight. He was maybe even stronger. His guidance...was naturally solid, easily explaining and making Luo

feng smile with delight.

After 3 whole days of guidance.

Huge Axe knight left.

...

Luo Feng continued to sit crossed legged on the balcony, occasionally looking up to the skies, and other times immersed in his thoughts. The golden horned beast and the mosha clan too were training hard.

In a flash, it had been 12 years since he left the city leader's residence after becoming a disciple in name.

"Haha..."

Luo Feng, who sat crossed legged on his balcony suddenly opened his eyes and stood up, he couldn't help but smile excitedly.

"I've finally done it!"

"I've completely comprehended the 108 wonders of space!"

"Lian Luo took 3,000 years!"

"I did it in a little over 100 years." Luo Feng laughed loudly, filled with glee. "I trained with a sector lord body, he did the same. Yet I'm close to 30 times faster than he was. Looks like my speed has exceeded his."

With the separate bodies, Luo feng's speed and talent did exceed Lian Luo's.

However it wasn't as absurd as 30 times more. The main thing was he had the little Beast god statue. To be able to study and feel its presence, it naturally was a huge benefit to his training in the space laws.

"No wonder Lian Luo had said that with the comprehension of these 108 wonders, the 4th and 5th and even the 6th picture would be easier." Luo Feng smiled. "Haha, even though the 4th to the 6th are incredibly complex, in truth, they are a formation of these 108 wonders."

The 108 wonders were like the ingredients.

And all delicacies relied on the most basic ingredients, comprehending the foundation before training the 4th-6th pictures...it was completely unlike the normal warriors with their basic level comprehension.

"The 4th – 6th pictures, I'll at most take a little time with them, they won't be a barrier at all." Luo Feng said confidently.

"Hm."

"However, I'm in no rush to study the 4th picture now...I have to first study the Nan Shen 7 forms...I have to grasp the time." Luo Feng couldn't care less about anything else. He closed his eyes, and in his mind, countless words and training methods etc floated within, this was the Nan Shen 36 forms he had acquired back in the Gold horn race sacred land's Manual tower.

As he read through the Nan Shen 7 forms, he discovered....

The Nan Shen 36 forms was the basic beginners manual to the Nan Shen 7 forms. This was actually said in its detailed introduction back in the Manual tower, that this was Xi Luo Duo's basic manual!

Chapter 739: Domain Lord Qualification Battles

Before, Luo Feng had simply relied on the golden horned beast to grasp the Beast god presence, not trying to comprehend the laws within, but simply imitated it!

At this time, he had truly begun to study the fusion of the laws. Just like how some people were naturally gifted in piano on earth, and some more in the sciences, even though they could achieve anything with effort, the talent was a good stepping stone. And in the difficult path of fusing the laws, one that even many knights weren't able to begin with, and Luo feng had just stepped in...

Was it fast?

Or slow?

It was hard to say before the training began.

Virtual universe, Luo Feng's training grounds.

In the spacious sky above the mountains, Luo feng stood on the Luo Fu Liu board with over 800,000 little blades surrounding him, a blur of blades covered the sky. He used his spirit energy to trigger the blades and through the universe laws, began to unleash his Illusionary blade, Sky piercing blade, Blade domain, Heavenly pillar, Space slicer, Blade world...

Even though these were ordinary blades, with no law engravings on them.

He could still use his moves.

The main advantage of the spirit weapons were that they had fixed law engravings on them. Through some combination work, the moves could be used to trigger them. Simply triggering the law engravings allowed one to use them. But, without the spirit weapons, for Luo Feng to control the blur of blades, and triggering the laws by himself was too tedious.

Using the same move without a spirit weapon, the amount of energy needed alone would be tens to hundreds of times different!

"Space slicing gold blade!"

Countless blades danced in mid air, triggered by the universe laws, they eventually formed one body together. A huge blade with golden energy flow was formed.

Luo Feng’s face was flushed red, he stared hard at the huge blade formed by countless little ones.

"If I used the Nan Shen Armament, I can easily unleash this move, and the power will be much stronger." Luo Feng thought. "However, using hundreds of thousands of normal little blades, and triggering the laws for each one of them to eventually connect them with the laws themselves is very tedious. I can barely form

this huge blade."

One had to know that Luo Feng had already comprehended the 108 wonders of space, and his space law comprehension had already reached the 12th level of the heavenly bridge. The moment he combined that with his 3,200 spirit energy amplitude...he could already unleash the Nan Shen Armament's 9th level, A match against undying.

With the Nan Shen Armament, he could use the 9th level.

Without it, using countless normal blades, even the 8th level was tedious.

...

Through training in the Nan Shen 36 forms, he had naturally learnt how to control ordinary blades with the laws, triggering the laws to control them was a skill used in creating techniques. Spreading one's attacking technique into hundreds of thousands of little blades, and arranging each and every one of them.

Finally reaching a level of satisfaction.

After which, combining them with the laws themselves, and engraving the required laws within, that way, one didn't need to work so hard when unleashing his move, he just simply needed to trigger them.

Of course.

Luo Feng hadn’t reached the level of creating techniques. Training this Nan Shen 36 forms had great benefits for him...it worked well with the Nan Shen 7 forms’ 1st level.

"So it’s that way."

"Beast god presence, the wonder within is like that."

Luo Feng occasionally had smiles and frowns as he sat on his balcony.

When he first began fusing the laws, he discovered that the little Beast god presence that he had grasped had benefits. This was almost like some car mechanics, even though they didn’t know the principles behind the engines, they could still fix them. And when they began to actually study it, it would resonate with their fixing experience, their comprehension would thus speed up.

Luo Feng was that way as well.

He knew how to do it in the past, but he didn’t understand it too well.

Now that he began to study it, they worked together and he would be extremely excited whenever it happened.

"So it’s that way."

"Haha."

...

During the 6th year after he began the Nan Shen 7 forms.

"Teacher." Luo Feng sat beside his teacher.

"How’s the study of the Nan Shen 7 forms, do you have confidence in completing the 1st level within 3,000 years?" True Yan looked at Luo Feng, he knew about his deal with the city leader.

"I’m doing well for now."

Luo Feng smiled, "My first 6 years into it have been smooth, however this Beast god path is extremely profound. Just the 1st Scale portion alone is incredibly complex. According to Xi Luo Duo, it has many barriers within, I don’t know whether I’ll be able to easily break through them."

"Hm." True Yan nodded.

This was a true high level manual, the moment one finished the 6 levels, he would stand at the pinnacle of humanity. Just like the Huge Axe Dojo founder, primal chaos city leader, void gold master

and other few rare existences, he may still be weaker than them but it was still enough to dominate over trillions of races in the universe.

Hence, every level was incredibly difficult.

"Smooth sailing at the start, that's good, it means you fit this path well." True Yan nodded satisfied. There was no way for him to know that the golden horned beast had been imitating the sleeping statue for a long time, studying the little Beast god statue and its special presence which was also infused with the fusion laws, and practicing it with its sky tearing claw over and over.

Amongst Luo Feng's 3 bodies, the earth body and the Mosha body's training in the beast god path was far from the speed of the golden horned beast.

The golden horned beast, the sleeping Beast god statue, the little beast god statue, along with the Nan Shen 7 forms and Nan Shen 36 techniques, these were the ideal combination.

"Hm, a few more days and it'll be the domain lord millennial qualification battles." True Yan laughed, "You must remember to take part."

"I remember." Luo Feng laughed.

Domain lord qualification battles?

The strongest of the 10 seniors had only just passed the 11th level, even if he didn’t use the Beast god presence, just using his space laws and 3,200 spirit energy amplitude, he could already easily pass the 13th level.

"Fighting them is simply bullying them, they are no challenge at all." Luo Feng muttered to himself.

Even though it was obviously bullying, the date of the qualification battles still came.

Virtual universe Yu xiang mountain, primal region.

"The primal region domain lord battles are about to begin, all gather." A thick voice resounded within the entire primal region. All 11 members looked up in the sky, gazing at the silhouette in the air, after which they all rushed up into the skies.

Shua!

11 of them gathered in mid air, looking at the purple clothed man.

He was the organizer of the battles sent by the Virtual Universe Company, and also a powerful undying.

"Luo Feng?"

"That’s Luo Feng?"

"Tuo Ka, that's Luo Feng, his training speed is absurd." The 10 seniors all seemed to gaze at him. Of the 10, only Tuo Ka was currently in Primal chaos city, the other 9 were elsewhere...and as Luo Feng hardly attended classes in the virtual universe.

He mostly attended them personally in primal chaos city, hence the other 9 weren't familiar with him.

"Interesting." Luo Feng could feel their gaze on him. He smiled, "Forget it, it's no fun if I bully them too much. I'll show them some respect when we fighter later. I'll settle them quickly but not too badly."

It was indeed bullying.

Passing the 13th level compared to the 11th...the difference was too huge. It was purely elimination.

Before Luo feng had consecutively passed the 6 levels, the 10 seniors all thought Luo Feng had some capability, but at least they were still stronger than him...some couldn't wait to fight him. However, now that he had passed the 13th level, the group of seniors were all stunned.

Dumbfounded.

Tuo Ka who was in primal chaos city howled within, "I've trained for 30,000 years, but he's only trained for a few hundred years.

How is he so much stronger than me, this is too, unfair."

"Is this another Ke Di?"

"To be in the same generation as a monster, what a tragedy."

The 10 of them couldn't even face him.

Some looked on at him like he was an absolute genius monster. They were very clear about the fact that Luo Feng wasn't on the same level as them at all.

...

The purple clothed man looked at the 11 before him, his gaze landing on Luo Feng. He couldn't help but carefully analyze Luo Feng. He had heard Luo Feng had become the primal chaos city leader's disciple in name, he was filled with envy. His level of undying didn't even have the chance to meet the city leader, he was totally envious.

"Same rules as before." His gaze swept past the 11, expression serious, "Once every millennium, the domain lord qualification battles occur. There are a total of 11 of you this time, everyone will fight against the other 10. In these matches, the victor will get 1 point, the loser will get 0, the final score will rank you all. The top 6 will continue to stay in the primal region...the remaining 5 will compete against the top 5 of the Absolute beginning region domain lords, fighting for the final 4 slots. I'm sure you all understand."

"Understood."

The 11 of them nodded.

Luo Feng was very relaxed. The 10 of them however all felt the pressure. No matter what, Luo Feng had already taken one slot.

The top 5 of the absolute beginning region, the geniuses of over 100 in that region, wouldn’t be too far behind. The moment they had to compete against them, it would extremely intense.

"The battles will all be held in special areas. The virtual universe system will automatically send you in pairs to them, everyone will fight with everyone else, unless your opponent forfeits. Those not in battles can watch the live broadcasts of other battles." He smiled, "Prepare yourselves, and await for the teleportation."

11 members nodded, their gazes changing to that of competition.

Competition!

From the day they stepped into the Virtual Universe Company, this had always been the case.

Luo feng stood calmly in mid air, as he didn’t care about the 10 seniors. He wasn’t competing against them, not even the geniuses of his generation. But the great beings of humanity in history, or

the absolute geniuses of the other races in the universe.

Hua! Hua! Hua!

10 of the 11 were immediately teleported, leaving only Luo Feng behind.

"The 5 matches that just begun, i’m the only one not taking part." Luo Feng shook his head and laughed.

"Don’t be anxious, everyone will fight eventually." The purple clothed man smiled at Luo Feng. "And this is simply just a passing to you, there’s no challenge at all."

Luo Feng laughed.

Chapter 740: Star Eating Plant

The domain lord level qualification battles just passed like that. The absolute pinnacle beings of humanity along with the other geniuses weren't even surprised at Luo Feng getting 1st place. They were all very clear that with his training speed, he was bound to become one of the absolute beings of the universe!

Now everybody was just waiting to see...if he was capable of completing the 1st form of the Nan Shen 7 forms in 3,000 years, and whether he'd become a true disciple of the city leader.

...

Within primal chaos city.

"Your majesty Luo Feng." 3 silver armored sector lords walked up to where Luo Feng stayed, they looked up at his balcony where he sat crossed legged.

"Hm?"

On the balcony, Luo Feng opened his eyes to look down, a smile appearing on his face.

Sou!

He jumped down immediately.

"Is it what I ordered?" Luo Feng looked at the 3 sector lords before him.

"Yes." The leader of the 3 silver armored sector lords nodded, he respectfully passed over a world ring. "The items and things your majesty ordered are all within this world ring."

Luo Feng received it and used his spirit energy to scan the world ring. The world within this ring was small, with a diameter of only 10,000 km. However, it was completely filled with large amounts of things. The goods took up over 1,000 km in space, of which the most obvious were the 3 silver boxes within.

"Very good." Luo Feng smiled and nodded, "Thanks for the trouble."

"No problem, no problem."

The 3 sector lords were somewhat taken aback, saying, "We shall not disturb you further, we'll be leaving."

The 3 swiftly left.

Following the spacious walkways, they walked along, discussing, "He's said to be a rare absolute genius of 10 million eras. But, I didn't expect him to be so humble and easy to get along with. When we went to deliver goods to the primal region sector lord before, hmph, he was acting all big and arrogant."

"This is called bearing!"

"Hm."

"I heard his majesty Luo Feng has been accepted as a disciple of the primal chaos city leader."

"I heard he’s only a disciple in name."

"Rubbish, he is a true disciple."

"Ah, there may be some miscommunication."

The three of them discussed mentally. Even though they were all sector lords, as they were simply staff of the Virtual Universe Company core, they often heard secrets from their interactions. Most of what they heard had been passed down from many sources, hence they would at most get them 50% right.

Luo Feng held the world ring and immediately walked into his own training quarter’s living room.

Sitting in the sofa, he rubbed the world ring and it swiftly refined.

"Come out." Luo Feng’s eyes were filled with anticipation, immediately taking out the 3 silver boxes from within the world.

The 3 silver boxes laid out on the dining table.

Every box was about 1m long, half a meter wide, and 30cm tall.

Luo Feng took a deep breath and swiftly opened all 3 of them. "Click! Click! Click!" There was a white plant within each box, they were carefully placed within, 60cm tall, their stolon silver white.

"Star eating plant!" Luo Feng smiled as he looked at the 3 plants, "They've finally come!"

Since 6 years ago, when he first began his training in the Nan Shen 7 form's 1st form, he had studied on his rough power level after completing the 1st form. Hence, he got a clearer idea on what would happen in the future. His training in primal chaos city...was set to be a very long time, hence he had to use the time here wisely.

How?

He had a large amount of Luo Ke holy water, that was a top level treasure for nurturing plant life, hence he had decided to do so.

One had to know that there were many warriors training within primal chaos city, they would often purchase a few treasures, and the Virtual Universe Company's ship would often frequent the place. Naturally they could order things.

Luo feng had ordered 3 infant Star eating plants.

...

Star eating plant: a very special plant life form that was born in the universe. It could be produced on a normal mineral planet. But as it grew, it would swallow the planet's metals, minerals and rocks etc. Normal minerals on the planet were usually enough to let it evolve to universe level, and the mineral planet later collapse and the plant would begin to wander the galaxy with the large amounts of asteroids.

While wandering the universe, it may swallow other special metals and stones, plant life forms etc, evolving further.

...

The plant life forms could be divided into many types.

Like those for defense, or attack, or both, along with others. As there were many many types of plants...their abilities were also countless, even to the point where some plants could produce other living things, while others acted like trees and stayed rooted to the spot. Transplanting them had to be done carefully, not all of them could be moved about like the cloud contact vine.

In all, there were many types with countless abilities.

The most suited was best.

…

Star eating plant: It was named the most sturdy attacking type plant, what ‘most sturdy’ refers to is only within the plants humanity sells. There are other special and mysterious types of plants in the vast universe that cannot be bought. The star eating plant enjoys swallowing rocks, metal, trees etc, it will make it even sturdier.

Its attack method is very simple.

Just one move, entangle and kill!

The cloud contact vine and star eating plant were very different. The cloud contact vine was mainly for defense, and it’s attacking ability was but average.

The star eating plant however is even more expensive than the cloud contact vine. One without position or an avenue…wouldn’t even be able to buy an infant star eating plant! This was because it was the ‘most sturdy’ attacking type plant, hence it was an extremely good assisting life form, during a battle…

It’s countless vines could wrap about an opponent, as long as it affected the enemy’s speed and attack, the battle outcome could be changed!

The only ability of entangling and killing, had given it the title of

most sturdy attacking plant life form, leading to it being in high demand.

3 infant star eating plants, they cost Luo feng close to 900,000 mixed elements.

Of course the infant stage was all the same, the nurturing later on would make them different.

Just like the cloud contact vine, the sector lord weakest had 36 vines, and the strongest with 360 vines. Back then the Yun Mo planet master Hu Yan Bo's cloud contact vine at sector lord level only had 108 vines, yet it still took a whole lot of work for it to break through to undying. Luo Feng's sector lord cloud contact vine had 216 vines, it was more than 10 times harder for his to breakthrough to undying.

The star eating plant, was more expensive than the cloud contact vine.

Of which at sector lord level, the weakest would have 10 vines, the strongest would have 1,000 vines.

"Star eating plant!" Luo Feng looked at the 3 infant plants, smiling.

The 3 star eating plants, plus the huge amount of material to nurture the plants had filled up the entire world ring. All of them added together had come up to close to 2 million mixed elements!

Without enough wealth, how could one even begin to dwell on it?

"The cloud contact vine's defense and the star eating plant's attack." Luo Feng thought, "The star eating plant's sturdiness is well reputed, at infant stage it can already swallow a planet..."

"Luo Feng, don't get happy too early."

Babata's voice resounded within his mind. "Your teacher's cloud contact vine only had 108 vines, yet it still required 6.2 million mixed elements and luck for it to finally breakthrough. And it only gave that cloud contact vine an early official undying level of strength. Your cloud contact vine has a total of 216 vines, it'll be 10 times harder than your teacher's! If it's the strongest 360 vines... it'll probably be 10 times harder than the golden horned beast breaking through to undying! And similarly, the moment it broke through to undying, the 360 vines cloud contact vine would have emperor level strength."

"The star eating plant is even more expensive than the cloud contact vine."

"Nurturing the weakest 10 vine plant, to become undying would definitely be easy."

"However, the 500 vines plant, would be akin to the strongest cloud contact vine."

"And the legendary 1,000 vine star eating plant, breaking through

to undying, would probably be even harder than a bug clan queen breaking through to undying...the difference would be minimal! Of course the moment it succeeds, an undying 1,000 vine star eating plant would definitely have an emperor pinnacle level of strength."

...

After hearing Babata's words, Luo Feng couldn't help but laugh.

Of course he knew this, the universe had trillions of life forms that were incredibly mysterious. However there was never a free meal! The universe was fair, just like the space beasts, the bug clan queen, breaking through to undying was incredibly difficult. And the plant life forms were the same, the more powerful they were... the more absurd the difficulty of their breakthrough.

If one nurtured a lower level plant life form, it would be easy to breakthrough to undying.

If one nurtured a stronger plant life form, it could never breakthrough to undying.

The choice was all on the person.

"Haha, hence I ordered 3 of them." Luo Feng laughed. "3 star eating plants, I will make one with 100 vines, another with 300 and last one will be the best one with1000 vines."

He had spent close to 2 million mixed elements. 3 of the infant

plants close to 900,000, and over 1.1 million mixed elements in the resourcesthat were required to nurture them.

The main thing was that nurturing the 1,000 vines star eating plant took up over 90% of the resources.

"Luckily."

"Luckily I have the Luo Ke holy water, otherwise producing a sector lord level 1,000 vine star eating plant, would be enough to make an official level undying go bankrupt." Luo Feng thought. "I'm lucky, I only spent 2 million...when I reach sector lord level, the Virtual Universe Company will give me an extra 50 million mixed elements."

Nurturing the star eating plants was very easy. They first had to recognize their master, then the process was simple after. Most of the time the 3 plants would be left in the pond of Luo Ke holy water. With Babata watching over them and observing their evolution process, giving them the required resources when they needed to evolve.

...

"Right now all 3 are in the infant stage. However, I'll be here in primal chaos city for a very long time. When I complete the 1st form the of Nan Shen 7 forms, the 3 would probably have already reached sector lord pinnacle." Luo feng smiled, he didn't think anymore about it, immersing himself in his training of the Nan Shen 7 forms.

Time passed...

He spent long periods of time sitting crossed legged on his balcony, like the other warriors about.

1 year, 10 years, 100 years...time passed continuously...Luo Feng kept improving...

Chapter 741: 800 years

In the blink of an eye, it had already been 800 years since Luo Feng was accepted as a disciple in name to the primal chaos city leader. There were another two domain lord level qualification battles (Actual universe every millennium, equates to 300 years in primal chaos city). Without a doubt, Luo Feng still got number 1 each time, everything else had been normal.

Altogether, Luo Feng had been here for over 900 years (Actual universe over 3,000 years). During this time, Bolan had become a primal region domain lord and Rong Jun had become an absolute beginning domain lord.

Virtual universe, within an island in a special space, with palaces joining together, it was extremely beautiful, an absolute beautiful location.

"Master."

"The master is back."

Many beams of lights immediately flew through the island. Many absolutely beautiful ladies and others rushed into the virtual universe the moment they got news from their friends, and silhouettes filled the island.

"Greetings, master."

Over one hundred million staff and ladies all knelt respectfully.

"Hahaha...hahaha..." mad laughter resounded throughout the island. A demonically beautiful man stood before them, he, was Yan Zhu emperor!

"You, you, you..." Yan Zhu's eyes burned with madness. He walked amongst the hundred million kneeling before him, and casually picked a few of them.

"Come with me." He ordered.

"Yes."

The over 1,000 men and women he had picked followed him, but their eyes were somewhat nervous. Ever since 3,000 years ago, their master Yan Zhu emperor wouldn't even come into the virtual universe, coming in only once every century, and at most staying within for only a month.

Everytime he came, he would find all sorts of methods to vent! None of the staff dared to resist.

There were cries of pain and shock, howling and all sorts of noises from the palace.

After awhile.

He rubbed off the blood stains from his lips, and put on a long robe over his naked body as he walked barefoot. His body flashed as he quickly reached another hall and sat in the throne above.

"Lord." Two men and a lady bowed respectfully within.

These three were all undying.

"Hu!" Yan Zhu let out a comfortable sigh of relief. Being cooped up in the 9th starfield jail hell was too terrifying, he was set to be locked up for 1,000 eras. Normally, there was no way to connect to the virtual universe network from inside, that entire area was banned by the system from connecting.

However, he was Yan Zhu emperor and his father was Shi Huo knight!

Shi Huo knight had gotten a chance for his son...he would be able to enter the virtual universe network every century for a month. He knew his son's mental state too, if he were to be locked up in there for 1,000 eras without any connection, he would probably go crazy or lose his mind.

However, being able to enter the virtual universe every century to vent it out would help alleviate matters.

"I only get a chance every century, those other punks all have to battle it out to find ways to occasionally get a chance to connect, and they only get a short day." Yan Zhu thought, "However, I get a

fixed chance every 100 years and for a month, if they knew…they'd be truly jealous."

It was only thrilling with comparison.

9th starfield jail hell, that was indeed a nightmare. Those who were all locked within were all that had committed grave sins, and all of them were extremely powerful.

"You three, report to me the news of the past century." Yan Zhu sat in his throne, lifting his wine and sipping it.

"Yes lord."

"The Huge Axe Dojo has arranged for another manager at Wu Long starfield, Qi Li emperor to substitute you, he just took on the position." The black robed undying said respectfully.

"Scum." Yan Zhu's expression grew heavy.

"Shi Huo knight's underling Bao Jin emperor has led a group of undyings heading to…" The undying continued with the reports. As all these were well prepared beforehand, Yan Zhu could easily and swiftly read through them himself. However, he enjoyed bossing them around from high above and listening to them report to him.

He enjoyed this feeling.

One report after another.

After awhile.

"With regards to True Yan's disciple. True Yan has been in primal chaos city these past 100 years, without any movement, his disciple Blood thirst emperor has been hard to locate. As for his smallest disciple Luo Feng, he's still training in primal chaos city, he's on his balcony almost everyday." The lady of the three undyings said below.

"Haha..."

"Training on the balcony like an idiot? He really thinks he can finish the 1st form of the Nan Shen 7 forms within 3,000 years? He must be dreaming." Yan Zhu mocked. When he had heard that Luo Feng had become a disciple in name to the city leader, he was extremely furious, he felt unfairness within. He was punished because of Luo Feng to suffer in the jail hell for 1,000 eras, yet this Luo Feng actually became a disciple in name to the primal chaos city leader. These were completely two different levels of fate, how could he feel at ease with this?

After which, every time he entered the virtual universe every 100 years.

Almost every report he got of Luo Feng was of him training on his balcony.

"Keep dreaming."

"Hmph."

3 months after Yan Zhu got his report from his underlings, within virtual universe's thunder island.

Thunder island, it was the gathering point of the undyings of the Virtual Universe Company.

Within its highest quarters!

There was a majestic palace engulfed in primal chaos energy flow. This was the living quarters of the primal chaos city leader.

The palace was filled with primal chaos energies, one couldn't visibly see past 100m.

"Teacher." Huge axe knight bowed respectfully. He still carried his huge axe on his back, and he also had 6 arms and eyes.

"What's the matter" A voice resounded from the depths of the primal energies.

Huge axe knight had left primal chaos city long ago. Hence he had been teaching Luo Feng from the virtual universe all this while. Naturally, he reported to the city leader in the virtual

universe as well.

"You let me give guidance to Luo Feng. In regards to him, I have some matters to report." Huge Axe knight said respectfully.

"Speak." The voice resounded.

"I've been teaching him every 10 years, yet I discovered...this Luo Feng is quite strange." He said.

"Strange? Explain."

Huge axe knight spoke at the endless primal chaos energies, respectfully, "Yes! When I was teaching him, I discovered his improvement speed is simply terrifying. Although many problems would slightly obstruct him, he'd swiftly breakthrough them every time. There was nothing that actually held him past 3 months, and currently...he's already close to completing the 1st level of the Nan Shen 7 forms."

"Close to completion?" A blur silhouette walked out from the primal chaos energies.

"Yes." Huge axe knight said respectfully.

The city leader stood before Huge axe knight. This was a strong looking gold armored powerful looking man, completely different from the one back in primal chaos city.

He looked at Huge axe knight: "How long do you think he will take to complete it?"

"If he’s fast, in half a year, if he’s slow, maybe 3 years." He replied.

"Looks like I did underestimate him when I gave him 3,000 years." The city leader smiled. With that smile, it felt like the entire space about had livened up, "Looks like you’ll be getting one more junior."

Huge Axe knight smiled too, "Luo Feng’s talent in the beast god path is indeed shocking. Even though that Nan Shen 7 forms is a top class training manual, there are no tablets to refer to or anything, it can at most be studied. And for junior Luo Feng to breakthrough so easily, it’s very impressive indeed. His future is boundless."

The city leader smiled and nodded.

"800 years?"

"3,000 years?" His eyes gleamed satisfied.

Even though Luo Feng’s gold and space law improvement speed was heavenly, to the primal chaos city leader, it was but average.

And in the beast god path however, it had made him very satisfied.

Three months after Huge Axe knight's conversation with the city leader, on a balcony in primal chaos city.

Luo Feng sat crossed legged, suddenly illusionary scales appeared on the surface of his body. In an instant, there was a faint cloak of a single horned lizard all over his body, this was the beast god illusion.

Rumble.

He suddenly opened his eyes and two beams shot out, it was a terrifying power.

The Nan Shen 7 forms, also called the Beast god 7 techniques, it was a way of training to materialize the beast god itself. When one had finished the 7th level, he would be able to transform into a beast god (This 7th level was purely imagination, it had yet to be completed). And Luo Feng already had a sense of its energy now.

Powerful!

Intrepid!

"The 1st level scales, completed." Luo Feng opened his eyes and gazed at his body below. During these 800 years, he had occasionally been studying the veins of the scales too, hence he was

surrounded by many scattered veins as well.

"The city leader gave me 3,000 years to complete it. But, I've already completed it in 800 years." Luo Feng was gleeful.

"It's all thanks to the beast god presence, the beast god statue." Luo Feng was happy.

While he was training, he discovered that the beast god presence he had grasped from his trillions of times imitating the statue had helped him a lot!

Training the Nan shen 7 forms was ultimately for usage, and since he could already do it...it resonated well and made the 1st scale portion much easier. What's more, he could personally see the scales from the statue itself, almost like seeing a living beast god. Hence his improvement was so much faster.

After tasting the benefits of the beast god presence, he naturally imitated the sleeping beast god statue intensely. His comprehension of the fusion laws grew even more as he began to understand it, naturally, his grasp on the presence became easier.

From not knowing anything, he copied the statue trillions of times to get a grasp of it.

However after understanding the fusion laws, it only took tens of millions of times of imitation to reach the same result.

The beast god presence and the fusion laws were interlinked.

The more one understood the fusion laws, the higher the efficiency of control of the beast god presence.

The more one had a grasp of the beast god presence...the more he would be able to understand the fusion laws.

Luo feng had always maintained the beast god presence being above the fusion laws, both spurring each other, reaching optimum results. Just like that...it only took him 800 years to complete the 1st level.

Of course...

Within these 800 years, his benefits have been plenty too.

His internal world had grown to its limit, with a diameter of 90 million km. Golden horned beast and mosha bodies too had reached sector lord level 9!

"It's time to go visit the city leader." He thought.

Sou!

He jumped down from the balcony and landed in the walkways.

Chapter 742: True Disciple

Within the city leader’s mansion.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, the city leader has ordered earlier for you to enter when you arrive." The group of undying guards within didn’t stop him.

Luo Feng smiled and walked in.

As they looked at his back, they began to discuss amongst themselves.

"Entering without a need for verification. Other than the very few individuals, they are all the city leader’s disciples. Has Luo Feng become a true disciple?"

"Very likely."

"The city leader’s order didn’t come too long ago, he should have accepted Luo Feng as a disciple."

...

Luo Feng stood in the yard facing the primal chaos ruins.

He stepped through.

Rumble!

Time and space warped and he appeared within a vast wasteland, trillions of other races corpses filled the land, there was a silhouette sitting crossed legged within.

"Teacher." Luo Feng got up and carefully bowed respectfully, not stepping on any of the corpses.

The silhouette got up.

He turned to look at Luo Feng. Despite the malevolent face he had, his eyes were gentle and warm. He smiled and nodded, "Have you finished the 1st level?"

"I just finished the 1st Scale portion of it, hence I immediately came to report to you." Luo Feng said.

"Your 9th senior said you'd be here quickest in half a year, slowest in 3 years. I didn't expect you to come here after 3 months instead." He nodded. "Demonstrate the 1st form for me."

"Yes."

Luo Feng said respectfully.

Actually over these 800 years of training, even though he had

finished the 1st level Scale portion, in truth he had only gotten comprehension of the 1st form. As for its usage in techniques, he hadn’t actually learnt anything. The law comprehension was simply that, usage was just as important.

Luo Feng had thought of coming earlier to see the city leader, coming without any techniques at all.

"Luckily I usually let the golden horned beast train with it, and my human body trained in the virtual universe often mixing it with the 3,000 space claw technique. Finally, I managed to comprehend the most basic usage." Luo Feng was happy within.

Rumble!

The genetic energy within him swirled as layers of scales appeared on the surface of his body, they even began to appear on his arms. Every scale’s engravings were exactly the same as the sleeping beast god statues, but the only difference was that it was smaller.

"Hm." The city leader smiled.

At this time Luo Feng had become a human form beast, covered in scales with its intrepid energy engulfing the area. It could be said to be a simple beast god transformation, however his power level had shot up greatly.

"Sky tearing claw." Luo Feng rushed forward fiercely.

He!

His right hand covered in scales clawed forwards, almost like the golden horned beast unleashing the technique.

Hua La...the space within the ruins shook violently, a blurry terrifying huge claw silhouette tore through space and dispersed after. After unleashing the move...the scales on his body immediately began to return to genetic energy and disappear within his body, regaining his original form.

"Teacher." Luo Feng said respectfully.

"Your claw work is not bad." The city leader nodded satisfied. "You've only gained comprehension of the 1st scale form. In terms of usage...you can use it in spirit weapons, blade work and so on for various usage such as for movement and defense. However these usage techniques have to be trained as well, your claw work however is not bad at all."

Luo Feng was shocked within.

Could it be weak?

Sky tearing claw was his trump card, one that he had gotten from studying the beast god pictures and training for a very long time. Even though the golden horned beast had imitated the statue trillions of times, during that period, it had constantly used sky

tearing claw to get a grasp of the beast god presence.

"From today, you will become my 32nd disciple." The city leader emphasized.

"The student greets the teacher."

Luo Feng knelt down.

The city leader looked at this young punk kneeling before him. Compared to his long life and power, this punk was indeed small and weak. Actually it was like a parent speaking to his child, normally they pamper the weakest of them the most. In truth, they care about all their children, however the youngest one is usually the one they naturally took care of the most.

One theory.

The total number of disciples the city leader had, including Luo Feng was only 32. There were only 27 surviving, of which 25 were knights and 1 was an emperor level pinnacle. The final one was Luo feng, who was the smallest and weakest.

Towards the smallest disciple, the city leader would naturally look after more.

And seeing Luo feng kneel before him today, he suddenly felt as though he was looking at a very lively punk Ke Di from before.

"Ke Di..." the city leader couldn't help but feel hurt and rage as he thought of Ke Di, he too was a true disciple of his. Back then, the bug clan warriors had ambushed him and made him lose his disciple. Actually, once anyone reached the city leader's level of power, killing his disciples was very hard.

Even if they were killed and their souls were destroyed.

The city leader could reverse time to the point before his disciple's death, reviving him.

Of course, reversing time was extremely difficult and this went against all the universe laws themselves. Hence, as a consequence, there would be a backlash.

All in all, reversing time was an extremely hard thing to do.

And this move wasn't invincible, it wasn't such that all the dead could be revived. Like Ke Di, with the bug clan warriors planning everything out, the city leader still lost his disciple.

"Get up." The city leader said softly.

Luo Feng obediently complied.

"Including you, of the 32 disciples I've had, 5 have already fallen." The city leader said. "Among the surviving 26 seniors of yours, 25

are knights. Only one is an emperor level pinnacle. You are still weak, however I believe you'll reach emperor pinnacle easily."

Luo feng heard the words 'still weak', he couldn't help but mutter to himself.

Weak?

He had been in primal chaos city for over 900 years, but over 3,000 years had passed in the actual universe. According to earth's time, he was already over 3,000 years old! 3,000 years of growth, the population of earth humans had reached an incredibly level, they had filled the entire milky way galaxy, even reaching other galaxies.

The limit of the population was mainly territory and food etc.

Without these restrictions, a small tribe of 10 can easily reach over a hundred million in a 1,000 years!

Hence, with 3,000 years passing, the number of earth humans and people in the Luo family had exploded to an extreme level, and with Luo Feng in such a high position on earth, his family too had the same prestige. Many called him an ancient ancestor, calling him the sacred person of earth and so on.

However before the city leader, he was 'still weak', he knew that the city leader wasn't wrong.

"Compared to the city leader or universe knights, those level of beings, anyone who hasn’t lived over a hundred million years would be considered small." Luo Feng muttered.

"From today onwards, you can teleport directly to my palace on Thunder island." The city leader said. "If you have any questions, you can ask me in the virtual universe thunder island. As for here, the primal chaos ruins, without my order, you don’t have to come here."

"Yes teacher." Luo Feng said respectfully.

"Also...on the day you reach sector lord, and the day you decide to leave primal chaos city, come here." The city leader said.

"Yes." Luo Feng remembered.

The day he became sector lord and the day he left primal chaos city?

Come visit his city leader teacher?

"You can leave now." He smiled indifferently. "Ah, your authority has been risen. You can search for a lot more information regarding what you want to know through the virtual universe network from now on."

"The disciple takes his leave." Luo Feng replied happily.

Shua!

The city leader immediately teleported Luo Feng out of the ruins.

Only the city leader was left in the wastelands. Looking at the vast ruins, the trillions of other race warriors' bodies around, he sat down crossed legged again silently...

Luo Feng felt the time and space warp before him, he was instantly standing at the entrance of the primal chaos ruins yard.

"I still thought I'd get some reward after becoming a true disciple." Luo Feng thought and laughed. "However, he told me to visit him when I become a sector lord and when I'm about to leave the city, there should be some special reason. If there wasn't, we could simply meet in the virtual universe."

"Authority risen?"

Luo Feng was happy within as he walked within the residence, quickly walking out of it and returning to his quiet balcony. He sat crossed legged and immediately sent a thread of consciousness into the virtual universe to check information regarding the primal Sky mountain.

With different levels of authority, the amount of information was naturally different.

Even though he was a primal region member before, he still couldn’t find much, he couldn’t even find anything about the Hong alliance.

And the status of a primal chaos city leader disciple was extremely high.

"The authority sure is different, I get much more detailed information now." He sat crossed legged and smiled, "Primal region sky mountain...hehe, it sure is hard."

"Universe level, primal region sky mountain, one had to have the capability of passing the 12th level of the heavenly bridge to pass."

"Domain lord level, primal region sky mountain, one had to have the capability of passing the 16th level of the heavenly bridge to pass."

"Sector lord level, primal region sky mountain, one had to have the capability of passing the 20th level of the heavenly bridge to pass."

Luo feng looked at the information and couldn’t help but exclaim.

Tough.

The primal region sky mountain...was indeed the hardest of all. Using True Yan’s words, they had no intention of letting the

geniuses pass it. Only absolute geniuses of 10 million eras, very few of them had passed them before. Of course geniuses of 10,000 eras didn’t have such ability.

Chapter 743: Sector Lord Resource Rewards

Virtual universe Yu Xiang Mountain primal region, Luo Feng sat at his desk and looked at his laptop.

The screen displayed detailed information on the primal region Sky mountain.

"It’s so tough." Luo Feng muttered to himself.

The guardians of the primal region sky mountain were separated into the foot of the mountain, the middle and the peak. Every level had a bullfighter, an apeman spirit reader and a snake illusionist all working together. The foot of the mountain was the easiest, the middle was much harder and the peak was simply absurd! One had to pass all three of them to succeed.

It could be said that the intent of the sky mountain was never to allow anyone to pass it, hence they erected a tall untouchable standard for all.

However there were bound to be some monster like geniuses in humanity.

Like some one in ten million eras absolute geniuses that have passed it!

"Can I pass it now?" Luo Feng muttered to himself.

"According to the Nan shen 7 forms manual, once I complete the 1st scale form, I should have law comprehension akin to the 15th level of the heavenly bridge. So I should be able to hit the 16th level...the moment I use the beast god presence, my strength might rise even more." Luo Feng thought.

This was in theory, a true battle that had many more factors.

Like mental state, self control etc, this was a group attack from a fighter, spirit reader and illusionist. As long as one was somewhat affected by the illusionist, he could easily be killed off by the others.

...

After looking through the data of the primal region sky mountain, Luo Feng began to search for information on the sector lord resource rewards.

"I had heard that the rewards for primal region sector lords would be shocking. All of the geniuses give it their all, for this specific reward." Luo Feng smiled. "I didn't know it'd be this shocking."

Du!

Large amounts of data immediately appeared on the screen.

"Higher authority sure is different." Luo Feng was satisfied.

Before becoming a disciple of the primal chaos city leader, when he searched for this, it had been completely blank. Right now however, it displayed a large amount of information.

"Wow!" Babata shouted out in shock, "That's absurd."

"Yes it is." Luo feng took a deep breath, pointing and tapping the screen, opening a file.

Sector lord: This is the most important training period. The way the Virtual Universe Company nurtures its geniuses, at universe level, they are simply doing some training and living within the secret regions. At domain lord level, they are given some missions and a guard team, it's still overall very safe without any dangers. However, it takes trials and tribulations for true growth, an absolute warrior has to be molded by the many wars and battles.

Hence the primal region universe and domain lord levels don't get much rewards.

The true rewards come at the primal region sector lord level.

They are as such...

After becoming a primal region sector lord and taking part in the 1st qualification battle, ranking 1st will give out 1 billion points reward. Ranking 2nd...10th will have a 3 hundred million points reward, ranking 11th...100th, will have a 1 hundred million point reward.

Of course...

These rewards are only there for the 1st participation, the 2nd, 3rd...10th, even the 100th will not have any rewards. As for what the sector lords need to buy, they can use the points to exchange for them.

"Smart enough."

"Every sector lord needs different manuals and treasures etc, hence they simply give points." Luo Feng thought. "That's very generous, however it's very hard to get the high points too. As everybody's 1st qualification battles would be when they had just broken through, they would be newbies in the primal region sector lord level. Compared to the seniors, ranking 1st and getting 1 billion points, that's tough! Extremely tough!"

"The ones that get 3 hundred million points would probably be very few."

"1 hundred million would be the majority." Luo Feng thought.

The points were very valuable.

As the Virtual Universe Company treasure trove had many treasures that had to be exchanged for with points, even the powerful True Yan emperor, he had used points to exchange for the 1st half of the Nan Shen 7 forms for Luo Feng.

And later on, their buying power would get even stronger.

Like the life fruit or Nan Shen armament along with other cheap things, it wasn't actually worth it to exchange for them with points. Items priced at 1 mixed element may require 10 points.

However...

As the items get more and more expensive, the points begin to display their advantage.

Like the Flame void gold, if it were to auctioned at 1.5-2 million mixed elements, with Luo Feng's current authority, he could get a huge discount when using his points to exchange for it. Using only 500,000 points to exchange for the Flame void gold. At this time... the buying power of 1 point was even more than 1 mixed element.

And there were many items that couldn't be bought with money, hence many undyings would rather exchange their money into manuals and treasures and so on.

"1 hundred million points, it's buying power exceeds 1 hundred million mixed elements." Luo Feng thought. "And an official level undying's wealth is mostly only around 10 million mixed elements."

"Every primal region sector lord!"

"The moment they become undying, even the weakest usually become official level undyings, and they'd definitely be the more wealthy ones amongst the official level undyings." Luo Feng thought.

Of course...

The points were there to be spent!

These points were given for free by the Virtual Universe Company for the primal region sector lords to use, for them maximize their growth! Afterall with 100 sector lords in the primal region, it only added up to over 10 billion points or so...the Virtual Universe Company could easily afford this. It was only because primal region sector lords would constantly be produced, hence they limited the distribution.

...

Luo Feng continued to look at the information on the sector lord rewards.

"Ah?" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

The Virtual Universe Company gave extra incentives:

1, after passing the universe level primal region sky mountain, one would get 1 hundred million points when he reached sector lord level.

2, after passing the domain lord level primal region sky mountain, one would get 3 billion points when he reached sector lord level.

3, after passing the sector lord level primal region sky mountain, one would immediately get 100 billion points.

"My god."

"Brutal." Luo Feng took a deep breath.

This was a huge amount!

"Wow, that's generous." Babata cheered on his shoulder. "That's normal though, how tough is it to pass the primal region sky mountain! Normally, only a rare genius of 10 million eras can do it, naturally they'll give more points to these geniuses. This setup is probably because they are worried that the geniuses would start out strong and weaken and fall later. Hence, they give higher rewards later on."

Luo Feng nodded.

To succeed in the sector lord primal region sky mountain, that required the ability to pass the 20th level of the heavenly bridge! This was only 1 level away from becoming a knight! The moment such a sector lord broke through to undying, he would probably immediately reach True Yan emperor's level! His chances of

becoming a knight would be very high too. Hence, giving 100 billion points to nurture him would be normal.

"Phew!" Luo Feng laid back and lay on his study's sofa, lifting a cup of wine.

"Talent, resources, character, encounters...one cannot lack any of these to become an absolute warrior amongst the trillions of races." Luo Feng sighed. "The Virtual Universe Company does work hard to nurture the future warriors."

The highest rewards were in the sky mountain! Because...this was something usually only a genius of ten million eras could attempt. To the large majority of geniuses, this wasn't realistic to them at all.

Primal region sector lords, their rewards were high too. This was more realistic, as it was the goal of countless geniuses.

As for the sector lords of the absolute beginning and Sky and land regions, they too would get rewards in their 1st qualification battles, but it was much lower.

...

"Let's check what Deities of the World level 2 requires." Luo Feng thought.

Deities of the world, this was a very heavenly technique.

It could multiply one’s strength!

However, the resources needed for this technique were simply too harsh, and the price was absurd.

"Having a higher authority sure helps. There were many treasures I couldn’t even search for in the past, now I can find them all." Luo Feng was happy. With his higher authority, the treasure trove was much more detailed than before. He easily found the materials he required for Deities of the World level 2.

However, calculating the points...

"My god." Luo Feng took a deep breath, "Let’s attempt the primal region sky mountain!"

There was no choice, he was just too poor!

Even after he became sector lord level, he would only get 50 million mixed elements in cash. Nurturing his cloud contact vine and Star eating plants was like feeding a bottomless pit! The most absurd one was still Deities of the world.

Just a Kan Luo Si feather alone was priced at 12 million points in the treasure trove. There were even more expensive items required. Whatever he couldn’t find before, they were all there now. However their prices were even more ridiculous than the Kan Luo Si feather, to actually complete this 2nd level, the amount of

points required would exceed over 10 billion points! As for the 3rd level...he didn't even dare think about it. With his authority, he could still only find 3 ingredients he required for it, everything else was still hidden.

It was no wonder...

Those amongst the golden horned beast sector lords, hardly any one of them had ever finished the 2nd level. How could the solitary golden horned beasts have more treasures than humanity? The amount of treasures the Virtual Universe Company had collected was naturally incredibly shocking. However, these were from countless absolute warriors risking their lives to acquire these.

"After passing the primal region sky mountain, I'll get 3 billion points." Luo Feng thought. "With this 3 billion points, my power will rise greatly."

Sou!

Luo Feng instantly vanished from his study.

...

In the center space of the sky mountain area, there stood 3 majestic mountains amidst the vast land, and on them glowed bright gold words, Sky and land, absolute beginning, and primal region, of which the primal region sky mountain was obviously the highest.

Sou!

Luo feng appeared on the land itself, swiftly flying towards the primal region sky mountain.

He landed on the foot of the mountain and looked up at the mountain that stretched through the clouds, after which he looked down at the not too distant foot of the mountain. There lay a huge stone like Ox man sleeping on the ground, beside him lay a dark purple huge axe. It felt like it was formed from countless bloodshed, and it made one tremble within.

"Wake up Ox man, get the apeman and the snake lady out, I want to attempt the sky mountain." Luo Feng shouted.

The Ox man that was deeply asleep suddenly climbed up, blinking his eyes as he looked about, he saw Luo Feng, "You, want to attempt the primal region sky mountain?"

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

Chapter 744: Primal Region Sector Lord

"Ah!" The Ox man stared at him, immediately howling, "There's someone here to attempt the primal region sky mountain!"

Two beams of light flew over. It was the apeman spirit reader and snake lady illusionist. The three guardians gathered at the foot of the mountain, quickly acquiring Luo Feng's information.

"Luo Feng? You've passed the heavenly bridge's 13th level?" The snake lady smiled enticingly, "Your majesty Luo Feng, your strength is far from enough."

"Cut the crap."

The dark golden long rod on Luo Feng's back immediately split into 10,081 little golden blades, the blur of gold lights immediately began to interweave perfectly, forming a 3.3m long dark golden blade. This was the most perfect 9th form of the Nan Shen Armament, A match against undying.

Xiu!

The battle started immediately!

...

He killed from the foot of the mountain up to the middle level,

successful in both levels.

"Phew..." Luo Feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle and flew through the primal region mountain's path that stretched into the clouds. After flying for a while, he finally reached the peak.

The clouds engulfed the entire peak, the ox was lying and snoring thunderously there. The apeman was happily drinking at a large vat of wine and the snake lady was swimming in the water. When Luo feng landed on the peak, the three of them simultaneously opened their eyes and gazed at him.

The peak, this was the final level, and the toughest.

"How many years has it been." The snake lady sighed in the water, she slowly swam out of the water, putting on a silk robe. Even though she was a snake lady, her upper half revealed a little through the robe, she could easily seduce men from all over.

"Yes, it's been too long." A low voice resounded from the ox man.

"Since the three of us have been created, it's been a million eras since we've been challenged." The apeman stood up.

Luo Feng was shocked as he heard.

Created?

After which he understood, these should be AIs created by the virtual universe system. One had to know that their system was heavenly, they were able to imitate the laws in places like the slaughterhouse, even creating any sort of opponent one requested!

Hence, to create the guardians of the Sky and land, absolute beginning and primal region sky mountains, this was just a small feat for them.

The only thing was that they lived for so long, some had already become living AIs, ones who were able to feel emotions.

"Luo Feng." The snake lady looked at Luo Feng, her voice was gentle and enticing. "Even though I really wish to chat with you, we have to do our mission, and fight with all our strength..."

"Me too." Luo Feng said softly.

Rumble!

The dark golden long rod on his back immediately dispersed and became a golden long blade. At the same time, scales appeared throughout his body and he instantly became a human form beast god. Unleashing this move meant that he had only completed the 1st level, it wasn't too strong yet.

"Seems not bad." The snake lady smiled.

With her smile...

Luo Feng was thrown into an illusion. An arc light shot out from behind the skinny apeman and slashed at Luo Feng’s neck, and was about to chop off his head.

"Break!" Luo Feng’s gaze was light lightning as he roared, instantly breaking through the illusion.

Dang!

The gold long blade’s instantaneous speed had reached an extreme level. It howled like a beast and was incredibly powerful, instantly tearing through space and crashing into that arc light. As they clashed, both the Nan Shen Armament and the Arc blade was knocked far away.

"I’ve already unleashed my spirit energy amplitude, combined with the 1st level’s Scale form infused in my Nan Shen Armament...yet my power is still only equal to the apeman’s." Luo Feng’s expression changed as he roared.

He immediately rushed straight at the ox man.

As he targeted the ox man, he controlled his Nan shen armament to distract the apeman. As for the snake woman...Luo Feng didn’t care about her at all! He was confident in his ability to withstand the illusions.

"Haha..." The ox man laughed, rushing straight at Luo Feng.

Every step he took, shook the entire ground, he wielded his huge blood thirsty axe and lifted it high up, the space around it instantly shook, and the image of a huge axe projected throughout. With just his roar, the space was instantly torn apart.

Domain lord level 9 strength, it could easily tear through space!

"Good." The beast god form Luo feng waved his right hand.

"Break!!!"

Luo Feng's slash through the sky was almost like a big slap, a claw appeared and a projection of a blurry beast god claw emerged This claw...hit right at the huge axe, with a clash, the axe was knocked sideways, the ox man immediately adapted...changing his vertical slice to that of a side one!

Sou! Luo Feng however was as fast as lightning.

After slashing with his claw once, he immediately rushed forwards, both hands facing the huge axe and clawing at it fiercely!

"Sky tearing claw!" Luo feng unleashed everything for the first time.

This claw was incomparably brutal!

The moment he clawed, 5 tears in space immediately appeared

and his attack tore through the ox man’s chest armor. His terrifying attack destroyed his insides...easily destroying his life core.

The ox man was dead!

"Just two left now." Luo Feng turned immediately after tearing through the ox man and looked around before flashing forward like a beast.

...

Actually, the moment the ox man was killed, this battle had already been decided.

"I’ve succeeded."

Luo Feng stood at the peak, looking at the three bodies amidst the clouds, after which, their injuries vanished and they regenerated. All three of them stood up.

"Congratulations Luo Feng."

"Congratulations on passing the primal sky mountain."

The three guardians smiled at Luo Feng, the snake woman couldn’t help but ask, "Luo Feng, how come my illusions didn’t even work on you?"

"They aren’t strong enough." Luo Feng smiled.

900 years of training in primal chaos city, along with long periods of solitude, this was very good training for his mental state. Over these 900 years...Luo Feng’s willpower had improved a lot. Even though knowing oneself was still only the 1st level in mental states, once its trained beyond its limits, it could still continue to get stronger.

Luo Feng’s willpower was extremely sturdy, how could her illusions affect him?

Primal chaos city, on a particular balcony amidst others.

Luo Feng sat crossed legged.

"I’ve succeeded." Luo Feng opened his eyes fill with glee, "I’ve passed the primal region sky mountain. This way, the moment I reach sector lord, I’ll receive a huge reward. With that, my strength will reach a new level again! I’ll have a better chance in the life or death trials ahead."

"Hm."

"The primal chaos city leader teacher also told me...to look for him when I reach sector lord level."

"Then, I'll break through to sector lord level right away."

Luo Feng closed his eyes...

...

At the same time.

The virtual universe's thunder island was bustling. The management level members had all come to know of a piece of news...Luo Feng had passed the primal region sky mountain!

"It's been so long, there's finally someone from our humanity's later generation that has passed the sky mountain, and it's the domain lord level sky mountain." A tall and skinny green armored man with compound eyes sat there. He lifted a glass of wine and sipped, as he complimented.

"This Luo Feng is indeed one favored by the primal chaos city leader, since his capabilities are extraordinary." Another man in a silver robe, bald head and with green engravings on his face smiled and shot a glance over.

These were three knights chatting.

The three of them were all the management level elders of the Virtual Universe Company. Luo Feng's highest point mission from before was judged by these three.

"Hmph." A short messy green haired man snorted coldly. "This Luo Feng is extremely blood thirsty and selfish. What's the point of being strong, he may be a calamity in the future. From what I see, we should restrict him as early as possible, stopping his growth!"

"The two of us don't dare to do so." The compound eyes man mocked. "That's the disciple of the primal chaos city leader, the strongest in the Virtual Universe Company. With his control...I have to say, Bo Si Wa, you sure got some guts to think about restricting his disciple."

The short man's expression grew ugly.

Beside him, the silver robed bald man suddenly laughed. "Right, I remember that the moment someone passed the domain lord primal region sky mountain, when he becomes a sector lord...he'll receive 3 billion points in rewards."

"Hm, there is such a thing." The compound eyes man nodded.

"3 billion points, this Luo feng improved so fast before without much resources. When he becomes sector lord...buying his treasures with these 3 billion points, also with the primal chaos city leader's instructions, he'll soar. He'll become an absolute being just like Ke Di back then." The silver robed bald man complimented.

The compound eyed man and the silver robed man chatted

together, it made the other short one unhappy.

They couldn’t be blamed for taunting him, the main thing was during Luo Feng’s highest point mission’s 4th level, the 3 were in conflict. Both of them thought...that being a little selfish was very normal, it would be weird if he wasn’t, and Luo Feng was very fair towards all the other members, they wanted to give him 90-100% completion, and a higher extra bonus after.

This Bo Si Wa however didn’t agree.

He thought Luo feng was very selfish!

He didn’t even question his father, obviously he didn’t care about the Virtual Universe Company. If such a person was nurtured, maybe it will lead to a calamity in the future.

In conflict...

Hence the final decision! The points weren’t high or too low.

"Just wait, I’ve said it, he could very likely be a calamity." The short man said.

"Ah?" The other two just laughed.

During their chat...

They all received a bit of news.

The number of primal region sector lords had risen from 100 to 101, there was a new primal region sector lord...Luo Feng!

"Luo Feng has become a sector lord?" The compound eyes man and the silver robed man both laughed, the short man however simply looked on coldly.

Chapter 745: Secret

The level of secrecy regarding the primal region members of the Virtual Universe Company wasn't considered too high. When Luo feng became a sector lord and was confirmed by the virtual universe network system...it automatically increased his status, thus becoming a primal region sector lord. The moment that happened, the name list changed and many undyings and absolute beings naturally found out about it.

"Hm?"

Luo Feng walked towards the city leader's mansion and saw many undyings looking at him.

"That's Luo Feng?"

"He's already a primal region sector lord."

"I heard...that he's already passed the domain lord primal region sky mountain."

"Where'd you get that news? The sky mountain results aren't public, I heard only the knights will know of such things."

"I just heard."

There were many undyings discussing softly along the way. It

was obvious that within the past 1,000 years, Luo Feng had become a reputed genius within primal chaos city. Hence, almost all the warriors knew him.

Luo Feng entered the city leader's residence amidst the discussions, stepping into the primal chaos ruins yard.

Time and space warped.

Amidst the vast ruins, trillions of bodies could be seen about. Luo Feng walked through the land and saw a silhouette sitting crossed legged in the distance.

"Teacher." Luo Feng stood there and bowed respectfully.

Hua!

The city leader got up, his snake tail swept as he looked at Luo feng. This made Luo feng shocked within, "I've been visiting him for so many years in the virtual universe. My teacher in the virtual universe...the pressure and energy I feel from him is completely different compared to real life."

The primal chaos city leader had three bodies, Luo Feng knew that this was one of them.

"You were finally willing to breakthrough to sector lord level." The city leader's eyes seemed to smile at him.

Luo Feng was stunned.

Finally willing?

From domain lord level 9 to sector lord, one would usually meet with a barrier, it wasn't an easy thing to breakthrough! However, his teacher's tone...

"When did you possess the golden horned beast's body? Was it back when your home earth was attacked by one?" The city leader asked casually.

Luo Feng stared wide eyed.

My god!

Possess the golden horned beast?

This, this, this...

He had kept this secret extremely well, not ever disclosing it. How, how...

"Hahaha, you little punk." The city leader laughed loudly. "Do you think you could hide that from me?"

"Teacher." Luo feng was very nervous.

"Don’t worry, it’s no big deal." The city leader shook his head and laughed, "The main foundation of a flesh and blood life form is the soul. No matter what you possess, or what body you get, your soul never changes, it’s still a human soul. Naturally, you’d still be part of humanity."

Luo Feng let out a sigh or relief within.

That was right, there were many possession techniques. Someone at star traveller level, or star level, even those could use them. There were many that would possess others and try again if they weren’t satisfied with the 1st, just like his teacher Hu Yan Bo had done so before. There were many warriors in the universe that possessed others to decrease the limits of their lower bloodlines.

Hence, possession wasn’t something that was degrading.

The soul was the core!

One that possessed a golden horned beast still possessed a human soul, naturally he was still human!

"Haha, don’t be fooled by appearances. If one’s appearance is human but their body has already been possessed by the other races, his soul would be that of theirs. Then...he would be from the other race." The city leader smiled. "Being able to possess a golden horned beast’s body is your own skill. If you can possess a stronger

life form...that would be even better, the only worry is if you fail."

Luo Feng finally calmed down within.

He had been worried before, because Hu Yan Bo had at most possessed another human. As for him, he had possessed another race altogether! The moment it was revealed, if he was marked as another race, that would mean big trouble. He didn't dare gamble! Hence he had been hiding this fact. From the looks of it, the upper echelon of humanity seem pretty open about it.

"Teacher, how did you find out..." Luo feng couldn't help but ask.

"Every batch of geniuses absorbed, whether they are from the genius competitions or absorbed members for the 5 leviathans, they all come to primal chaos city once." The city leader laughed, "When you first came here, one reason was for you to pick your primal chaos tablet, the 2nd was to determine if there were any other race spies within. If we nurture you and you turn out to be from another race, that would be a joke."

"Within Primal chaos city, I can instantly check through all of you." The city leader said, "I immediately saw the core within your body then."

"Ah." Luo Feng was shocked.

Right.

How could humanity not check through the geniuses and spend resources on them.

And the primal chaos city leader, as one of the most pinnacle beings of humanity, was definitely one of the top three powers of humanity. He naturally could easily see through a person and his soul!

"Then, then..." Luo Feng couldn’t help but say, "Since you know I possessed a golden horned beast, and that it was at sector lord level, why’d you let me carry on as a domain lord level member?"

"Even though I know about it, it doesn’t mean others do." The city leader smiled indifferently.

Luo Feng blinked.

"My job is to make sure you aren’t a spy of the other race." The city leader exclaimed, "There are many encounters in the universe. Your possession of the golden horned beast...doesn’t mean anything in the vast universe. As long as I can make sure you are human, that’s enough! As for the management people not finding out and still taking you as a universe level, as a domain lord...I can’t be bothered with it."

Luo Feng nodded.

Right.

The city leader, he was the biggest boss of the Virtual Universe Company, what level was that? Why would he bother about such matters.

"If you could find out, how could the others not?" Luo Feng asked curiously.

"I control the time and space here." The city leader smiled, "In this space, I can easily scan everything. Those knights, they may have comprehended space or time! They haven't reached my level, unless they purposely send a piece of god energy into your body to check, they would never be able to discover you possessed a golden horned beast."

Luo Feng realized.

The universe master controlled both time and space, he was naturally much more powerful than a knight.

"It was a good thing you came here when you were weak." The city leader said, "If you had come here for the 1st time when you were undying, I may have mistaken you to be a spy of the space beasts."

Luo Feng was stunned.

"The moment one becomes undying, his soul would begin to meld with the body, every bit of spirit imprint fusing with your cells." The city leader smiled. "When that happens, every cell is a

part of your soul, as there’s no clear soul itself, only the most basic spirit imprints about, and the imprint of every life that has a soul is different"

"There wouldn’t be a way for me to determine if your soul imprint was that of human or not."

"Hence...I would suspect you to be a spy for the other race." The city leader smiled.

Luo Feng nodded.

Ah.

Right, when a normal human reaches sector lord, his soul would gather. At domain lord level, it was a soul crystal, sector lord it became a pearl, completely condensed within. Naturally the city leader would be able to see if one was a human soul or not.

However after one became undying, the soul would crumble and disperse, melding into every cell. It wouldn’t be possible to see the soul clearly anymore, as the soul had already become part of the undying body.

"If that was the case, wouldn’t you be unable to determine if some undyings are spies if they come here for the first time?" Luo Feng asked.

"Right."

The city leader nodded, "There’s no way to. Hence, every undying that comes here for the 1st time are all suspects, they would be placed under supervision."

...

After hearing this, Luo Feng felt that the security around humanity’s sacred land, primal chaos city sure was strict. His teacher had probably only told him about 1 level of security. There should be others. He had always thought his possession of the golden horned beast was a secret, he didn’t expect the city leader to know of it.

Only back then, he was too lazy to bother about this little punk.

"Possessing a golden horned beast, amongst the trillions of races in the universe it’s only considered an above average encounter." The city leader smiled. "The only good point is you get its natural bloodline ability of cloning, picking good clones is extremely important. How many do you have now?"

"Two." Luo Feng said respectfully.

"Hm, looks like there’s only one left." The city leader nodded, "Let me advise you..."

Luo Feng listened hard.

"The universe is fair, this natural ability is not limitless." The leader emphasized, "From what I know, there are some very mysterious and terrifying life forms in the universe, some of them are even completely unique. Even at sector lord level...your golden horned beast's internal world cannot produce such a life form. The internal world of the beast can at most...produce one that's ten to a hundred times stronger than itself, if it were to produce such a life form, it wouldn't be too realistic. Of course, the golden horned beast itself has an exquisite bloodline, hence almost all the sector lord life forms of the universe are viable, only very few life forms are exceptions."

"Secondly, if you pick a powerful being close to your internal world's limit, at 100 times stronger than your golden horned beast, you'd definitely be able to produce it yes. However, the universe is fair, if your clone is too heavenly, your growth will meet with some obstructions."

Luo Feng was shocked.

"Obstructions?"

"Right." The city leader nodded, "If your clone is too strong, there would be some difficulties along the way."

"Good luck and misfortune are interdependent." He smiled. "This is the fairness of the universe. Even though there would be obstructions, the moment you breakthrough them, you will have a much greater power."

Chapter 746: Shi Wu Wing

Hearing that from the Primal chaos city leader, Luo Feng pondered carefully.

He had made a choice back then to swallow high grade metals to grow his golden horned beast to sector lord level 9. That way, his internal world could reach a size of 90 million km in diameter. It would make his world projection extremely powerful! The down side was that breaking through to undying would be ten to hundreds of times harder than a normal golden horned beast!

Just like the 1,000 vine star eating plant, the 360 vines cloud contact vine and the bug clan queen breaking through to undying, they were all far harder than the golden horned beast. These heavenly beings breaking through to undying was almost impossible!

If!

The 3rd clone he produced was a 100 times stronger than the beast itself, if he made a bug clan queen as the 3rd clone, the moment the queen became undying, she could create a powerful undying army. That would make him invincible beneath anything of a knight, and he would be able to decimate many undying armies.

If his 3rd clone was a bug clan queen ant and it broke through to undying...would there be no chance? This didn't comply with the universe laws.

"The powerful clones would definitely create special obstructions." Luo Feng muttered to himself.

"My teacher is right."

"And before, the two clones I have, one is an earth human and the other a mosha clansman. The earth human is too much weaker than the golden horned beast, the mosha clansman too would probably only be a tenth of the golden horned beast." Luo Feng thought, "The two clones before were too weak, hence there wasn't any special obstructions."

"Who cares."

"It's just like teacher said, the moment I breakthrough the obstructions, my strength would naturally be even greater." Luo Feng thought.

...

There were many other race warrior corpses scattered about, the primal chaos city leader however looked calmly at Luo Feng, he could feel a forward looking drive from Luo Feng's gaze.

"Ke Di was the same back then." He sighed within.

Ke Di from before was just like Luo Feng now, full of confidence

despite any challenges, never ever disheartened.

"Luo Feng." The city leader shouted.

"Teacher." Luo Feng said respectfully.

"You haven't truly trained in the usage methods of the Nan Shen 7 forms right." The city leader said.

"Not yet, I just simply comprehended the law side of it and immediately came to visit you." Luo Feng said.

Even though he hadn't trained in it.

He had seen it before, the entire Nan Shen 7 forms, other than the details of the law side, it had 4 special techniques. Among these 4, 3 of them were very strong, and the 4th was the Beast God transformation. Training in the Nan Shen 7 forms would naturally allow one to use this.

It was very simply, however the training for the 3 techniques was incredibly complex.

The city leader nodded, "Xi Luo Duo was also an absolute being of the universe, and the Nan Shen 7 forms has all of his studies, you've only just studied the 1st form, you are still weak and small. Train the others first...they are beneficial. As for creating techniques and your own weapons..."

Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed as he listened intently.

Normally, sector lord pinnacles would all begin to create their own techniques and weapons.

"Other sector lords mostly only comprehend the normal laws. Yet, you are different, you are training in the beast god path." The city leader looked at him. "Creating your own techniques wont be easy. Also...do you know, why do the sector lord pinnacles begin to create their own techniques?"

Luo Feng said respectfully, "It’s because other people’s techniques don’t fit them."

"Right, they don’t fit."

The city leader nodded, "And you haven’t even trained in any of the battle techniques of the Nan Shen 7 forms. Naturally you can’t say that they don’t fit you. Hence what you need to do...is first study hard at all of Xi Luo Duo’s battle techniques. After that, learn from it and go battle! Through countless battles, you will slowly begin to feel...that his techniques aren’t able to unleash your full strength. When that happens, only then will you begin to create your own techniques. With the Nan Shen 7 forms as the foundation, begin to build your own techniques."

"I understand." Luo Feng realized.

The leader didn’t want him to begin creating his own technique simply because others were doing it at the same level, how could his situation be the same with others? He was training in the much tougher beast god path, it was absurdly tough and also extremely powerful.

The true time to create his own techniques was when the pathway was open.

"This beast god armament is a spirit reader weapon suited for unleashing the Nan Shen 7 forms." The leader flipped his hand and a thick heavy shield appeared in mid air. It was completely gold and had some blood red engravings. It was about 2m tall and 1m thick, on the sides were little beast god engravings, it was exquisite.

Luo Feng held his breath.

"It’s called the beast god armament." The city leader laughed, "It’s in memory of the beast god."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

He had never trained in the battle techniques yet, however he had seen them, he naturally knew that back then, Xi Luo Duo had used the beast god armament to dominate the vast universe.

"Of course this isn’t the beast god armament Xi Luo Duo used, the one he used has vanished long ago with him." The city leader said,

"There have been many human warriors that have tried training in the Nan Shen 7 forms. Even though many give up after awhile, they all mostly order this Beast god armament, it naturally became the standard beast god armament weapon. Also, it’s not considered expensive, just average."

Standard?

Not expensive? Average?

Luo feng muttered to himself, he couldn’t trust every word the city leader said, his perspectives were simply too high, Luo Feng’s possession of the golden horned beast was actually only regarded as an above average encounter amidst the trillions of universe races.

"Of course, many that start in the Nan Shen 7 forms are knights. Hence this beast god armament...is enough to make many knights kill for, it’s not that bad." The city leader said.

"Weapons used by knights, being deemed average..." Luo Feng muttered to himself.

Teacher...

Your perspective is simply too high!

"This beast god armament, you can use it from now on. When you want to create your own techniques, it wouldn’t be too late to

create your own weapons then." The city leader floated the shield to Luo Feng.

"Thank you teacher." Luo Feng said gratefully.

He used both hands to receive the shield.

Once he received it.

Chi chi, it was pretty heavy, it was indeed a weapon used by knights. Luo Feng could feel it was comparable to even a destroyer of earth during the Great nirvana. Naturally, when one reached Luo Feng's level, he could easily destroy the earth with one move, this little bit of weight was nothing.

"My teacher asked me to come when I reach sector lord level. The main thing is to advise me and give me this weapon?" Luo Feng thought, simultaneously keeping the Beast god Armament in his world ring.

"Sector lord is the most important period for training. As your teacher, I definitely have to give you a treasure." The city leader said.

Primal chaos city leader!

He was indeed the big boss of the Virtual Universe Company! One of the top 3 in the entire human race. He took out the beast god armament like it was nothing, he still thought his teacher called

him over to simply give him one beast god armament, but it looks like he underestimated his teacher.

"This is a rare treasure, even I'm unable to refine it. If you reveal it's abilities, it would make knights fight over to get it." The city leader smiled. "However this treasure has yet to been made public, it's always been with me. Hence, no other life forms in the universe know of its existence. Naturally its usefulness to me is almost negligible."

Luo Feng held his breath.

Almost?

It meant that this treasure still had some use to his teacher, it would draw attention from even the Knights. Just what was this treasure? His teacher sure was generous.

Hua.

The city leader flipped his hand and the surrounding space shook, a huge treasure floated in the air.

"Ah." Luo Feng looked at it, stunned.

It was a pair of exquisite silver wings, 80 tall and huge as it shook the space about it. Each feather was clearly visible on it, however it was easy to see...that each feather was made from special metals and all of them were extremely sharp. And they were not real

feathers either! These could become weapons themselves.

"So big." Luo Feng muttered softly.

"Once you've refined and absorbed it into your body, it can change in size. When it's big...it can even reach a trillion km and cover the Laos world easily. If you wish so, it can even shrink down smaller than a single cell." The city leader said.

Luo Feng was completely stunned.

Such a powerful weapon?

Smaller than a cell? Bigger than Laos world? It was no wonder that it would make even the knights go crazy go for it. Luckily it had never been exposed, and no other life forms knew of its ability.

"It's called the Shi Wu wings." The city leader said. "You can rely on it to fly and flee or battle. As for its true use and how to use it...I will send a manual to you via the virtual universe network, study it well."

"Yes." Luo Feng said respectfully.

The manual for the Shi Wu wings couldn't be disclosed, hence it was better to do it in the virtual universe.

"Remember, don't divulge information about it. Just from

looking at it, or even if others see you use it, even a knight wouldn’t be able to confirm it’s true ability." The city leader emphasized. "However, if you divulge information on it, the knights crazy for power will definitely come for it."

"I understand." Luo Feng replied respectfully.

"Hm."

The city leader nodded, sighing within.

Ke Di was dead.

Luo Feng...with the Shi Wu wings, should have a much higher chance of survival.

"Go on." The leader waved his hand, "When you are about to leave primal chaos city to go through your life and death trials, come and look for me first."

"Yes teacher." Luo Feng said respectfully.

After which, he was immediately warped out of the primal chaos ruins.

Chapter 747: Universe Limit

After getting the two weapons, the beast god armament and the Shi Wu wings, Luo Feng left the city leader's residence excitedly and returned to his own quiet training quarters. The moment he got back...he immediately connected to the virtual universe network.

Virtual universe Yu Xiang mountain primal region.

"Your majesty, did you request for the nutrition cabin to be sent to primal chaos city?" A clear voice resounded on the screen.

"Yes." Luo Feng sat at his desk and nodded, "Send it as soon as possible."

"Yes."

After which the call ended.

Luo Feng revealed a smile, with different position, one's authority was different too. Back when he first came to primal chaos city, he had mostly always had to listen to orders. Things like sending the nutrition cabin etc, the service wouldn't be this good, sending it personally to primal chaos city. Now it was different...his position was much higher than a primal region sector lord.

"Nan shen 7 forms." Luo Feng waved his hand and a thick book

flew out from the book shelf, landing on the table before him. As for the laptop, he tossed it on a small table beside his sofa.

"I had only briefly seen through the 4 techniques before, never really studying them. Now that I've completed the 1st form's scale formation, I know more about the beast god path, naturally, it's time to learn how to use it." Luo Feng flipped open the thick book. It was half a meter thick, every page however was extremely thin, the 1st volume alone was close to 10,000 pages long.

The 1st 1/3 pages of the 1st volume was information related to studying the laws, mostly on how to train the scale formation.

The remaining 2/3rds was about the 4 techniques and their usage.

The 1st beast god transformation was the easiest to learn. As long as one understood the laws, it could be learnt. However, it was still one of the ultimate paths!

And it was an extremely important one!

This particular move Xi Luo Duo made had let Luo Feng understand a big secret of the universe!

According to Xi Luo Duo:

Using one's body to 100% perfection is something all undyings can do. A true absolute warrior however...can totally exceed that

limit! For example, using 200% to 300% strength instead.

Like Luo Feng, his golden horned beast's natural ability strengthen was strengthening in overall, of which his body strength would double as well.

And deities of the world, it was an extremely valuable technique. The moment it was unleashed, the golden horned beast would shrink and its muscle and bone density would increase at a shocking rate. This would make his strength rise by a few times... the highest was the legendary 36 times.

These were all special techniques used to instantly raise one's strength!

And the body's universe limit was a 100 times! Whether it was through techniques or any other method, the highest was still 100 times.

Same theory.

The spirit energy amplitude had a universe limit of 100 times! Luo Feng's however could reach over 3,200...and as the perfect form was only 100, his was over 32 times that. And according to what he deduced...the final goal of the demon note inheritance was probably 100 times amplitude!

...

100 times, this was the universe limit.

There was no way to exceed that!

Completing the Deities of the world would increase one's amplitude to 36 times, and according to Luo Feng's inherited memories, other than the 1 golden horned beast that created deities of the world back then, the other generations of beasts never ever completed the 3rd level. Very few even made great progress in the 2nd level.

Amplitude of 36 times, it was extremely tough.

Beast god transformation only had 6 levels.

The 1st would amplify 2 times.

The 2nd, 4 times.

The 3rd, 8 times.

...

The 6th, 64 times!

This meant that the great Xi Luo Duo, a being invincible amongst anything below a universe master, could at most amplify his

strength 64 times when he unleashed the beast god transformation. Not even mentioning 64 times...simply being able to reach the 5th level of 32 times alone was already incredible.

...

It could be seen that reaching the universe limit was extremely tough, whether it was the soul amplitude or body amplitude, or not even reaching the limit. Just reaching 50 times...that was enough to stand over countless absolute beings.

Demon note inheritance, many emperor level undyings would go receive the inheritance. Even with such an encounter, many were unable to complete even the 1st level! Those without such an encounter would naturally be even weaker.

10,000 soul control technique, it's pinnacle 10,000 control required one's spirit energy amplitude to reach 10,000, (100 times). However, even the creator of the technique never completed it, it was but an imagination.

The demon note inheritance had stayed in demon note mountain for a countless amount of time.

Yet none had ever fully completed it!

Hard!

Extremely tough!

The universe limit had held back Xi Luo Duo, the creator of the 10,000 soul control and other countless absolute beings.

And Luo Feng's golden horned beast body.

It's true amplifying techniques were Deities of the world and its natural ability strengthen. Of which, deities of the world could amplify his strength 5 times, and strengthen could raise it only 2 times. Hence, using those alone, he could raise his golden horned beast's strength by only 10 times.

Of course, from the black metal Nameless manual, it made the beast's cells evolve and strengthen it by 3 times. However, this was a cellular evolution. It was the foundation! Not a technique that amplified.

Like the blood river energy, using it could instantly change the genes of the right claw, making its right claw become almost like the beast god's, its strength amplifying 11 times from before. However this too was a genetic change, not an amplitude technique.

"Hence genetics and bloodline is very important." Luo Feng thought within.

"With good genes and bloodline, one's basics would far exceed that of others. Even if there were two sector lord pinnacles, a golden horned beast's body attack strength will be already 10 times that of a human sector lord pinnacle. Stronger in foundation by 10

times...I have to say, that black metal Nameless manual is incredibly terrifying." Luo Feng couldn't help but exclaim.

He had acquired that black metal on earth and gotten the incomplete Nameless manual's 1st level.

Just it's 1st level alone, its price was immeasurable.

Normally when one reached domain lord or sector lord pinnacle, their bodies would no longer be able to evolve. However, relying on this nameless manual...raising one's genetic makeup by another 3 times! This wasn't an instantaneous amplification, but a true evolution of the genes...raising the foundation altogether. This was definitely against the universe laws!

"A manual that goes against the universe laws, it's a pity there's only that 1st level." Luo Feng thought. "If I have all 9 levels, this nameless manual...it's price would far exceed any manual I know of."

The 1st beast transformation was a body amplification, similar to Deities of the world and the demon note inheritance and other amplification techniques.

The 2nd Beast god armament was a technique to use the Beast god armament. This was a true technique Xi Luo Duo had used to dominate the universe, killing many others. It seemed like a simple standard Beast god armament, however in Xi Luo Duo's hands, it could decimate almost everything dominating trillions of races.

The 3rd technique was the Beast god howl, this was a soul defense technique, and was similar to the Void pagoda Luo Feng studied. However, it was much stronger than that. No matter who it was, as long as he had a soul, it was necessary for them to study soul defense. And Xi Luo Duo was a spirit reader, hence the soul defense technique he created was naturally extremely powerful.

The 4th was Beast god run, this was used to flee. The universe was vast and mysterious, with many ambushes hidden within. Being strong in battle was one thing, however what truly determined how long one lived was his ability to flee. Like Undying knight, going through countless life or death situations, treating the universe secret regions like his own garden, surviving through everything!

Like the primal chaos guardian, having many separate bodies, this was a survival technique.

Beast god run, if trained well, could raise one’s survival chances by at least 10 times!

4 techniques.

1 for body amplification, 1 for spirit weapon attacks, 1 for soul defense, 1 for fleeing.

"The names of the 4 techniques sure are interesting. Beast god transformation, Beast god armament, Beast god howl and Beast god run, haha. It truly is a manual designed to fully transform one into a beast god." Luo Feng smiled. On his shoulder, Babata

suddenly shouted, "Luo Feng, why are there no soul amplification techniques?"

"How would I know." Luo feng shook his head.

He didn’t know…

The beast god was a path of the body. Not a soul path.

Hence, the fusion of the gold and space laws with the final goal of becoming a beast god, it was only a body amplification, it didn’t have any soul amplification.

As for Xi Luo Duo himself, he naturally had other encounters. He knew other soul amplification techniques, the only thing was, they weren’t created by him.

…

4 techniques.

Everyone of them was extremely crucial and profound, and after carefully studying them, Luo Feng was even more shocked. He didn’t even have any thoughts about creating his own techniques. His city leader teacher was right…learn the great techniques of the elders first, and once he had fully comprehended them, through battles and all, he would someday feel they weren’t fully unleashing his strength. Only then would it be a good time to create his own techniques.

He was still learning the basics now, it was better to study these 4 of Xi Luo Duo’s techniques.

Du.

"Luo Feng, there’s a call request." Babata shouted.

"Accept." Luo Feng gently tapped the air and a screen appeared.

On it was a white bearded white robed old man. He was the manager of the primal region, Ai Tuo Er. He bowed slightly and said, "Your majesty Luo feng, There’s a briefcase with a manual here for you."

"Ah?" Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

The city leader had said that he would send someone who would bring the details about the Shi Wu wings.

"I’m coming." Luo Feng immediately closed the call, sou, he flew out of his windows.

He rushed into the skies and headed straight for the entrance of the primal region.

In the blink of an eye, he had arrived.

There at the entrance stood a few maids, Ai Tuo Er the undying stood there too, he held a silver briefcase.

"The standard Beast god armament, my teacher the city leader doesn’t care too much about. However he did say these Shi Wu wings were a true treasure that hadn’t been seen by the universe yet, who knows what wonders it holds." Luo Feng was very clear that such a treasure would take him an extremely long time to train in to fully understand it, looking at the manual would speed things up a lot more.

"Thanks." Luo Feng landed and received the briefcase.

"Haha, I heard you’ve become a true disciple of the primal chaos city leader. Congratulations." Ai Tuo Er said passionately.

Luo Feng looked at him shocked, this was the manager of the primal region, he sure was well informed.

Chapter 748: A Long 300 Years

Luo Feng carried the briefcase back to his villa.

"Pa." He sat on his sofa and opened the case, and in it a grey book lay within.

He lifted it and took a look.

"So it’s like that."

He nodded and continued to read.

Shi Wu wings: A treasure suitable for one trained in the fusion of the gold and space laws. As it’s suited for this fusion, the city leader gave it to Luo Feng. The origin of this item was a mystery. It’s material was incredibly sturdy, so much so that even a universe master wouldn’t be able to destroy it.

The city leader didn’t walk the path of the beast god, hence he wouldn’t be able to use it perfectly. However his vision and perspective was incredibly broad, he was able to see its true power.

The Shi Wu wings was mainly used for fleeing.

According to the research, the city leader had discovered that the wings should have 3 forms.

The 1st form was its normal form, after completing the Nan Shen 7 forms' 1st level, one would be able to trigger it. Using the wings, one's flying movement would be incredibly unpredictable.

The 2nd form was where the wings would change, after completing the Nan Shen 7 forms' 3rd form, the bone transformation, one would be able to unleash this 2nd form of the Shi Wu wings. When used, there would be a massive space disruption in the area, and that disruption would be the domain of the Shi wu wings.

The 3rd form, after completing the 5th form, Horned section of the Nan Shen 7 forms, one would be able to unleash this 3rd form. When used, it would become a space tide, flying within this tide wouldn't affect the wings at all.

Of course...

As its material was so sturdy even a universe master wouldn't be able to break through, as long as they wrapped around the owner, it was a very good defensive item which was able to disperse a lot of attacks. And the feathers weren't exactly real feathers, but sharp piercing knives.

In flight, they could be used to attack and slash through anything!

"There's a technique at the back of this book, most of humanity doesn't have wings. Hence, the usage of such items are incredibly limited. I believe you've never trained in such a technique before

too! However, this Shi Wu wings should be your strongest treasure. In order to unleash it well, I've prepared a technique called Universe line, this is one that has space as the main law and gold as the secondary law."

...

Fleeing and survival ability is very important.

After studying Beast god run and Universe line, Luo Feng immediately began to search through the golden horned beast's inherited memories for techniques. The golden horned beast had wings, and there were huge amounts of such techniques for the usage of its wings! Luo Feng searched through and began to study them.

Looking through Beast god run and Universe line, Luo Feng's perspectives had grown. He quickly found a technique specialized in fleeing, this had some similarities with the other two techniques...its name was Universe Strike Travel.

"Amongst my 3 bodies, the golden horned beast is the strongest."

"Naturally, the strong would work best with the strong! This Shi Wu wings will go to the beast."

"And this Universe Strike Travel, it's created by one of the ancestors of the golden horned beast, it's very suited for its use. I'll use it as the main technique, and Beast god run and Universe line

as the secondary."

In the study.

On his screen, there was a silhouette covered in fog, it said with a low voice, "Primal region sector lord member Luo Feng, you've passed the domain lord primal sky mountain, hence the Virtual Universe Company will reward you with 3 billion points. You can use this to exchange for items that will add to you strength, this will give you a higher chance of survival in the outer region wars."

"Understood." Luo feng stood before the screen.

"We hope you'll be able to survive and return from the wars." After which, the silhouette cut off the connection.

Luo Feng smiled, his eyes filled with excitement.

It's finally here!

"3 billion points." Luo Feng checked his points, 3 billion had just been transferred to his account.

"I'll first check and exchange for the materials required for Deities of the world." Luo Feng sat before his laptop and searched through. Even though he had searched before, he didn't exactly check how to use the least amount of points to get the best effect. "Babata, help me calculate, with my 3 billion points...how far can I raise Deities of the world."

"Yes, calculating." Babata blinked on his shoulder, "Complete."

"3 billion points will be able to raise Deities of the world to amplify your strength by 7.9 times." Babata said.

The 1st level was 3 times.

The 2nd was 9 times, however that required over 10 billion points to complete.

"7.9?" Luo feng frowned, "How much does 7.5 times require?"

"2.12 billion points." Babata said.

"Very good." Luo Feng nodded, "Help me exchange."

He didn’t even hesitate, immediately exchanging for the items. Luo Feng was very clear on the logic of the strong going with the strong. The golden horned beast’s body was over a 100 times stronger than his earth body, even adding multiple times of his earth body ‘s strength wouldn’t be any good. It was better to simply amplify the beast’s strength!

"Exchange successful, a total of 2.12 billion points have been spent, and the materials will arrive in primal chaos city within 6 months." Babata said. He couldn’t help but shout out, "Damn, 2.12 billion points, and this is with your huge discount. If it was cash,

even 5 billion mixed elements wouldn't be enough. Damn...it's enough to make a poor emperor level undying go completely bankrupt."

Luo Feng laughed.

He continued to search for information on how to make his cloud contact vine, star eating plant and the bug clan queen become undying. For the two plants to breakthrough...the price was extremely high. And there wasn't even a 100% chance at all.

For example...

The best option for the 100 vine star eating plant to have a chance of breaking through to an undying was at 80%, and the price required however was 10.86 million points.

The 300 vine star eating plant, it's best method would only be at 60% chance, and the cost was 920 million points.

As for the 1,000 vine star eating plant, the best method would only yield a 30% chance, and the cost was close to 120 billion points.

The higher it climbed, the more terrifying the costs were.

And the chances of breaking through kept going lower. Whoever spent 120 billion points but failed in making his 1,000 vine star eating plant break through to undying would definitely feel the

pinch.

When it came to the 108 vine cloud contact vine, the best method had a 80% chance, and the cost was 18.1 million points.

For the 216 vines cloud contact vine, the best method had a 50% chance, and the cost was 1.53 billion points.

As for the 360 vines cloud contact vine, the best method had a 40% chance of breaking through, and the cost was close to 11.6 billion points.

These were the best methods.

If one spent lesser, and used lousier methods, the chances of breakthrough would be even lower. When Hu Yan Bo's cloud contact vine broke through back then, luck played a big part. As his investment and method wasn't exactly the best...his chances were only 40%, however he still succeeded.

Exchanging for materials and treasures!

Exchanging for Time space scribbles 4th, 5th and 6th volumes!

Exchanging for some automaton weapons! Many such weapons were prohibitten, Luo Feng's authority however was high enough for him to purchase them! Even though the price of these weapons was extremely high, it was usable by weak warriors, giving them the ability to fight the strong.

...

Large amounts of point usage!

He used the 3 billion points till only a pitiful two hundred million was left. He then used it to exchange for many other items, things that could help raise his strength further and also deal with crisis.

...

Time passed, in a flash, it had been 300 years since he became sector lord. (Actual universe 1,000 years)

Within primal chaos city, countless warriors sat crossed legged on their balconies.

Luo Feng sat crossed legged on his and looked up at the space tears with the universe laws revolving about.

"Hahaha..."

He suddenly laughed and got up.

"300 years, I've been able to study the 9 universe tablet a total of 18 times. I've finally comprehended the 4th Star picture and the 5th Galaxy picture." Luo Feng was happy within. Normal study of the 5th picture gave one the capability of passing the 15th level of

the heavenly bridge, which was comparable to the 1st level of the Nan Shen 7 forms.

However, it was much easier than the 1st level of the Nan Shen 7 forms.

Including the 108 wonders that he had completed earlier on, along with the 18 times of study of the tablet...his efficiency had risen greatly. Even if he needed to concentrate on the 2nd level of the Nan Shen 7 forms alongside it, he wouldn't require 300 years.

"It's a pity that the 2nd level of the Nan Shen 7 forms is much harder than the 1st. Even after 300 years, I barely scratched the surface of it."

Sou!

He jumped down and landed below, walking to his door and gently touched the door.

The color began to change back to white.

"I've stayed here for over 1200 years." Luo Feng said softly, "Over 4,000 years have passed in the actual universe. Most of my time since I've been born have been used training, and now...I can't bear to leave."

"It's time I left."

Luo Feng shook his head.

He turned and left towards the not too distant True Yan’s residence. Before leaving primal chaos city, he had to bid goodbye to his two teachers.

"Junior Luo Feng."

"Junior."

Walking within, he would occasionally see his seniors who would wave at him passionately. After knowing the face that he had become the true disciple of the primal chaos city leader, they naturally treated him much better.

"Teacher is that way." A senior pointed.

Luo Feng arrived before the yard.

"Come in." A voice resounded from within.

Luo Feng stepped in and saw True Yan sitting before a table, with wine in a bamboo pot.

"Teacher." Luo Feng bowed respectfully.

"Are you leaving?" True Yan continued to drink.

"Yes." Luo Feng bowed respectfully.

True Yan glanced at him, "Go on, don’t spoil my reputation!"

"Hm." Luo Feng knelt down respectfully, bowing very heavily before getting up, "I’ll be leaving teacher."

He turned to head out.

True Yan looked at his back and shouted, "Come back alive. Also bring some good wine, I haven’t tasted any good wine from you yet."

"I will definitely bring some when I return." Luo Feng said as he vanished into the distance.

Chapter 749: Leaving Primal Chaos City

Walking out of True Yan's residence, Luo Feng had made up his mind to make a name for himself.

He has had three teachers so far, one of them was Hu Yan Bo, another was True Yan and the third one was the primal chaos city leader. In terms of relationship...True Yan was without doubt the top, as he had spent so much time with him, and True Yan was also very dedicated in teaching him. It was almost like a father teaching his child. Just buying the Nan Shen 7 forms alone, that was a debt Luo feng found hard to repay.

One had to know that True Yan wasn't a knight, the cost of buying the first half of the Nan Shen 7 forms was extremely high for him.

"Your majesty Luo Feng."

"Your majesty Luo Feng."

The undying guards within the city leader's residence all said respectfully, opening a path for him.

Luo Feng stepped into the residence and quickly reached the yard, with a deep breath, he stepped in...

Scattered corpses laid throughout the entire vast continent. One had to know that this was reality and not the virtual universe. All

the bodies were real, not decaying over countless years, it was obvious all these were undying bodies, just the energies from them alone was terrifying.

"Teacher." Luo Feng walked towards the man sitting crossed legged and bowed.

The city leader stood up and turned to look at Luo Feng.

"Are you prepared to leave primal chaos city?" His eyes were calm and vast like the ocean.

"Yes." Luo Feng replied.

"Hm, it’s time you went out and explored." The city leader nodded. "Where are you prepared to head out to? Universe secret region? Outer region wars?"

"Outer region wars." Luo Feng said respectfully.

Sector lords were required to go through life or death training, this was the long time tradition of the Virtual Universe Company.

The life or death training was split into two types. One was the outer region wars and the other was the secret regions. Both places were extremely dangerous, the outer region wars were where the races battled each other. There were many warriors hidden within , and a combined army’s force...even if they were weaker individually than Luo Feng, the combined attacks could end him

immediately.

As for the secret regions, they were also comparable to the outer region wars. Just like how Luo Feng's senior Ke Di had fallen in one of the secret regions, some of the dangers there were enough to make knights fall!

"Outer region wars?" The city leader frowned. "There are many races hidden out there. You are now my true disciple, and are also regarded as a rare genius of 10 million eras. Countless warriors will have made plans to kill you, the moment you head there...I'm afraid..."

Luo Feng smiled, "I understand, I've been ambushed by the bug clan before. And that was even before my reputation had grown. The bug clan did all they could to kill me in Wu Long star field. And right now, they are probably willing to sacrifice even more to kill me."

"Bug clan!"

The city leader snorted coldly, the surrounding vast space immediately shook.

Luo Feng was shocked.

He could feel the city leader's rage the moment the bug clan was mentioned.

"Automaton race, Demons, bug clans, the 3 pinnacle races that are neighbors to our territory." The city leader said coldly. "As they are nearby, anybody that wants to expand or doesn’t want to be invaded has to go to war! Among these 3 races...the bug clan is the most sinister. As they have many underhanded methods, you have to be most careful of them when you head to the outer region wars!"

Luo Feng nodded, "Yes teacher."

"You must be prudent, because your senior Ke Di fell to them." The city leader emphasized, "His strength, his self preservation methods etc, were much more than yours currently. You only received 3 billion points to buy large amounts of items. He on the other hand had passed the sector lord primal sky mountain, getting 100 billion points! His treasures all far exceed yours, he also had many encounters, still he fell."

Luo Feng shook within, "I will be prudent."

Right.

He had thought that he had many techniques and methods. However, he recalled the last few words Hu Yan Bo had told Babata to tell him...One had to always hold respect for the universe, and keep a humble heart. This was the mindset of a lone warrior undying exploring the universe.

"Never ever get proud, the moment you get careless, you might lose your life." Luo Feng warned himself.

"The inter race wars are extremely brutal, as they are wars for survival, over countless years, countless warriors have fallen. The grudge between each race grows more and more, it's already reached a very terrifying level!" The city leader turned and looked at the vast land of countless corpses, "Look at all these bodies."

"Hm."

Luo Feng looked about, countless bodies, some as big as 1,000km tall, some less than half a meter, some metal life forms, energy life forms etc...the energy levels were all different, some no weaker than a living Shi Huo knight.

"These are all beings I've killed personally." He said softly. "Just me alone, I've killed countless other warriors, and this is not even a fraction of it, there are many that have been reduced to nothing by energy ripples."

"Humanity hates other races."

"They hate us too."

"It's not clear who's right or wrong, or maybe nobody's wrong, it's simply for survival. A weaker race will want to get stronger, the strong will find ways to control and stop them." The city leader said softly. "The massacres are endless. Even though I have the ability to revive, the cost of it is too much."

"Revival?" Luo Feng was shocked.

The city leader glanced at Luo Feng, "Universe masters control time and space, naturally they can reverse time and space!"

"Even if you die! I can reverse time and space and return it to a time before you died, reviving you within." The city leader shook his head and sighed. "The theory is simple, the cost however is extremely high. Afterall, reviving a soul that had been destroyed goes against the universe laws, it would get a backlash from the universe laws."

"I can withstand the backlash from reviving an official or emperor level undying."

"However, if I revive a knight, even I would be heavily injured. Some pinnacle beings amongst the knights, like Xi Luo Duo...if I revive him, just the backlash alone would probably make me fall." The city leader said, "If I die, there's no one that can revive me."

Luo Feng was shocked.

What a terrifying price.

The backlash from reviving a knight was actually enough to heavily damage the primal chaos city leader. Reviving a pinnacle being like Xi Luo Duo would even make him fall.

"Reversing time and space, reviving the dead, one would not only

receive a backlash from the universe laws." He shook his head, "There are many flaws in this heavenly technique, of which I cannot explain everything shortly, it makes it so that I can only try to bring you back if you die. Like your senior Ke Di, I had no way to revive him. Hence you have to be prudent...when they make a move against you, they'll definitely think of a way to stop me from reviving you."

"Understood." Luo Feng nodded.

"Remember!" He emphasized, "The most important thing is that don't ever let your soul be possessed or taken control of. The moment you become a soul slave, even I have no way to save you."

Luo Feng was shocked, becoming a soul slave was indeed the end.

"If you receive a soul attack you cannot withstand, self destruct. That would still be the better choice than becoming a soul slave." He stared at Luo Feng.

"Self destruct?" Luo Feng nodded.

"This is my keepsake." He flipped his hand, a gold card appeared, on it were faint engravings, the picture of a city.

Luo Feng received it respectfully.

"If you encounter a danger you cannot deal with, you can immediately destroy this card. The material that makes up this

card is very weak, it’s only C9 grade alloy, you can easily destroy it. It has my spirit imprint, and the moment you destroy it, I will know and will rush over in a short time!" The city leader emphasized.

Luo Feng nodded.

"Of course...I hope you won’t ever be forced to use it." The city leader looked at him, "I hope...for you to rely on your own strength and become an absolute warrior. Then the other races cannot touch you. Before you leave, I have one last thing to tell you..."

"Remember, survival is number 1." He emphasized, "With an absolute survival method, the other races won’t dare to mess with you. Like undying knight of the Huge Axe Dojo...his strength is at knight pinnacle level, however his survival ability is very strong. Even the universe masters would find it extremely hard to kill him. The moment one cannot kill...he would get revenge, while he may not be your match, he can take it out on your disciples and race people."

Luo Feng got a revelation as he heard this.

Right.

Survival ability was not something to be messed with. If you can’t kill him, don’t make a move against him, otherwise messing with such an unkillable enemy would bring only trouble.

"I do not need you to become like undying knight, his survival ability is simply absurd. However try your best to raise your survival skills." He emphasized, "Don’t ever think...that you are absolutely safe, even up to my level, I do not dare say such words."

"I will remember this well." Luo Feng said gratefully.

"Go on!"

"Go and explore the universe!" The city leader waved his hand.

Luo Feng knelt and bid goodbye to his teacher.

Shua!

Luo Feng was immediately warped out of the primal chaos ruins.

...

He glanced at the yard, then turned and left.

There were frequent ships that flew through the universe pathways between the primal universe and the Virtual Universe Company’s headquarters in the actual universe. Luo Feng decided to leave that day, checking up on the schedules and requesting to leave.

Sou!

He rushed into the sky and headed to the air, there floated a huge ship.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, we are all ready." The purple robed undying stood there at the entrance and smiled passionately at him.

Luo Feng glanced back at primal chaos city. This was where he had lived for 1,200 years, the place where his teachers True Yan and the primal chaos city leader were.

"It’s time to go."

He flew into the ship.

Hua!

The cabin door shut, "Rumble..." The ship began to fly deep through the primal chaos energies.

Chapter 750: Luo Feng's Bug Army

Primal universe, Virtual Universe Company headquarters.

It was an extremely vast continent, bigger than even the Laos world of the gold horn race. This, was the Virtual Universe Company's headquarters!

"Rumble...." Within the core, two heavy doors automatically opened, revealing a magnificent pathway.

This was the universe pathway!

It connected the primal universe with the actual universe, a ship flew through and later accelerated...within a few minutes, it finally landed at a gathering spot.

Hua! The cabin door opened.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, please."

"Your majesty Luo Feng."

Everyone else standing at the entrance was incredibly passionate and humble towards him, even the two emperor level undyings stood at the side and allowed him to pass first! The news of every disciple of the primal chaos city leader was made public, and their position was incredibly high. Luo Feng's authority naturally stood

above many emperor level undyings now.

He stepped out and landed on the ground.

"Your majesty Luo feng, this way please, we will swiftly leave the headquarters. And along this way...you will find the gathering spot 3 space." The host of the universe ship guided him passionately.

"Thank you." Luo Feng smiled.

"No problem." The host said.

Luo feng turned and walked alone towards the pathway that headed towards the 3rd gathering space.

...

As he walked along, Luo Feng easily crossed hundreds of thousands of km every second, after a few minutes, he reached the pathway.

"Wow." Luo Feng looked at the screen before him. He couldn't help but exclaim, "36 fixed space pathways!"

These 36 pathways were headed in 36 different sections of humanity's territories. One had to know that the costs of god country teleportation were incredibly shocking, and these fixed pathways connected the headquarters to many regions, as many

undyings frequently used these. As the demand was huge, it had become the norm.

Since the costs were much lower, even those able to use god country teleportation would rather use these pathways. Saving money!

Luo Feng naturally didn’t lack money, he was even nurturing 3 star eating plants and a cloud contact vine, and he had successfully made the 100 vine star eating plant breakthrough to undying. He was able to use god country teleportation. It was a pity the time it had become undying had been too short, he hadn’t left any markers about the universe, hence he couldn’t use it to teleport to other areas.

"Hm! With the 100 vine plant breaking through to undying, I can make a few hidden undying crystals from the plant." Luo Feng thought. "In dire times, I’ll be able to teleport to these places."

"Your majesty Luo feng?"

A smartly dressed green skinned man walked over from afar, his body emanated powerful life energy.

"Hm? Undying?" Luo Feng looked at him curiously. Most of the staff around were all sector lords or domain lords, there were very few undyings sent here to do work. From the looks of it...he should be the head of the staff here.

"Your majesty has requested to be sent to the 9th division, we received the news long ago. Hence I, Pupuka, have been here waiting for you. Please follow me." The green skinned man smiled.

"Thank you." Luo Feng smiled.

"Haha, no problem." After getting Luo Feng's thanks, this Pupuka who was in charge of the 3rd gathering spot was all smiles. He passionately led Luo Feng to a space pathway. The space pathway...from a glance, was just like a rippling water screen.

"9th division, it's the closest to Wu Long starfield." Pupuka said passionately.

Luo Feng nodded.

He stepped through the water screen.

...

The space pathways were using the god countries and teleportation points. These undyings had given up their god countries, of course...even under such circumstances, their god countries were kept incredibly safe.

Through the space pathway, in an instant, they travelled over a hundred million light years. After which Luo Feng sat in the Yun Mo planet ship and began to head to Wu Long starfield.

Within the control room.

Luo Feng was sipping some wine, pondering.

"While travelling at a steady 50 times light speed, in half a month, we'll arrive at Wu Long starfield." Babata said.

"Hm."

Luo Feng nodded, sending his consciousness into the virtual universe network.

...

Virtual universe Yu Xiang mountain Primal region, sitting before his desk, he gently tapped the screen on his laptop.

"Purchasing 10,000 sector lord pinnacle bug clan corpse units."

"Confirm."

"With a 60% discount, it costs 60 million points."

"Points deducted."

Luo Feng looked at his remaining points, he only had 180 million points left, he couldn't help but exclaim at his lack of points. However...these were meant to be used in crucial times. Hence, buying the 10,000 sector lord pinnacle bug corpse units was already something he had planned long ago.

"Du!"

"Your majesty Luo Feng, you just purchased 10,000 sector lord pinnacle bug corpse units. Where should we send it to?" A voice resounded from the screen.

"I will go directly to Wulong to starfield to pick them." Luo Feng said.

After which he closed the call.

Luo Feng revealed a smile, disconnecting from the virtual universe.

Within his vast internal world.

Bug clan island.

Countless 30m tall sector lord pinnacle tiger armored bugs lived on this island. There were also few 20m tall, streamlined Hunting mantis kings, and even fewer 6m tall Shadow spear kings! And right in the center of the island, was an over 1,000m tall mother nest.

Sou!

Mosha Luo feng appeared in mid air and floated above the island.

"Alina." Luo Feng gazed downwards.

"Master." A beam of light shot out from the mother nest, it was the absolute beauty bug clan queen Alina.

Rumble!

Millions of sector lord pinnacle bugs all knelt down respectfully, showing their respect to Luo Feng.

"There are 3 million tiger armored bugs, 10,000 hunting mantis kings and 1,000 shadow spear kings." Black clothed Luo Feng smiled, "Alina, you've done well."

"Working for master is my honor." Her voice was gentle.

Luo Feng nodded.

The last time he came to Wu Long starfield he had taken away 400 units of sector lord bug corpses, of which 300 units were taken when he was ambushed. Those however weren't considered top tier! It could at most produce about over 3 million tiger armored bugs, and the 100 units he had bought was the best, it could

produce close to 1.8 million tiger armored bugs.

With the 2 combined!

He finally managed to get 3 million tiger armored bugs, 10,000 hunting mantis kings and 1,000 shadow spear kings.

The number of soldiers the bug clan queen could control was limited. For example, if she wanted to control all of them to attack at once, that was not possible. She could at most control 10,000 of them to do it! This was the limit, the moment the number exceeded that, she would be unable to make all of them attack.

As the numbers grew, the control would get more ragged.

When the numbers reached 1 million, the queen could at most control countless soldiers to attack and withdraw, as for the precision...it wasn't as precise.

If the numbers exceeded 1 million, reaching a few millions and above 10 million!

She would be unable to even gather all of them in one spot.

"10,000 was the limit."

"1 million was another barrier." Luo Feng thought." As long as the soldier numbers are within 10,000, the soldiers would be precise,

even infused with laws, akin to humans. When their numbers are within 1 million...it can at most be like a perfect army, coordinated and directed. But, anything over that...it would get messy."

This was also why the undying bug clan queen would never control over 10,000 undying bug soldiers!

"Alina." Luo Feng said.

"Master." She replied respectfully.

"I'm prepared to make a million king soldier army." Luo Feng said.

"Bug clan kings, 1 million?" She was shocked.

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded, "Tiger armored kings."

Tiger armored bugs were huge with strong defense and attack.

Compared to the hunting mantis, they were slower. However in other areas, they were comparable. For the million strong army, speed wasn't a required thing.

"Master, creating 1 sector lord pinnacle tiger armored king, has the cost of creating 100 sector lord pinnacle normal tiger armored bugs." Alina said, "The king's body is incredibly tough, his strength and attacks are about 10 times that of a normal tiger armored

bugs." She said.

If the million strong tiger armored bug army, battled against a 10,000 tiger armored king army.

The million strong army would definitely win!

However...

One hundred million tiger armored bugs army, compared to a million strong king army, the million kings would definitely win. As it exceeds one million...with just Alina controlling everything, she wouldn't be able to control so many soldiers.

"Master, you are sure you want to make them?" she asked.

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded, "How long will it take?"

"Producing the kings will actually be faster." She said. "As I can easily make endless streams of star and universe levels tiger armored bugs, the burden on me is actually less. It'll take more time during their killing and massacre process, producing the many sector lord pinnacle tier armored kings! I can probably produce about 100 every day."

"100 a day...The million strong army will take 30 years." Luo Feng nodded.

"Thanks for your work Alina." Luo Feng said.

"No trouble at all." She said happily. "Producing soldiers is a way for the queen to strengthen herself, I've never had so many materials before for me to make so many soldiers."

Luo Feng smiled, "The bug corpses will come in about half a month."

The ship continued to progress, after half a month of flying, it finally reached Wu Long starfield.

"Wu Long starfield."

Luo Feng stood within the control room, gazing at the endless vast goods that filled up the entire space. "Million sector lord king army! Also...Mysterious Silver armor! These two are extremely important in my plans, finally...they'll be in my hands."

Chapter 751: Wu Long Starfield

Wu Long starfield, Long Jue emperor's palace.

At this time, the 5 managers of Wu Long starfield were gathered here.

"Life is so fickle, Luo Feng was so pitiful the last time he was bullied by Yan Zhu emperor. In the blink of an eye, only a few thousand years have passed." Long Jue emperor shook his head. "The tables have turned now, Yan Zhu is now in the 9th jail hell, imprisoned for 1,000 eras, and Luo Feng is soaring, becoming the disciple of the primal chaos city leader."

"Long Jue emperor, you'll have to help us this time." The skinny Da Nian emperor put down his wine glass. "The last time Yan Zhu treated Luo feng like that, we all didn't even stop him. I'm afraid... he will remember it."

"Hm." Yin Ge emperor nodded too.

"Long Jue emperor, we'll rely on you to persuade him." Ceng Yu emperor said.

To be able to take on the position of manager here, it showed they all knew how to deal with people. They were clear on the fact that even though Luo Feng was still unable to do anything to them, and they were a different level of power with him at the moment. However what about the future? The way he's growing, he may become the new Shi Huo knight!

The moment his strength grew, dealing with them would be easy.

Those petty and vengeful warriors, there were plenty of them.

"Haha...relax." Long Jue emperor nodded and smiled. He was however proud within, him helping them out would mean they would owe him a favor.

"I'll have to thank his majesty Luo Feng too." Beside them sat a handsome man.

In terms of beauty, Yan Zhu back then was so beautiful it was hard to tell whether he was a man or lady.

This man however was easily distinguishable as a man.

"If it weren't for him, I wouldn't be here." The man smiled.

"Haha Qi Li emperor, you'll have to thank him."

"Hm, indeed."

"Otherwise, Yan Zhu wouldn't be chased away so easily."

the other 4 all laughed.

Suddenly...

"Lord, lord." A silver armored sector lord rushed in from outside, kneeling respectfully, "His majesty Luo Feng has already arrived."

"Luo Feng?" Long Jue and the others were shocked.

Hua.

The 5 got up simultaneously.

"Let's go welcome him." Da Nian Emperor said.

"Hm."

The 5 managers rushed out, as they were clear on Luo Feng's relationship with Long Jue emperor. They guessed that he would come here first, hence they had all gathered here to welcome him.

Outside the palace.

Luo Feng had already kept his Yun Mo planet ship and stood outside the entrance.

"Luo Feng." A powerful voice resounded.

Luo Feng turned and saw 5 people approaching, smiling, "Long Jue emperor, ah, Da Nian emperor, Yin Ge emperor, Ceng Yu emperor too." Even though he wasn't vengeful against the other 3 emperors, he didn't have a good impression of them. Back then when Yan Zhu wanted to jail him in the jail hell, the 3 simply stood there and did nothing to stop him.

"We knew that you were coming, so we've been waiting for you here." The tall and skinny Da Nian emperor smiled.

"Ah." Luo Feng nodded without saying anything else.

"Luo Feng, let me introduce you." Long Jue emperor smiled and pointed to the handsome man beside him, "This is Qi Li emperor from the Huge Axe Dojo."

"Qi Li emperor?" Luo Feng looked over.

Damn.

Another handsome fellow. Back then Yan Zhu had reached such a level of beauty, and even though this man before him wasn't at that level, he was definitely a dashing guy.

"The emperors that the Huge Axe Dojo sends out, are they all handsome fellows?" Luo Feng muttered to himself.

"Greetings your majesty." Qi Li smiled. "I just took on this position, haha, I really have to thank you for this. If it weren't for

your incident and Yan Zhu emperor being locked up in the 9th jail hell, I wouldn't be here... Thank you your majesty."

Luo feng immediately smiled, ah, looks like this Qi Li wasn't on the same side as Yan Zhu.

"Luo feng, let's go in, we can sit and discuss matters." Long Jue emperor said.

"Go go go, let's go in."

"Your majesty, please."

They were all incredibly passionate, as Luo feng showed them respect. With the 5 managers' welcoming him, he entered the palace. This scene made all the sector lord guards about mutter amongst themselves...just who was this, able to make the 5 managers welcome him so passionately.

...

Within the palace.

A luxurious banquet was spread out as the 6 of them sat down.

"In the blink of an eye, 4,000 years had passed already. In the past, Luo Feng you were still a normal primal region member. Now, you've already become the primal chaos city leader's

disciple." Long Jue emperor lifted his wine glass, "I respect you, come, let’s toast to that."

"Damn."

Everybody lifted their glasses, Luo Feng followed suit.

Bottoms up!

"Luo..." Long Jue emperor was about to say something when Luo feng smiled, "Long Jue emperor, we can discuss these later. I’m here at Wu Long starfield this time to purchase bug corpse units, naturally I want to go search for treasure too. Hence, we’ll discuss business first and settle the matters."

"Alright, we’ll get to work." Long Jue emperor nodded.

"We should get to work."

"Business is more important." The other managers all chimed in.

Luo Feng was shocked.

There was a saying on earth, "The poor are ignored in the busiest streets, the rich will find relatives in the deepest mountains" One theory, when one is weak, the emperors with power didn’t care about him at all, they were all either cold or arrogant before him, in all, they weren’t exactly smiling when they met him the first

time.

However after he became the disciple of the primal chaos city leader, every word he said, they complied.

"Forget it." Luo Feng's dissatisfaction towards them within dissolved. "They are all in charge of business departments, they should be used to such matters."

"Luo Feng, you purchased 10,000 sector lord pinnacle bug corpse units, since you've already ordered, then it's simple." Long Jue emperor smiled, "I'll arrange for people to go to the storage area and bring over the 10,000 units. Ah, since the size of this deal is huge, it'll have to go and discuss it with the other 4 managers."

"No problem."

"I will definitely pick the best 10,000 units for your majesty."

"Relax."

Qi Li emperor was still ok. The other 3 were obviously much more passionate than before, they were obviously trying to make amends for the actions before, since their goal was achieved, Luo Feng was pleased with the scene.

"How long will it take?" Luo Feng asked.

"Within 10 days." Long Jue emperor said confidently.

"So fast?" Luo Feng was shocked.

The last time he bought 100 units, it took quite long. But this time it was 10,000 units, the time required however was shorter.

"I'll arrange for 100 members to head straight to where the best units are kept." Yin Ge emperor laughed. "Naturally it'll be very fast. Your majesty just needs to rest here, and within 10 days you'll receive your bug corpses."

...

Within his 10 short days in Wu Long Starfield, the 5 emperors brainstormed and used all sorts of methods to make him happy and enjoy his stay. Luo Feng realized just how important strength and position was.

"Your majesty." Long Jue emperor's voice resounded within the entire palace.

Luo feng walked out.

Two maids stood by the entrance, in the distance, Long Jue emperor swiftly walked over, one step crossing over 1,000km.

"Long Jue emperor." Luo Feng smiled, "What's the matter, have

the bug corpse units all been gathered?"

"Yes they have." Long Jue emperor nodded and smiled. With a flip of his hand, a black world ring appeared, "10,000 bug corpse units all in here."

"Ah?"

Luo Feng received it happily. This world ring was without an owner, hence he easily used his world energy to enter it and begin to check the 10,000 sector lord pinnacle bug corpse units. From the looks of it, Luo Feng couldn't help but reveal a smile.

"Long Jue emperor, Da Nian emperor, Yin Ge emperor, they were are generous and straightforward." Luo Feng was happy. "These 10,000 units, their average standard is even better than the 100 units I bought the last time."

The last time he bought 100 sector lord units, he could produce about 1.8 million tiger armored bugs, it was already top tier. And ordering through the virtual universe network, he also roughly knew the standards. If he had ordered the shipment to be sent to him, the 100 units he bought would roughly produce 1 million bug soldiers.

That meant, that the 10,000 bug units he ordered would probably be able to produce 1 million tiger armored kings!

However, he was delightfully surprised...

He had come personally to choose, and the 10,000 units the 5 managers had given him, were enough to create 2 million tiger armored kings!

"Double the amount."

"60 million points, yet I managed to buy 120 million points worth of goods."

"These 5 managers sure have treated me well." He was happy within. "Of course...this is the overall wealth of humanity, not their own money."

If Da Nian emperor and the others were to foot the bill, they probably wouldn't have been so generous.

Long Jue emperor saw the look of glee on Luo Feng's face, he laughed loudly, "How is it, is it good enough?"

"Very good, these units are really good." Luo Feng nodded.

"Some of the units are bad while others are good. This time, the other emperors have really worked hard to pick the best ones to send over." Long Jue emperor smiled. "The 3 have actually been trying hard to make amends for matters from before, we hope you don't take it to heart."

"I understand, Yan zhu emperor has Shi Huo knight behind him, I understand their actions." Luo Feng nodded and smiled, "I don't blame them."

"Haha, that's good." Long Jue emperor nodded.

After getting some benefit, it was sort of a payment for before, Luo Feng naturally didn't hold it to heart.

"I remember you wanted to head to rubbish mountain." Long Jue emperor asked. "How long are you prepared to search for treasure?"

"Not more than a hundred years." Luo Feng said.

The aim of this time was to collect enough silver fragments to form a silver armor. According to his estimate, a few decades should be enough.

"Ah...Here are 100 world rings, every one of them represents you can hunt for treasure for a year." With a flip of his hand, Long Jue emperor retrieved 100 world rings. "Also, I'll send you a surveillance map, with your authority, you can view it. When the time comes, you can freely search for the treasures without needing anybody to follow you."

Chapter 752: Silver Armor

Luo Feng received the 100 world rings. These sort of huge deals normally came with free chances to hunt for treasure. Buying 10,000 bug corpse units was 100 times that of the previous time, naturally he had 100 years to hunt for treasure.

"Searching about freely within Wu Long starfield would be much better." Luo Feng smiled.

"Haha, connect to the virtual universe network." Long Jue emperor said. "I will send the map to you, this has to pass the audit of the virtual universe system."

"Hm." Luo feng nodded.

The virtual universe system had many abilities, witnessing, audit etc.

Like the Universe 1st Bank, the Universe Galaxy Bank, the Universe Mercenary Alliance, the Huge Axe Dojo, they all had to use this virtual universe network. This made it so that Luo Feng could not help but exclaim again despite knowing how powerful it was.

...

After awhile, Luo Feng got the authority and the screen on his arm displayed the entire Wu long starfield map.

"Long Jue emperor, I'll be heading out to hunt for treasure." Luo Feng smiled.

"I hope you get a treasure." Long Jue said.

"Haha..." Luo feng smiled, becoming a beam of light and leaving the palace.

Watching him leave, Long Jue couldn't help but exclaim, "He's actually wasting time by hunting for treasure? Hm, now that he's sector lord level...he should be about to go through life or death training. But, before that, he probably wants to relax a little by hunting for treasure. Pitiful punk, who knows whether he can survive the training."

In history, there were simply too many absolute geniuses that had fallen during this period of training.

Without it, they would never truly become strong warriors.

Despite knowing of the dangers, humanity still sent their sector lord geniuses to go through these trials.

Wu Long starfield, the entire starfield was filled with countless remains from the inter race wars, all sorts of remains were lying around, naturally they were still neatly organized.

"I always had guides beside me the last time I searched for the fragments, it was so troublesome. This time is better...being alone, I can be free." Luo feng sat in his universe ship and looked at the map on his arm screen. "Hm, there are so many white dots on the map, they should all be internal members. This red light...ah, the place I'm at also has a red dot, looks like it represents an outsider."

Very quickly, Luo Feng understood the map system.

The authority required for the map system wasn't exactly very high. One had to know that these internal members were all simply staff members, with Luo Feng's current level of authority, it was easy for him to get it.

"Babata, we'll stop here."

"Understood."

The Yun mo planet ship swiftly slowed down and stopped, returning to the actual universe.

Chi!

Wu Long starfield, a blood colored triangular ship stopped at one of the stop points.

"Hm?" Luo Feng flew out.

"Calling!"

Luo Feng could once again feel the calling. Turning into the distance, "That way, there are fragments there."

With a flip of his hand, he kept the Yun Mo planet ship and flew swiftly in that direction. He accelerated and quickly reached light speed, flying at about 280,000 km per second.

...

Light speed was the limit of the actual universe, accelerating past that would send one straight into the dark universe, going through universe travel.

Undyings were all capable of doing that with their bodies alone.

Sector lords were mostly unable to do that. Normal sector lord pinnacle humans usually only reached up to 150,000 km per second, the main thing was their body structures weren't strong enough. Hence, as they accelerate faster and faster, the burden on their bodies would increase! It would compound and get heavier on them.

The golden horned beast's body was huge, it was able to go through universe travel with its body.

These are extremely rare!

Even after training in the nameless manual, Luo Feng's body structure was 3 times stronger than that of a normal sector lord pinnacle, yet he still couldn't do it. However, he had the soldier armor on him now. Back when he was domain lord pinnacle, he was unable to unleash its true strength, now however, he could do it.

The soldier armor could unleash 1,000 times that of a sector lord pinnacle strength.

In acceleration, this armor could withstand most of the burden, allowing him to easily reach 280,000 km per second, even reaching lightspeed...that wasn't a hard thing.

"Haha, my luck is not bad."

"Just from this trip, I've discovered 2 silver fragments." Luo Feng stood within a rubbish mountain, filled with glee. He was happy, "The last time, it took 2 years for me to collect 232 black fragments and 12 silver fragments along with 1 shard. I was only able to assemble 2 full soldier armors.

Soldier armor, it was incredible.

It's defense was strong, its strength was also incredible, and it also had some effect withstanding spirit energy attacks.

However, it's ability to give an additional 1,000 sector lord

pinnacles' amount of strength, it was not bad for the golden horned beast back then, but after 1,200 years in primal chaos city, the current beast was much stronger than before...just one soldier armor didn't do much for it.

One had to know the basic strength of the beast alone was 30 times that of a human (Normal golden horned beasts were 10 times that of humans, but training in the nameless manual, it became 30)!

With the blood river energy triggered, it was 11 times.

And with Deities of the world (7.5 times) and it's natural ability Strengthen (2 times) it could raise its strength a total of 15 times!

In total, it added up to 4,950 times that of a sector lord's strength! The reason it was so ridiculous was mainly due to the nameless manual and the blood river energy. Without these twothe beast would only be 150 times that of a human sector lord. It would have been only be a normal golden horned beast sector lord pinnacle level.

The blood river energy and the nameless manual allowed it's body strength to increase a lot! The soldier armor's effect...was naturally not as obvious.

Luo Feng stood within Wu Long starfield, almost like treasure hunting rat, searching within the mountains.

Searching for the silver fragments was incredibly tough. His efficiency was not bad at first, however as time went on...it began to decrease. Along the way, he had already collected a few other soldier armors. It was obviously much easier to find the black fragments, the main aim for him this time however was to get the silver fragments.

Luo Feng didn’t give up.

Actually, he had only sent out a thread of consciousness to search for treasures, the golden horned beast and mosha bodies were studying the 2nd level of the Nan shen 7 armaments.

...

Virtual universe, Black Dragon Mountain island, 9 star bay.

"Dad!"

"Dad!"

Luo Ping and Luo Hai shouted outside the door.

"Luo Ping, Luo Hai, your dad just returned. Can’t you let me have some time alone with him first." Xu Xin said unhappily, "Come in."

"Didn’t he come back frequently these 21 years." Luo Hai laughed loudly and stepped in.

The 2 youths stepped in, even though they had lived for over 4,000 years, they hadn’t aged at all. Among the two of them, Luo Ping was much more poised, he was managing the entire family matters, he was the main authority within the family. Since, he was normally calm and collected, naturally the aura he gave off was so.

Luo Hai was the exact opposite, almost like an uncivilized bandit, his eyes burning with fighting spirit.

Two sons with two different characters.

"Dad, have you been in Wu Long starfield these past 21 years?" Luo Hai asked.

"Hm." Luo Feng smiled and nodded.

Collecting a full silver armor wasn’t easy,, he hadn’t succeeded yet.

What’s more, his plan was to collect 2!

He had to spend quite some time at Wu Long starfield. A sharpened knife was much more effective than a blunt one, only with proper preparation could he head out into the outer region wars fully prepared.

"After Wu Long starfield is done, you'll head to the outer region wars?" Luo Hai couldn't help but ask. "Dad, can you take me along? I have a sector lord plant life form, it's very safe."

"You?"

Luo Feng shook his head, "You are still far from it. Even with the plant life form, your body is only domain lord level 9...you'll be cannon fodder in the outer region wars. A strong spirit attack from the other races will easily kill you. Even I have to be extremely careful there, I won't have a way to protect you at all. Just focus on your training, exploring within humanity's territories. Don't think about the outer region wars yet, when you reach sector lord pinnacle and you have the strength of an undying, then we'll talk."

"Ah." Luo Hai drooped his head and replied, within the family, he feared nothing and was almost like a tyrant.

However, he truly feared his father.

"Calm down, "Luo Feng ordered. "You have resources many will never have, treasure them."

"Understood dad." Luo Hai replied.

The Luo Family was currently one of the biggest families in the Ganwu universe countries, naturally it had to have some backing. Back when earth was eyed by many knights and Luo Feng made the deal with the Virtual Universe Company, he placed about 10

million mixed elements worth of Luo Ke holy water within the family to nurture plant life forms.

10 million mixed elements worth of Luo Ke holy water, it was enough to nurture 100 sector lord level 9 plant life forms.

And he had plenty of it, this was but a small portion.

Of course, the family was still weak now. Without an undying within, Luo Feng didn’t dare leave too many treasures within the family. However, with the main location on earth, it was extremely safe.

"Hm?" Luo Feng suddenly revealed a look of glee.

"What’s up dad?" Luo Hai asked loudly.

"Dad?" Luo Ping looked curiously at him too.

"Good thing." Luo Feng smiled.

...

Wu Long Starfield, within a rubbish mountain.

"How many years has it been, 21 years. I’ve collected a total of 1,985 black fragments before finally completing 113 silver

fragments." Luo Feng stood within the mountain. He forced the soldier armor pearl out from his body, then the large amounts of silver fragments entered and a special change began to occur.

Fusion!

Luo Feng had experienced this before, he knew what it meant... the silver armor was complete!

Large amounts of silver liquid gathered within his body until it reached its limit!

Rumble!

A change happened instantly!

Luo Feng felt his entire body shudder, after which, a mysterious word appeared on his chest. This was a dark silver word imprint, it was the Flame God race word...General!

Luo Feng looked down at the silver world on his chest and muttered softly, "General?"

Chapter 753: Cang Bird Star

Looking at the Flame god race words, many thoughts appeared in Luo Feng's mind, the black armor before had the word soldier, this time it was General.

As the imprint disappeared under his skin with his thought, it vanished.

"Let's feel its strength." Luo Feng thought.

Rumble!

Countless silver threads swiftly expanded from the core imprint, almost like it entered every muscle, and every bit of skin throughout his body, also on the surface of his skin, a silver armor appeared, boots appearing below the soles of his feet. A silver mask and helmet appeared over his head.

Chi...Luo Feng took a deep breath, he could feel pain in every muscle throughout his body, almost like it was being torn apart.

This armor far exceeded the strength of the soldier armor.

With a push, he could already feel the limit of his body being reached...it made it extremely painful.

"I can only trigger about 1,200 times sector lord strength." Luo

Feng made his judgment, when one reached his level of strength, it was easy to make such accurate and precise measurements.

"Hm? When I use the soldier armor, I can easy trigger all of the armor's power...1,000 times sector lord pinnacle." Luo Feng pondered, "And according to the golden horned beast using the armor back then, normal human sector lord pinnacle can use this soldier armor. And I'm 3 times stronger than a normal human sector lord pinnacle! Yet, I can only use 200 times sector lord strength..."

He began to understand.

The further back it got, the harsher the requirements on the body.

...

"Looks like my body is still too weak, the soldier armor fits me better. This general armor...it's too harsh on my body now." Luo Feng thought, his guess wasn't wrong, the soldier armor was the most basic armor...it was meant for sector lord pinnacles to use, and this general armor...was for undyings.

Naturally the requirements were much harsher.

"General pearl." With a thought, he forced the General armor out into a pearl, this was a round silver ball, smaller than the soldier one by a little, on it the imprint General could be seen.

"I'll let the golden horned beast try it. The beast's body structure is much stronger than my earth body." He thought.

Sou!

He sent the General pearl into his dark red world ring, the mosha body and the main core was hidden in this. This dark red world ring was the one he specially ordered while in primal chaos city, for the sake of safety, he spent 180,000 points.

Within his internal world, a vast grassland.

Howl...The mountain like golden horned beast howled, its voice filled with excitement, it forced out a black soldier pearl and it immediately fell on the grass beside.

After which it raised its majestic head and looked at the little General pearl, it extended its right claw and touched it, immediately... chi chi...the silver pearl entered its body, in an instant, the flame god race word General appeared on its chest and vanished after.

"General armor!"

"Trigger."

The beast's eyes gleamed with a gold light as it howled.

Rumble...

The imprint within its chest instantly triggered and countless silver threads spread out and covered every part of its muscles, skin, scales, immediately a powerful force spread throughout its body, the shocking amount of strength kept rising...rising...and rising!

1,000 times sector lord strength, 2,000 times! 3,000 times! 4,000! 5,000!

The severe pain spread too, almost like it was tearing apart its muscles.

Howl! The beast let out an enraged howl, even with its body strength, it couldn't fully trigger the strength of the general armor. One had to know that a normal golden horned beast had 30 times a sector lord's strength.

Howl...

It howled and immediately unleashed Deities of the world, immediately all its scales, muscles, internal organs and horns began to shrink, its density rising rapidly! As it shrank, the beast continued to trigger the General armor.

Its muscles, bones, scales and horn density kept rising...it was indeed able to withstand the strength of the armor!

6,000! 7,000! 8,000! 9,000! 10,000!

Rumble!

The beast no longer felt the fatigue from the armor, it had been pushed to its limit, and at this time, the beast had shrunk to about 300km long, one had to know that a sector lord pinnacle golden horned beast was usually about 1,000km long.

"Deities of the world had reached amplification of 3.3 times, the beast was about 30 times a normal human sector lord before...a total of 100 times." Luo Feng nodded, "This is about the lowest level of a normal undying, looks like this general armor is for undyings afterall."

"Shrink!"

"Shrink more."

The beast howled and its huge body shrank even more, its muscles, bones, scale density all continued to rise, finally it stopped and it reached the limit of Deities of the world.

Using 2.12 billion points, Deities of the world's amplification had risen from 5 times back then to 7.5.

"Easy, trigger the armor, chi chi...10,000 times sector lord

strength, this is about an official level pinnacle, almost an emperor level." The beast was now about a little over 100km long, still bigger than any mountain on earth, beside it a black clothed Luo Feng appeared, he muttered, "Combined with Sky tearing claw... and the Shi Wu wings teacher gave me, hehe..."

Luo Feng nodded satisfied.

Even though it was still far from his end goal, against a being like his teacher True Yan, he could still be instantly destroyed.

However at least the beast now had reached his short term goal.

"Not bad." Luo Feng nodded satisfied.

The golden horned beast was considered his hidden trump card, after receiving guidance from his teacher the primal chaos city leader, Luo Feng didn't dare feel proud, his possession of the beast was but an above average encounter, and he had only received 3 billion points, Ke Di had over a 100 billion back then.

Hence it was better to be humble, at least the current him, didn't have the ability to kill an official level undying with an undying body.

...

After collecting one general armor, Luo Feng didn't want to end it yet. His earth body may not be able to use the armor yet, but

what about the future? He didn’t want to waste more time coming back here again to search for the fragments.

…

Years passed.

His earth body stayed and explored Wu Long starfield, constantly searching for silver armor fragments. The golden horned beast and the mosha clansman continued their training.

In t blink of an eye, he had stayed there for close to 60 years, another 3 months and it would be 6 decades.

"Haha."

"Finally, finally, I’ve finally completed the second general armor." A silver armor appeared on the surface of his skin, he was all smiles, "It gets harder and harder to find more silver fragments."

The efficiency of the search dropped the more he searched.

It took 21 years for him to complete the 1st armor, and another 39 to complete the 2nd.

"I’ve completed 2 general armors, the soldier armor…I’ve collected a total of 58." Luo Feng laughed, "That mysterious shard,

I’ve got a total of 9 of them now, it’s a pity I still don’t know what it’s for now. Even though I can feel it’s calling, I cannot absorb it, dripping blood on it is useless too, and the spirit imprint cannot invade it."

Luo Feng shook his head.

9 shards, he didn’t know what they were, at least how to make them recognize him.

With the 2 general armors, 58 soldier armors plus the 1st 2 soldier armors he got during the 1st time he was here, he had a total of 60 soldier armors.

"60 years, I finally got 2 general armors, my other trump card, the bug army now has a king army." Luo Feng smiled.

Within his internal world.

Bug island.

Howl...The completely dark red tiger armored bug about 26 m tall was intrepid and thick, its compound eyes terrifying, in terms of height it was about 4m shorter than a normal tiger armored bug, its size smaller. However whether it was the shell strength, its power or speed, world energy gathering etc...it far exceeded a normal tiger armored bug.

King!

Every tiger armored king had a high cost of production, using universe crystals, it required 2,500 mixed elements! Enough to make a poorer normal undying go bankrupt, of course this was too extravagant.

"If I simply ordered them to be delivered, I'd only be able to produce 1 million kings."

"However, since I personally came to choose the goods and made the deal with the 5 managers, I got twice the number." Luo Feng was happy.

60 years.

Alina had produced a total of 1.5 million tiger armored kings along with 200,000 hunting mantis kings and 200,000 Shadow spear kings, the remaining corpses were used to create normal tiger armored bugs...her production days continued...

"Bug king army." Luo Feng was very excited.

The strong all enjoyed the feeling of leading an army.

The million king army was indeed very powerful. It was at least 10 times stronger than a normal million strong army...one combined attack, if it hit, would even kill an emperor level undying. Of course the chances of it actually hitting was very very low, however with the bug queen commanding them, they

naturally had other methods.

"I've completed the 2 missions I've come to Wu Long starfield for, the General armor and the bug king army."

"Now that everything is settled, it's time I left Wu Long starfield and headed to the outer region wars."

As Luo Feng left, he was naturally sent off with a luxurious banquet thrown by Long Jue, Qi Li, In Ge, Da Nian and Cang Yu emperor.

"The shortest path from here to the outer region wars is to first head to Cang Bird star." Long Jue emperor said, "That is a logistics base and troop transport point. A large number of the soldiers and many lone wolves wanting to participate in the wars can all head there and be sent out."

Luo Feng nodded.

Since he was at Wu Long starfield, the natural path was to head to Cang bird star and be sent out from there.

"Thank you all for your hospitality, I'll...be taking my leave." Luo Feng laughed and got up.

"Be extremely careful." Long Jue emperor said.

"The outer region wars are very dangerous, be on alert at all times." Yin Ge emperor emphasized.

"Don’t get careless."

The 5 emperors all reminded him strongly.

"Haha...I will definitely return alive from the outer region wars." Luo Feng laughed, after which he turned and left, taking his ship and heading towards the troop deportation point Cang bird star!

Chapter 754: Sector Lord General

Cang Bird star, one of the 8 great logistics bases of humanity. It was also the transportation point for the universe army. Large amounts of the army would be sent to the outer region wars from here, it was a very important location.

"We've arrived."

"That's Cang Bird star." Luo Feng gazed at the huge planet from his blood colored triangular ship. Cang Bird star had a diameter of 1.028 million km, it was a man made planet, it was a fortress.

"Du."

"Luo Feng, we've received a signal from Cang Bird star." Babata shouted from the control room, "It's already been answered, just follow their instructions."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

Sou!

The Yun Mo planet ship swiftly entered Cang Bird star.

Within its landing points.

"Wow, an F grade ship, completely covered in hybrid copper

essence. This ship should at least be a few million mixed elements." A silver armored man said shocked. At this time, Luo Feng flew out from the ship and kept it within his world ring.

"How are you, I'm a worker here." The armored man smiled. He was shocked within, "Looking at his forehead, it's a law recognized sector lord. A sector lord could actually afford a ship like this, he must have a huge background."

Luo feng glanced at him, this man's head was like a jellyfish, somewhat translucent.

"I requested to enter the outer region wars, where do I head to?" Luo Feng asked.

"The universe armies are all gather here. The lone wolves all follow this pathway to another gathering spot." The man pointed to a distant transparent glass made pathway. "This pathway is over 3,000 km long, the end of it is where the gathering spot is."

"Thanks." Luo Feng nodded.

He followed the pathway, every step passing over a few tens of km. After awhile, he reached the end. It was a beautiful scenic plaza with over 10,000 people gathered there. As it was huge with a diameter over 100km, the 10,000 people barely filled it.

"How do you do, please head this way to rest." An enchanting lady worker with a furry tail walked over and said.

"When will we head out to the wars?" Luo Feng asked.

"We have to hit a certain number of people, otherwise the cost of travel alone would be too high." The lady smiled. "Sector lord, your timing is already good. Many like you have already been waiting here for 12 days. The lone wolves gathering are after all not like the armies. The armies that come here are all extremely vast, the lone wolves take time to fill up to hit a number."

Luo Feng nodded.

He walked to the side. There were many alloy benches where many soldiers wanting to participate in the wars were scattered throughout, Luo Feng sat casually.

...

"Hey, how do you do."

"Another has come?"

Two similar looking sector lords with fur on their faces like wolf men walked over.

Luo Feng looked up curiously at the two of them. These two were both sector lord pinnacle, and from their forehead, they were both recognized by their laws. One had to know that even though there

were over 10,000 people there, most of them were domain lords, and very few of them were sector lords and universe level.

There were even less universe levels than domain lords, mainly because they were very weak. Few universe level lone wolves would come take part in the wars, just the far distance of flying alone would be a huge deterrence.

Luo Feng nodded, "I’m alone."

"One person coming to Cang bird star alone, it must have been hard. We brothers took a ship over, it took a total of 12 years to get here." The bigger wolfman sector lord smiled, after which, he and his brother sat on an opposite bench. With a flip of his hand, a bottle of wine and 3 glasses appeared.

World energy control.

He poured the wine and it floated before the 3 of them.

"Thanks." Luo Feng lifted his glass. "I’m ok though. My travel time isn’t as long as 12 years."

"Ah." The wolfman laughed loudly. "I’m called Klaus and this is my younger brother Badi." The skinnier wolf man seemed humble, he nodded at Luo Feng and said hi.

"I’m called..." Luo Feng muttered, "Madman."

"Madman?"

The 2 wolfman sector lords knew straight away that was a nickname. And such a nickname was too common. Many within the army didn't reveal their true names, they preferred nicknames. And 1 out of 100 were probably called madman.

They both felt like Luo Feng didn't want to reveal his true name, naturally they didn't ask.

"Ah, look, another sector lord has come." The stronger looking wolfman looked into the distance.

Luo Feng glanced over, it was another sector lord.

"There are already 96 sector lords here." The skinnier Ba Di said softly. "We are close to leaving."

"They always have to gather 100 sector lords before sending out the troops. This is truly...after travelling in space for 12 years, I have to come here and wait even more. Not killing after so many years, my blade is starving." The older brother said unhappily. Luo Feng answered sparsely to both of them, not revealing anything about himself.

Luo Feng was very clear, that as a disciple of the primal chaos city leader, there were many warriors out there that wanted to kill him. Caution was extremely important, it was best not to reveal

his identity.

The strong were numerous as the wind in the outer region wars, if he revealed his identity early on, the dangers would probably multiply by 100 times.

...

Luo Feng waited for a day and the number of sector lords that arrived had finally reached 100.

"Universe level, gather here."

"Domain lords, gather here."

"Sector lords, all come here."

The entrance of the pathway opened and over 10,000 lone wolves swiftly split apart. Luo Feng got up and gathered with the other sector lords. As they gathered, another one came, making the total number of sector lords 101. It made them all discuss about the luck of the last female sector lord...not having to wait at all.

"All sector lord soldiers, you will be heading to the most glorious and most brutal outer region wars." An undying emanating powerful killing aura. His entire body looked like it was made of metal that stood before them, "However you must all understand, the army has its rules, you won’t be as relaxed as before!"

Luo Feng and the other 100 sector lords listened.

"Before we leave!"

"I need all of you to go through the traditional authority award ceremony." The undying emphasized.

"Authority award ceremony?"

"What does it mean?"

"What's that?"

The group of sector lords all discussed amongst themselves, it was obvious that most of these lone wolves didn't know much about the details of taking part in the outer region wars.

The undying seemed to know this, he continued, "This ceremony is to confirm your position in the army, the level of army, the level of command and so on. Hence, we need to award you your authority within the army, and how we do it is to test your strengths."

"Are they going to make us fight?"

"Test?"

Some sector lords shouted out.

"Wrong." The undying shook his head. "Every one of you have probably trained countless times within the virtual universe network, and the network will judge you base on your performance within. This judgment...is very important to your position within the army."

"The judgment is split into three. One is a normal sector lord soldier, the 2nd is an elite sector lord soldier and the 3rd is a Sector lord general."

"Most sector lords are normal sector lord soldiers."

"With law recognition, they can barely be considered elite soldiers."

"Out of 100 elites, there may be an occasional sector lord general!" The undying said, "I believe everyone of you have displayed your true strength in the virtual universe before. If anyone has never done so, and you are worried your position may not be fair, you can now enter the virtual universe network and do so. In awhile, the ceremony will begin."

...

The undying went silent for 10 seconds before speaking again. "Shouldn’t be a problem now right, all of you come one by one to

receive your position."

The 101 sector lords walked up to him and his armband shot out a blue light that covered the sector lords that approached him.

"Elite Sector lord soldier!"

"Normal Sector lord soldier!"

"Elite Sector lord soldier!"

"Elite Sector lord soldier!"

His armband automatically shouted out the positions. Also, every sector lord that received his post would get a mail from the virtual universe system. The higher one's authority was...his position in the army too would naturally be different.

Luo Feng looked at this and was shocked, "There are so many elites, according to theory...normal sector lord soldiers should make up most of the army, ah, seems right. Those lone wolves that dare go to the wars alone all have confidence in themselves. Ah, most of them have acquired law recognition."

The sector lords all lined up to receive their posts, it quickly reached Luo Feng's turn.

The blue light engulfed him and shouted out.

"Sector lord general."

Hua!

This scene immediately made a large number of the sector lords, including the distant domain lords and universe levels collecting their posts all turned over shocked. Amongst the 101 sector lords, there was actually one general.

"Not bad." The undying glanced over shocked at Luo Feng, nodding his head.

Luo Feng walked to the side calmly.

The other sector lords continued to receive their posts.

"Elite Sector lord soldier."

"Normal Sector lord soldier."

...

"Sector lord General!"

Once again, the group all turned over, within this group of 101 sector lords there were actually 2 sector lord generals. Luo Feng

looked over too. This was a 3m tall well build youth, his eyes gleamed like two blades clashing, they made it so that no one dared look down on him.

Chapter 755: Secrets of the Territory

"He looks quite strong, I wonder where he's from." Luo Feng glanced at him and didn't think much about it.

The ceremony ended quickly, there were a total of 2 sector lord generals, 62 elites and 37 normal soldiers within the 101.

The Sector lord and universe level ceremonies ended quickly.

Even with 10 of them receiving their posts simultaneously, the domain lord level ceremony took quite awhile.

"The ceremony has all ended." The undying's voice suddenly boomed, resounding throughout the over 10,000 soldiers' ears. "Follow me, we will send you all in a group to the outer region wars. This race wars involve a large amount of soldiers. There are a total of 11 battlefields, and all of them are outside our territories. Hence they are called the outer region wars, you'll all be heading to the 7th battlefield."

"7th?"

"All outside humanity's territories?"

"Hm, my teacher is in the 2nd battlefield, looks like there's no hope of meeting him."

Discussions popped up all over.

Luo feng thought to himself, "7th battlefield? Average death rate is 96.8%, it’s ranked 3rd amongst the 11 battlefields. Hm, seems like a good place to train."

"Depart!" the undying ordered.

Immediately, the over 10,000 soldiers moved forward, Luo Feng and the other sector lords were naturally right at the front. After a while, they arrived at a huge hall, the palace had a diameter of over 1000 li. This huge hall had 11 huge space water screen pathways.

"This is the pathway that heads to the 7th battlefield." The undying walked towards it. "The 7th battlefield is a huge universe region with a diameter of about 1.1 million light years. Of course with trillions of years of war within, the region itself isn’t dangerous at all. The main threat is the other races and the enemies. The 7th battlefield has a total of 100 soldier bases, you’ll be transported to the 26th base."

The pathway was 1km wide, it was also 1km tall.

Hua!

The sector lords all entered and Luo Feng stepped in too, over 10,000 soldiers all entered.

With the god country as the hub, Luo Feng and the others quickly

reached the god country stop and once again entered the pathway, being transferred to the 7th battlefield's 26th base.

...

Luo Feng stood at the god country stop and stepped through. He felt the time and space before him warp as he instantly reached another spot.

"Haha, the new soldiers are here."

"There are new soldiers."

"Quickly, hurry, stop wasting time, there are things to do."

Orders were shouted immediately.

Luo Feng saw 10 white armored soldiers, ah, they weren't all completely in armor. There was one white haired undying in a white robe. He smiled at them, his eyes gleaming with thunder within, "New soldiers, welcome to the 26th base of the 7th battlefield. Sector lords follow him, domain lord will go with this punk, universe levels will all follow that little lady."

The white robed undying swiftly introduced the 3 guides.

Universe level, domain lord and sector lords all followed different pathways.

"Sector lords, ahead lies the sector lord camp." The guide said.

After awhile.

They reached an elegant hall, within 10 million seats were located. With just one glance, Luo Feng could see that there were already a few hundreds of thousands of sector lords sitting within.

"How are there so many sector lord soldiers?" Luo Feng was shocked. "Each universe country only has a few million sector lords, and humanity only has 1,008 universe countries. And there are a total of 11 battlefields, everyone with a hundred bases. On average, how many sector lords can there be in one base? It can't be such that all of humanity's sector lords are fighting in the wars right? And in theory...there should be many out fighting, only very few staying in the base, how can there be so many here?"

The other 100 sector lord new soldiers were shocked too.

"Alas!"

The guide shouted loudly, "The new soldiers are here, there are 2 generals in this new group, haha..." the guide finished and simply left.

"Sector lord generals?"

"Generals?" The other soldiers that were originally drinking and chatting all ran over, over 10,000 of them.

When the soldiers got close to each other, their quantum computers would immediately inform each other of their positions. Hence, the over 10,000 soldiers all turned their attention to Luo Feng and the other tall youth.

"Join our elite team, we have an undying leading our team. The army contribution points are much more, and the chances of survival are much higher as well.

"Our little team is stronger."

"You two..."

The old soldiers madly invited Luo feng and the other, they couldn’t even be bothered with the other 99 new soldiers.

...

After awhile.

Luo Feng and the other youth sat at the dining table, beside them sat a blood armored undying with a scaled snake tail. This undying was called Tai Wo, his was a ground undying. And as he was the first undying to actually go invite them, Luo Feng and the other sector lord general chatted with him despite the over 10,000 sector lords clamoring to invite them. As to whether they would join, no

one agreed yet.

"Captain Tai Wo, why are there so many sector lords here?" Luo Feng asked, "There are a total of 11 battlefields and every one of them has 100 bases, how can there be so many resting here?"

"I'm curious too." The youth beside him asked.

"Haha..."

Tai Wo poured some wine for himself, "We'll drink and chat. Madman, Rock, it's not just you two There are many new soldiers that are curious too as to why there are so many here! If you actually interact with many of them, you'd find out the reason easily."

Luo Feng and Rock looked at him.

"The 1,008 universe countries of humanity are actually just one part of humanity." The captain smiled, "From what I know, there are many continents within secret regions that have countless humans living within, and those large continents have diameters of over 100 billion km etc. The population on these continents can match that of a universe country."

Luo Feng was shocked.

Continent?

Right.

The gold horn race lived in Laos world, that itself was a supercontinent. The Blood river world was one too, the number of warriors on these two continents definitely exceeded that of a universe country.

"Humanity's territories lead into many of these secret region continents. And these are filled with universe energies, the humans living there all mostly become star travellers at maturity, the number of strong warriors are plenty." Tai Wo smiled, "That's just one part of it, there are large amounts of people living within undyings' god countries too."

"People within god countries, secret regions, universe countries, these form humanity." Tai Wo smiled, "Many of our life and death brothers grow up within god countries, and some in the super continents. However, their materialistic wealth cannot compare to ours, just like the virtual universe network, they can only access it when they reach universe level."

Luo Feng was shocked when he heard.

He immediately sent a thread of consciousness into the network to check, with his authority, he immediately found lots of information.

Humans, according to their living environments, could indeed be separated into god country, secret regions and universe humans.

The number of universe humans weren’t that many. One had to know that the secret region had continents akin to a universe country, and it was easy to build over 10,000 large continents within these secret regions. And the god countries of undyings were incredibly vast, many humans could live within.

"So, large amounts of humans can live in the secret regions, then why do we still have to fight for territory?" When Luo Feng had gone to Laos World before, he was curious about this. Only after becoming the disciple of the primal chaos city leader did he have the authority to search for answers.

The war was for territory!

Why fight?

According to the information he found.

It was just like a plant life form requiring sufficient sunlight, the moment the population was too dense, all the plants wouldn’t grow well, same logic! The formation of life was very special, whether it was flesh and blood or automaton or plants etc...as long as there is life, during its growth it would absorb the universe’s essence.

The production and growth relied on the absorption of this special energy.

For example, with a 1,000 light year area, with only 1 life planet and 10 billion people on that planet, almost all of the universe energy within that 1,000 light year area will be given to that planet.

And the secret regions.

If the population comparable to a universe country were all squeezed within a huge continent, its population density was much higher, hence the essence they received was naturally much lower.

The god country humans.

The god countries exist in slits of space, not the actual space itself. The universe essence absorbed was even lesser than that of the secret region humans!

The information said...

"God country humans, their numbers are the most plentiful, they can only train till sector lord level. Over countless years, the number of undyings produced only reaches 9,082, they all had miraculous encounters. Without these encounters, they are set never to reach undying."

"Universe secret region humans rank number two in population. They can reach undying like the universe humans, however...the chances of them reaching knight is extremely low!"

"Universe humans, least in population, they own the most territory! There have been many undyings in history, and the number of knights in humanity, 98.2% of them are from the universe humans."

Territory was like a fertile land!

The larger it was, the stronger the race could grow, the chances of producing absolute warriors would be higher too.

...

Within the hall.

"Among the sector lord soldiers, most of them are from the god countries?" Luo Feng asked.

"Right." Tai Wo nodded.

Luo Feng was shocked, the god country humans probably didn’t know of the secret that their chances of becoming undying were extremely low, even producing one was extremely rare. The sector lords themselves probably didn’t even feel this problem.

"The number of soldiers from the god countries are the most. Hence, many sector lord warriors are from the god countries." Tai Wo laughed, "Through many life or death situations and threats, their strength will grow, and gaining enough contribution points, they can exchange for treasures to strengthen themselves. Even

though they are only sector lord, they can match up against normal undyings."

Chapter 756: Integration

The 3 chatted and drank.

At this time, a sector lord walked over. Luo Feng glanced at him, he was a 1m tall punk with a cute round face. There was a green engraving on his cheek, he stood at 1m tall like a child...the armor he wore however was not ordinary.

"Hai, captain, have you pulled them in?" The short sector lord pulled a chair over and sat noisily beside them.

"It’s not that easy, 30% of the new sector lord soldiers are only elites, 0.3% of them are generals...to actually have a general amongst the new recruits is already extremely rare, and these people aren’t easily convinced." Tai Wo smiled, after which he turned to Luo Feng and Rock, "Let me introduce you, this is..."

"I can do it myself."

The short sector lord picked up a glass and poured himself a full glass. Smiling at the two of them, he said, "I am a member of Captain Tai Wo’s team, the sector lord team 026-2089491. You can call me...Poison! I am a chemist, of course...I’m also a sector lord general."

"Poison? Chemist? Sector lord general?" Luo Feng was shocked.

The strong were mainly made of fighters, spirit readers and

illusionists, the 3 great paths. Puppeteers, chemists and beast tamers etc were extremely rare, especially chemists...it was extremely hard to make any progress with it.

Back then during universe level, there was a universe level genius in the Absolute beginning region Yu Feng, he was a chemist!

The chemists could win over people much stronger than themselves.

They were the most dangerous to be underestimated. Even a god had to be careful against one. As their battle strength was determined by their potions.

"There are a total of eight in our team including me, I am an undying. The other seven are sector lord generals, of which two are fighters, two are spirit readers, two are illusionists and one is a chemist." Tai Wo said proudly, "Poison is very important in our team."

"My two new friends, come, let's toast." The dwarf Poison smiled and lifted his wine glass.

Luo Feng and Rock lifted their glasses.

"Even though my seven members are all generals, they are all those that have gone through countless life or death battles and gotten stronger over time, until they were finally awarded the general position. Only Poison...he was a general when he first

came." Tai Wo looked at both of them. "I wonder if you two are willing to join my team? We are still short of two members! For a small sector lord team like ourselves, we are definitely one of the most exceptional, you won't be disappointed if you join us."

"Tai Wo is a good captain." The dwarf Poison drank his wine and occasionally said a couple of things.

The tall and calm youth nodded, "I, Rock, am willing to join your team."

"Haha, good." The undying Tai Wo was very happy, he turned to Luo Feng, "Will Madman join us too?"

"Hmm..." There were many thoughts within Luo Feng's mind.

The army had its rules.

Everyone who took part in the wars had to fulfill their own requests, Luo Feng naturally had to do so too! Before accumulating sufficient contribution points, one had to join a group and take orders. Since that was so...joining a more elite sector lord team seemed like a good idea.

"Ok." Luo Feng nodded.

"Haha..." The undying was very happy. He turned to look in the distant corner, using his god energy to communicate, "Come here all of you."

Very quickly, six silhouettes came from distance.

They were of all sizes, some built, some small, some enchanting while others cold and filled with killing aura, and another smiling happily as he looked at the two.

One was over 6 m tall, seemingly made of red rocks with two bent horns on his forehead. There was a rhombus crystal engraved there, he was from the Mother Flame race. Another was enchanting, a lady of the demon lady race covered in fog...the six of them came over, all dragging a chair and sitting about.

The ten of them gathered.

"Let me introduce you." The undying Tai Wo pointed about. "This is the new soldier sector lord general, you can call him madman."

"Madman? Hm, that’s an arrogant nickname." A skeleton like man sat at the side, carrying a silky white furred cat. This cat had purple eyes and seemed to enjoy its owner’s stroking.

"Wei! Don’t pick a fight." The chemist Poison who had already drank a lot frowned as he ordered.

"Wei, Little Chen Chen is right." The demon lady sector lord smiled.

"Don’t call me little Chen Chen?" The dwarf Poison raged. "You can call me by my real name Zhu Chen, not little Chen Chen, I like the name poison too."

"Little Chen Chen is angry." The lady covered her mouth and laughed.

Poison looked helplessly at her, continuing to drink his wine.

The captain Tai Wi laughed at the scene and pointed at the tall youth, "This is another Sector lord general, you can call him Rock."

"Madman and Rock." Tai Wo said, "You already know Poison, let me introduce the others to you.

"Demon lady is an exceptional illusionist, very few sector lord warriors can escape her illusions. You should both know...that the demon lady race all have exceptional enchanting abilities." At this time, the lady engulfed in fog smiled. Even though it made her face unclear, it made her seem even more mysterious.

"Tornado, a powerful fighter."

The expressionless masked fighter with pointy ears glanced at them without saying anything.

"Mad Wu, spirit reader."

The smiling purple haired man nodded at them.

"God is this white armored punk, despite knowing the dangers, he still wears the most glaring white armor. He calls himself God, haha...he’s another spirit reader."

The white armored man with white scales on his head smiled brightly like the sun, he gave off a feeling of warmth. It made Luo Feng deduce that this was definitely a sector lord trained in the light laws, and his comprehension level must be pretty high.

"Wei, is this boney fellow with the cat, the cat which had explored the universe for so many years was taken in by him. However Wei cannot be underestimated, he is an illusionist too, his soul attack is very strong."

Wei who hugged the cat only snorted as he glanced at the two of them.

"The last one, you can call him Hammer. He’s a very steady and solid person from the Mother Flame race, and also a powerful fighter."

The 6 m tall Mother flame race sector lord Wei smiled at the 2 of them.

Poison, Demon lady, Tornado, Mad Wu, God, Wei and Hammer, these were the seven members of the team. They were all sector lord generals, definitely warriors that had survived countless

battles.

"I’m a spirit reader." Luo Feng said.

"I’m a fighter." Rock said.

From then on, the little team had two new members.

After Luo Feng sent the request, he joined team 026-208941.

The next few days, Luo Feng and Rock would listen to stories and advice from the older soldiers. Even though both of them had background, they listened intently.

...

"What, allied forces?" Rock was shocked.

"Right, Allied forces. The main participants in this war are of course the 4 pinnacle races. However, all of them have other allied races. If we enter a battlefield, we will meet other allied forces, even though they are from other races, they are still our partners. Relax...the virtual universe system will tell you if they are our allies. If they don’t...just kill them!"

"Ah." Rock was stunned.

Luo Feng sat quietly, allied forces? As a pinnacle race, humanity naturally had many subservient races, like the gold horn race! These races would naturally go to war too, Luo Feng knew about this long ago.

...

"The battlefield is cruel with high death rates, exceeding over 95%?" Rock was shocked again.

"Only with a high death rate will absolute warriors be trained. Out of 20 new recruits, only 1 usually survives, however it may take up to 20 normal sector lord soldiers to get rid of one elite or even a general. Such high death rates and terrifying battles, plus countless treasures and ability to exchange for manuals etc...it's made the outer region wars the place where most absolute warriors are forged."

"And is a 95% death rate high? It's not high, from what I know, every 1,000 eras, there are huge scale battles where countless warriors face off against each other. Even emperor level undyings have to be extremely careful. That death rate is what I consider high, I heard it exceeds 99%! However we cannot engage in such battles frequently, even a pinnacle race would suffer huge losses, every 1,000 eras...it's still within our limit."

"Huge scale battle? Decisive battle? When will the next be."

"It's still early."

"Ah." Rock listened obediently.

Luo Feng who sat in the corner frowned, he exclaimed within. "The normal war that goes on already has a death rate over 95%, this is used to forge absolute warriors. It may seem like huge losses, in truth it's similar to creating a bug clan king, losing large amounts of normal sector lords to create one powerful one...their chances of breaking through to undying are much higher."

Long periods of brutal war, that was training.

And every 1,000 eras, a huge decisive battle, that was called the Race Meat grinder.

...

After staying in the base for 8 days, Rock learnt of many new things that totally shocked him. Luo Feng however remained very calm, he had naturally learnt most of this online before. However regarding the main experiences on the battlefield itself, he too had to listen to them.

On the battlefield...there were countless other race warriors, with all sorts of strategies and methods. Undyings were hidden throughout, even emperor level undyings could easily fall, how could he be careless?

They stayed until the 9th day!

This little sector lord team with its new members finally departed and headed to the battlefield.

Chapter 757: AAA God Base

"So many people!"

"So many ships."

Luo Feng and the others were shocked at this scene. This was a huge hall with a diameter exceeding 30,000 km, and was able to hold billions of soldiers!

"There's at least a few million people here right."

"Hm, definitely."

"There are a few thousand ships lining up ahead."

The many ships lined up in order to stop within the hall. Some of these ships were over 1,000m in diameter, and some with a few hundred meters in diameter, the soldiers differed too. Some could hold up to 1 million soldiers while some only held the few.

"Don't stand there stupidly, get on the ship." Captain Tai Wo ordered, swiftly releasing a disc shaped ship with a hundred meter diameter from his world ring, it appeared within the hall.

"Yes."

"Coming."

Tai Wo first entered the ship, followed by the 9 sector lord generals Mad Wu, God, Poison, Rock, and Madman.

"The material here is E9 alloy." Luo Feng gazed at the ship. Carefully examining the engravings on its surface, "It's actually the most basic law engravings? Tai Wo is afterall an undying, and he's one that has lived very long in the outer region wars, it shouldn't be too hard for him to get a better ship."

Luo Feng didn't think more about it, quickly boarding the ship.

Hua, the cabin door closed!

A blur of ships stopped within the hall, after which they all flew forward through the same pathway.

...

Luo Feng and the others had just entered the ship before Tai Wo, who walked ahead of them shouted, "To the resting quarters!"

"Not the control room?" Luo Feng laughed and asked.

"It's an AI controlled ship afterall, he can give us orders both from the resting quarters and the control room." Mad Wu smiled beside him. He was a handsome purple haired youth, who seemed very friendly. He was the one Luo Feng had gotten most close to on

the ship, and there was one more reason.

The two of them were both spirit readers, and their appearances were closest. Afterall, there were many types of humans in the universe with all sorts of appearances, but the two of them happened to look alike.

After awhile.

They arrived in the resting quarters, it was about 20m in length and width and was also 10m tall, for a total of 400 square meters in space. The 10 sector lords had enough space within.

"Arriving in our safety nest, I naturally feel more comfortable." Poison jumped and landed in the sofa, rolling about in it.

"Safety nest?" Rock looked about and asked curiously, "The material of this wall within here seems to be..."

"F9 metal Tungsten Mother rock." Luo Feng said softly.

"F9 metal?" Rock looked shocked at Luo Feng.

"Right." The always smiling white armored God smiled. "The resting quarters is the safest place in the ship, the ship's main material is E9 alloy. However in the battlefield, it cannot withstand some terrifying attacks, hence the captain ordered a completely Tungsten mother rock resting room, this is our safety nest. If we encounter any danger, at the least we will have some

time to react."

Luo Feng nodded.

It was a smart decision, since they were not able to afford an F grade ship, it was better to simply make one room that strong.

"I can afford one room. However if it's the entire ship...I cannot." The captain said, ordering, "External simulation 100%."

Di!

Even though Luo Feng was sitting in the sofa, he couldn't see it visibly, the ground vanished below him and all he could see was the vast hall outside with the other ships around them. As time passed, the ships swiftly flew through the pathway and very quickly, it was their turn to fly through.

Following the pathway, they flew straight for a few 100's of thousands of km before turning and flying along an arc, all the ships followed the same path.

After awhile!

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The straight pathway which was hundreds of thousands of km long began to close off its entrance.

Simultaneously!

The outermost door of the entire base began to open. Although there were over 10,000 pathways there, only a few hundred opened.

"Activate energy barrier."

"Depart."

The captain ordered.

Luo Feng and the others sat in the ship and left through a pathway from the base.

Hua!

All the sector lords turned to look back at the huge soldier base as they flew through the door. Even the ones that had been through this countless times still looked back, and Luo Feng with his high perspectives and vision, did the same. It was because it...was simply too majestic!

"That is the soldier base." Luo Feng said shocked. Through the external simulator, he clearly saw the huge base floating in space.

The entire base, from what Luo Feng estimated was at least a few

million km in diameter!

This was a base which was even larger than the sun!

The base was completely covered in a colorful energy barrier, a barrier that covered a base that huge, it was absurd. If one went up close to see the sun, how shocking would that be? What's more, they were looking up close at this malevolent base.

"Colorful energy barrier", "Mysterious powerful law engravings", "Automaton cannons with diameters of a few hundred km", "Blur of pathways", "Countless energy points".

This was a war machine that had been upgraded to the point of perfection!

"It's too majestic." Tai Wo exclaimed.

"Look at that cannon, normal universe ships use energy laser beams. However, the god base uses the very backdated huge cannon hole. It may seem backdated, but when it truly unleashes its power...that terrifying scene, it would reduce everything in its path to nothing." The white armored God's eyes gleamed with passion.

The new recruit Rock was completely stunned.

Even having seen a lot before, Luo Feng was still stunned.

"God base, what grade of a god base is this." Luo Feng couldn’t help but ask.

"AAA grade." Poison’s eyes were fixed on it too, he said softly, "The outer region wars is a battle between the races. The entire 7th battlefield only has these 100 bases, and these are the bases of humanity, naturally they made sure that it was of the highest grade. Even the universe country leaders, that level of warriors wouldn’t be able to destroy this base."

Luo Feng nodded.

He had checked on the automaton’s terrifying weapons before. Some huge weapons were very expensive, like the space fortress, it was still absurdly expensive, and that was just one fortress. The God base was still the pinnacle level of huge weapons, every one of them were much more expensive than a fortress!

And among the god bases...the AAA grade was the highest grade of them all.

At least from what he knew! Within the automaton nests, there may even be more terrifying things...

...

It was safest within the base, every base was made at AAA grade, even with trillions of warriors rushing it, it could still instantly

reduce everything to nothing.

"The base serves as the harbor for the soldiers." Poison lay on his sofa and lifted a wine bottle. "It’s the safest there, you don’t even have to worry about anything. However the moment you leave it... danger lurks all around us. Afterall, this entire region of over a million light years in diameter...is a battlefield."

Luo Feng kept looking outside.

With a glance.

With his vision, one had to know that he could fly close to light speed and still easily dodge items around him. Even though this ship was reaching sub light speed, he could still clearly see the scene outside. He saw a few broken bug bodies, ship remains, human remains etc, all floating in space. Some were simply knocked aside by the ship!

"Are some of the remains and corpses valuable?" The new recruit Rock frowned and asked.

"No one is an idiot." The Mother flame race Hammer said with a low voice. "The ships’s scanning system has long scanned through everything, those floating around in space aren’t worth anything. If they were, they would have been taken away. Those that haven’t...may simply be traps. Rock, if you haven’t noticed...our ship hasn’t been flying in a straight line, but dodging all the remains, the huge ship remains?"

Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed, it was indeed so.

"Those places may very likely have enemies hiding within. You have to know...the entire starfield, excluding the bases are battlefields." Hammer said seriously. "Don’t think that we all look very relaxed right now, everyone of us is prepared to battle at any moment."

"Alright, don’t scare the new recruits."

Captain Tai Wo smiled, "Our destination this time is about 80,000 light years from the 26th base, it’s extremely brutal over there. A squad like ours normally does guerilla tactics. In a while, when we reach a open area that doesn’t have rubbish or remains, we will begin universe travel. It’s usually safe once we go to the dark universe, we’ll be able to rest well...and we’ll travel for another 3 days. We can rest till then, once we reach the destination, it’ll be a bloodthirsty battle."

Luo Feng nodded.

The universe secret regions weren’t like the normal space. There were large amounts of rubbish and dust about, hence one had to specially clear a spot of space to be able to accelerate to light speed.

There were over a hundred million such spots in the 7th battlefield.

Rumble!

Rumble!

The universe ship dodged the dangerous regions as much as it could, reaching the clear spot after awhile. However, just from that short distance...Luo Feng had seen the aftermath of many large energy explosions about, and the other sector lord generals were all on high alert because they knew a battle could occur at any time.

"Entering dark universe, everybody can relax now."

"10...9...8...7...6...5...4...3...2...1, Universe travel!"

Chapter 758: Collapse

After flying in the dark universe for 3 days, they went through universe travel again.

"Be on alert, don't get careless." Within the resting room, Tai Wo ordered, pointing to a space outside which had no remains obstructing it. "From this clear spot of space to our destination, we have to fly for 2 months, and within these 2 months...we'll be flying in dangerous spots, battles could erupt at any moment."

"We know captain." Poison lifted his wine bottle and smiled. "Among the 7 old soldiers, even the newest of us have been here for over 8,000 years. Even when we are drunk, we are still on high alert, it's already become part of our subconscious. If you have to say it...you just have to let the new recruits know."

"Don't drag us down." The white boney Wei hugging the cat said coldly.

"It won't be considered dragging." Poison looked at the two of them "Older soldiers all started from scratch as well. Rock, Madman, you two better remember all the experiences we shared with you. Don't look down on these, they were formed from countless life or death battles."

"Understood." Rock nodded.

Luo Feng nodded too.

Luo feng had learnt much from the 7 old soldiers. Firstly, Poison was the highest ranking among them, even Tai Wo was very courteous to him. Normally Poison would occasionally reprimand the others, and they all wouldn’t complain about it.

This was a natural authority formed from countless battles.

Actually, back when Tai Wo had come to ask the two of them to join their team, Poison was the 1st to run over...one could already feel some of the problems.

"Rock, Madman, be on alert."

"If a battle occurs." Captain Tai Wo ordered, "We do not need you two to fight well with us, just be of some sort of assistance. If you see any of the others in danger, go and help them. In the beginning...we will rely on the 7 old soldiers for strength."

...

The ship flew at sub light speed, carefully making progress within the space, dodging any space that could hide other enemies.

...

Within a broken universe ship’s control room.

There were three automaton clansman gathered within. These three were completely made of metal, they looked very similar. From a glance, it looked like three robots were all sitting in alloy chairs.

"Haha, with the 3 of us together, we destroyed that undying's team...he should be an official level undying right." One of them smiled and said.

"Palati, you did good work back there. You heavily injured the undying, and it allowed us to kill the other sector lords...and later ganged up to kill the undying. He was indeed an official, he had lots of wealth, Palati...we better distribute the goods."

After which, the two automaton clansmen looked at the 3rd one.

This 3rd automaton clansman called Palati wore a dark red armor, he looked beautiful. He looked on calmly at the other two, with a flip of his hand, two space rings appeared and he tossed it to them.

"Our temporary alliance ends here, you two can go." He said coldly.

The two automaton clansmen smiled and received their space rings, swiftly checking them. As they checked, their eyes immediately erupted with rage.

"Palati!"

"Palati!"

They were both suppressing their rage.

"Still not leaving?" He looked on coldly at them.

"We worked together, and you got the benefit from killing that official level undying already. As for the spoils...you actually dare to take 95% of it?" The dark green armored clansman roared, the other silver armored clansman raged too. "You are going overboard."

Palati looked coldly at both of them.

The two fought hard to suppress their rage.

"We don't ask for much, just split 40% between the two of us. You'll get 60% and we'll each get 20%." The dark green armored clansman said, beside him the other one nodded in approval.

"Get lost!"

Palati roared fiercely, "Without me, do you think you can deal with the official level undying? Even though he had just become an official, he already had an undying body. To kill him...you all think it was that easy, do you know how much it cost me? You still want to split the spoils with me? On account that you are from my race I

gave you part of the spoils. If there wasn't a punishment for killing within our race, I would have killed you two long ago."

The other two glanced at each other and gritted their teeth.

"Hmph."

"We hope you live a little longer."

The two automaton clansmen instantly became beams of light and left the broken remains of the control room.

"Two idiots." Palati snorted coldly, and his eyes flashing with brutality. Even though he seemed like a metal person, he was still a life form. Even though his body was sturdy, it was still flexible.

"Hm."

"I lost quite a bit this time, however to actually kill an official level undying, my contribution points were enough compensation. Including the spoils itself...it's not bad. However, the army I own has suffered huge losses...it's time to return to the god base to replenish and repair my strength." He pondered.

Every automaton clansman could be called an empire themselves!

Of course the strength of an automaton empire was its controlling ability and its wealth level, both were crucial! If one

had a huge army...but simply relying on its AI battle abilities wouldn't do. They had to use the Automaton clansman to control the army, allowing the army to use law infused attacks with precise combinations. That way, it could raise their strength by tens to hundreds of times.

The automaton race were living AI's.

And living AI's, the moment they knew the laws, combined with their natural absurd calculation and commanding abilities...it was terrifying.

Combined with the automaton weapons, their strength was terrifying!

It was a pinnacle race as terrifying as the bug clan!

The bug queen had natural battle instincts!

The automaton race was even more technical and knowledgeable, and were very scheming!

"Hm?"

"There's a human ship?" Sitting in the control room, Palati's eyes gleamed. "An E9 grade alloy ship, low level engravings on surface, looks like a normal sector lord team ship. However...there's a possibility of it being an elite sector lord ship."

"However..."

"As long as its within my abilities, I can settle it. After this, I can head back to replenish my strength." Palati smiled. "Pitiful humans, you can try in vain to detect my location. Hmph, in terms of technological abilities...compared to our automaton race, you are just average."

...

Remains could be easily seen everywhere, be it corpses or ships or weapons.

The vein lines of a seemingly normal floating piece of metal began to give off terrifying energy, storing energy and gradually, a translucent light ball could be seen.

"Attack!" In the distance, Palati ordered.

"Di."

"Rumble!"

A blinding pillar of light instantly tore through space, rushing at the disc shape ship flying. It instantly hit and part of the ship melted. The powerful pillar of light tore through the thick E9 grade alloy ship's body, causing it to explode into a fireball.

"Rumble..." Ripples shot out in all directions spreading over tens of thousands of km, causing large amounts of debris and remains to be knocked far away.

...

Within the ship.

"I dare to bet Madman would get more contribution points."

"I bet on Rock, look at him, such a calm fellow. Haha...this time, he will definitely get more contribution points than Madman. I bet 1 mixed element on Rock."

"You really dare to bet? I bet on Madman, I too bet 1 mixed element."

"I bet on Rock."

"Madman."

The old sector soldiers were all gathered around setting their bets. Because, each time they came out to battle, it would go on for quite a few years, and sometimes up to thousands of years. Hence they naturally gambled on which of the two new recruits would do better, Poison led this gamble.

They swiftly made their bets.

"You two aren’t betting? If you do, I’ll accept it too." Poison said as he squatted in his sofa.

Rock grinned.

Luo Feng laughed too.

"Warning, imminent..." An ear piercing alarm rang throughout the resting quarters, causing the chatting soldiers to instantly change their expressions. Almost simultaneously, every one of them had swiftly retrieved their weapons.

Rumble!

The moment the alarm rang, the entire ship shook fiercely, the resting quarters was shaking violently too. The outer layer of the ship was completely blown apart, and this completely F9 grade resting quarters was kicked about like a can, under the powerful impact it spun madly in space.

The entire room kept spinning.

All the members in there all felt uncomfortable.

Rumble! Tai Wo instantly released his powerful undying energy and covered the entire room.

"Everybody out." Tai Wo ordered.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

4 cabin doors opened simultaneously within.

"Go!" Poison ordered, armor instantly covered his body and he revealed only his eyes. Beside him, the Mother Flame race Hammer carried a large hammer and shield, the two simultaneously flew out of a door. The others flew out of the other doors.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

The old soldiers all swiftly headed out, Luo Feng carried the Nan Shen armament and followed...

Chapter 759: Danger

They flew out of the resting room and into the space, where ripples from the explosion before were still reverberating.

"Hm?" Luo Feng gazed about and saw the remains of the ship that had just exploded, not seeing any enemy.

"Be careful everybody." Captain Tai Wo communicated, simultaneously keeping the resting room in his world ring. He didn't care much about the ship being destroyed. Afterall, the most valuable place within was the completely intact F9 metal Tungsten mother rock resting room.

"Where's the enemy?" Rock's eyes gleamed and he looked about.

"New recruit, don't get anxious. Just be vigilant, but leave everything else to us." Demon lady smiled.

The other old soldiers all smiled as they looked around carefully. They had experienced too many such incidents...even in the face of danger, they were completely calm and composed.

"Since they are not showing themselves, let's go." Tai Wo suddenly flew in a direction.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

The other 9 followed him and swiftly tore through space and fled.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

9 spots from the distance shot out a glaring thunder bolt, and all of them were converging around Luo Feng and his group. Even a powerful undying wouldn’t be able to reach light speed in an instant in the actual universe.

However!

Thunder and light etc, the moment it was unleashed it was light speed. Luo Feng and the others however required a certain amount of time to accelerate to close to lightspeed. As for the ships...it required even more time to do so.

Hence as the 9 points shot out its light beams, it quickly joined together, forming a huge thunder cage!

The huge cage completely surrounded Luo Feng and his little group.

Chi chi chi...the instant it formed, countless thunder snakes tore through space and wrapped about the over 1 hundred million km in diameter cage. Without a doubt...Luo Feng and his group of 10 were attacked by them.

"Thunder hell!"

"It’s thunder hell!"

The old soldiers seemed shocked.

"Let’s go, this is the work of the automaton race, and a powerful one at that. It’s very troublesome." Tai Wo ordered.

Immediately, he led the way and the others followed him.

Luo Feng and Rock however were curious.

Why flee?

This thunder hell was no threat at all.

"If the lightning bolts attack us, it can instantly kill a sector lord. However...the cage it formed and its lightning snakes have spread over a hundred million km in diameter. It probably wouldn’t even be able to kill a sector lord or 2, there’s no threat right?." The new recruit Rock asked.

"What’s terrifying about the thunder hell?" Luo Feng asked as they fled too. Being able to multitask was a very normal thing, chatting while fleeing was normal.

"New recruit, you’ll see in awhile, we are definitely in trouble. This thunder hell...it’s not something a normal automaton

clansman can set up." Poison’s expression was serious.

Luo Feng nodded.

His perspectives were extremely high, easily seeing that...this thunder hell was able to spread over a hundred million km in diameter. For it to reach so far, the amount of equipment usage would easily range in the millions of mixed elements! And the Automaton race was proficient in this, hence their costs may be lower. However it would still probably exceed hundreds of thousands of mixed elements. This was definitely something not any ordinary automaton sector lord could afford.

As for its energy usage, it wasn’t too shocking.

As the thunder snakes could keep revolving about the cage, if there wasn’t anyone in the cage, they could keep doing so, creating an energy loop, making its usage close to 0!

"Energy loop" It was like the AAA god base. The energy barrier of the huge base was able to withstand even attacks of a knight. The colorful barrier was maintained throughout...as long as it wasn’t attacked, it would have no energy usage at all.

...

As Luo Feng and his team fled, suddenly...

Rumble...

A blur of light dots shot out from the 9 spots in the thunder cage. These dots swiftly shot towards the group to surround them, forcing them to slow down as a large number of dots shot at them.

"It’s automaton puppets." Luo Feng easily saw through them.

They seemed like light dots from far, however on careful examination, one could tell...

They were silver robots that were 12m tall. They carried a thick alloy blade on their backs and their surface body had thunder snakes wrapped about, countless thunder snakes within the hell didn’t have any effect on them whatsoever.

"It’s thunder Automaton puppets." Tai Wo emphasized. "We are in trouble, thunder hell and thunder puppet army, this is a common combination in the automaton race, however it is still terrifying. Normally only undyings have this level of equipment."

The 9 members all listened to his orders.

Luo Feng began to feel his own weakness, he was very familiar with battle tactics within humanity itself. However the other races and their strategies, even though he had researched a lot about it through the virtual universe network, the explanations were too ambiguous. Like the automaton race, the sites had said they were living AIs and every one of them represented an automaton empire. Using their own resources, great control, combination and tactics, they could form a terrifying attack.

"Everybody listen."

"Follow me, we'll breakthrough with the greatest speed, we have to get out of the thunder hell." Tai Wo ordered.

"Yes!"

The 9 listened.

The team immediately flew at shocking speed, as the cage was simply too huge, their little team had to fight hard just to get around the thunder puppet army.

...

Within the broken ship's control room.

The automaton Palati smiled, "Trying to escape? Army 6, formation ci9, engage!"

...

These puppets have lower flexibility, they shouldn't be able to catch us." Luo Feng dodged the thunder puppets and continued to flee.

The closest puppet army suddenly absorbed a large amount of the thunder snakes. Over 100,000 thunder puppets seemed to form an electric circuit, as countless snakes were flowing through them, of which 21 of the puppets suddenly produced glaring thunder balls.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

21 thunder balls, they all formed a special engraving, almost like a thunder fishing net.

Sou!

The fishing net shot out at light speed.

As it got close to Luo Feng and his team, the powerful binding slowed down and covered the team. The powerful pressure was trapping the team, it was actually infused with space laws, this made Luo feng shocked.

"Ha!" Tai Wo howled, unleashing his undying energy and law domain.

Countless yellow light dots spread throughout tens of thousands of km. Every one of them were extremely heavy, smashing against the huge thunder cage. His undying energy swiftly attacked.

"Break open." The Mother Flame race Hammer used a huge hammer to hit the fishing net.

"Break!"

The sector lord Mad Wu controlled his spirit energy weapon, one of the 9 god weapons for spirit readers the God Tearing Armament. It instantly formed a glaring light wheel and slashed madly at the net.

"Tear open." The white robed sector lord God had a drizzle of light beams float about him, causing the space to warp and tear open.

...

The 9 members all unleashed their attacks, Luo Feng used his Nan shen armament too.

The thunder fishing net didn’t really attack them but it trapped them there. And from the distance, one of the 9 puppet armies had already caught up.

Rumble! Captain Tai Wo howled and he finally broke a tens of km wide hole in the net.

At the same time...

The entire fishing net instantly crumbled.

Rumble...The originally unstable net crumbled, the powerful lightning energy exploded open, instantly tearing through the surrounding space. The powerful ripples hit Luo Feng's little team too, Captain Tai Wo however blocked them.

"Captain." Rock looked worried at the captain.

"I'm fine." He said softly. "All of you, looks like this will be troublesome. The puppet army has already surrounded us...looks like we won't be able to avoid this fight."

"Why flee, since we are heading to a place to fight anyway, might as well start the fight from here." Poison licked his lips, his eyes gleaming.

"Hm." Hammer nodded.

The other members' eyes all gleamed with fighting spirit.

"Demon lady, Wei, you two be more careful." Tai Wo ordered.

"We can protect ourselves, killing the enemy however will be hard. Against the automaton race...our illusions have no effect at all." The skinny Wei communicated back. Every illusionist knew how to control spirit weapons too, only thing was that they were more proficient in illusions, but not so much at using the weapons themselves.

The space swiftly recovered.

And three teams of puppets had already surrounded the little team. Every army had over 100,000 puppets, with a glance, they had the team completely surrounded. In the distance, 6 other teams were rushing over at sub light speed, it would take only a few seconds for them to be completely blocked off.

"I wonder how the team will deal with this." Luo Feng was very calm. The automaton puppet army, as long as he took out his undying Star eating plant, with its regenerative abilities and ability to grow over a million km, it could wrap all of them instantly!

...

Within the distant broken ship's control room.

"The trap is set, time to collect!" Palati said softly in his alloy chair. "One undying and nine sector lords...I'll at most lose 27% of the puppets before I am able to win."

Chapter 760: Kicking a Metal Board?

In space, the three teams of thunder puppets surrounding Luo Feng's team instantly began their attacks.

"Kill!"

"Die!"

The puppets were all 12m tall, brandishing the alloy blade from their backs orderly, after which they roared and rushed at the team.

10 people, against a million thunder puppets?

The scene of the team being surrounded by a million thunder puppets made the inexperienced Rock shudder.

"Kill." The Flame Mother race fighter Hammer howled and unleashed his world projection, instantly engulfing the surrounding puppets and slowing them down. With his huge shield, he easily defended against their attacks. They were 12m tall and this made it hard for too many to attack at a time, Hammer easily defended against them.

1 large shield and 1 large hammer.

Rumble! The hammer struck as fast as lightning against the chest

of a puppet. Chi...the alloy chest of the puppet was knocked in and it was knocked far away, behind him, the quick puppets easily dodged it.

"New recruits, use your heavy attacks! These thunder puppets are all E9 grade alloys. Destroying their bodies will take up too much energy, it's not worth it. Just use heavy attacks to destroy their machinery within, these quantity based puppets probably wouldn't cost too much! Hit them hard...even if their body is still intact, they won't be able to move after." The Mother Flame race Hammer ordered Luo Feng and Rock.

Rock brandished two blades as he used his world projection.

"Understood." He replied.

He began to madly attack the thunder puppets, every blade with enough vibrations as he slashed through their bodies. Even though it only left little scratches on the surface and seemingly undamaged, in truth, the internal machinery of each robot was destroyed from inside, after receiving each attack, they were immobilized.

...

A tornado was rushing through the puppets.

The tornado slashed through with a cold flash of the blade, however only 1/3rd of the puppets hit were immobilized.

This was Tornado of the 9 sector lord generals, he was the fastest amongst the 7 old soldiers.

"Tornado, you are disadvantaged." The distant Demon lady controlled a ball of liquid that floated about. This liquid like spirit weapon easily blocked off the surrounding thunder puppets.

"At least I'm killing more than you." Tornado said seriously.

...

The many sector lord generals easily destroyed the enemies. Other than the illusionist Demon lady, the others were clearing off the puppets. Even the illusionist Wei controlled a Nan Shen Armament and he used its 7th form, the Sky and land Pillar. It was about 20cm thick and 6m long, the golden rod hit heavily on each puppet.

This sky and land pillar, was the model of heavy attacks.

The moment they were hit, the puppets all fell.

"Madman, your achievements in the Nan Shen Armament is very high too, the 8th level's space slicer? Or the 9th level A Match against Undying?" The skinny illusionist Wei asked.

Luo Feng's killing rate was extremely high.

He too used the 7th form’s pillar, however the gold pillar formed had a huge void about it. As it rolled, it easily destroyed tens of puppets at a time. With just one sweep, a whole bunch of them were destroyed.

This gold pillar was infused with space laws, and were extremely heavy and powerful.

It’s enemy killing efficiency…was shocking.

Anyone could easily tell that anyone able to unleash the 7th form to such a level could probably unleash a level higher than that, 8th or even the 9th! Hence the illusionist Wei asked.

"This thunder puppet army shouldn’t be that weak." Luo Feng controlled the Nan Shen Armament and easily destroyed the surrounding puppets. "He should still have other tactics."

"The automaton puppets are much weaker than bug soldiers."

"They are afterall simply robots. One heavy attack can shake and damage their internal machinery, making them immobilized." Luo Feng thought. "The bug soldiers…are actually life forms. In terms of production, theirs are much higher."

E9 grade automaton puppets are simply huge robots made with E9 alloys. As there were over a thousand E9 puppets, the cost of production would probably be akin to that of a E9 grade ship with

a diameter of a 100m.

As for the sector lord pinnacle bug soldiers, each one of them was priced around an E9 grade ship!

Just from the price alone one could see which was better!

"Collect, I will collect all!" The chemist Poison stood in space. Two dark green vines extended from his armor, easily clearing the puppets around him. The many puppets were all immobilized after being hit and were kept in his world ring.

"Collect them after immobilizing them. It'll make the enemy feel the pinch. Haha, these puppets are only valuable because of their alloys, one alone won't be worth much, but a 1,000...will be enough for a ship. If we can get 10,000 of them, we'll earn much." Poison was very excited.

"Right, collect." Demon lady nodded.

"Collect and make him feel the pinch and flee. Let that enemy know that he's hit a metal board." The captain Tai Wo was laughing loudly too. While laughing, he used his law domain to carefully scan the surrounding endless thunder puppet army.

Even though close to 10,000 puppets had been lost already, compared to the million strong army...that was but just 1%.

...

In the distant broken ship, Palati smiled in his alloy chair. "They are already gathered, first trap the undying and kill the 9 sector lords. Then use all strength to kill the undying...let the massacre begin!"

In space, the 10 sector lords surrounded by the million automaton puppets finally changed their expressions.

"Captain!"

"Be careful captain."

The others all clearly saw 3,000 bolts of thunder shooting out from the million strong army, surrounding the captain Tai Wo. These 3,000 bolts were space infused attacks, the countless puppets about madly absorbed the thunder and passed it on to the 3,000 core puppets.

These 3,000 core puppets surrounded and attacked Tai Wo.

"Ah."

"Get lost." Tai Wo roared, with a flash he appeared before one of them and punched its body.

Rumble!

The puppet was knocked far away, its surface E9 grade alloy exploded open, revealing a purple metal within. As the surface E9 exploded open...it, finally revealed its true face. A completely purple metal puppet, after being knocked by an undying, it was undamaged and flew right back, rejoining the other 2999 puppets and continuing its attack.

In the distance, Luo Feng's expression changed slightly. "It's actually a F8 metal Amethyst essence. Looks like the 3,000 puppets surrounding the captain are all F8 grade puppets. This is troublesome, such high level puppets, just shaking them with a hard attack won't do."

"Amethyst essence!"

"It's amethyst essence!"

"That's not the E9 grade puppets but the expensive F grade puppets."

The 7 old soldiers changed their expressions.

They weren't as relaxed as before. 1 million E9 puppets could probably only be worth as much as 100 F8 puppets. But, just the 3,000 F8 puppets were enough to distract the undying Tai Wo.

"Countless normal puppets are absorbing the Thunder hell's energy and are turning into the F8 puppets, making them completely able to pressure the captain." Luo Feng thought.

"Be careful, there are other F8 grade puppets." The captain warned them anxiously.

It was indeed so.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

Countless bolts of lightning shot towards 800 core puppets. These 800 instantly surrounded and attacked Luo Feng and the other 8 sector lords.

The Illusionists Wei and demon lady each had 50 core puppets attacking them.

Hammer, Tornado, God and Rock...including Luo Feng, each had 100 surrounding them. And they used combined law attacks! Their power was absurd.

"This is troublesome, Poison, Poison, save me." Demon lady's expression changed as she shouted.

"Everybody give it your all."

The chemist Poison shouted. "Take out some of your trump cards, don't save them. We can always exchange for more treasure when its gone. However if you die...it's really over." Dark green vines shot out from his body and spread over many directions.

Each of them reached hundreds of km long, and wrapped up a large amount of the normal puppets and madly sweeping them aside.

"Howl!" Hammer howled too, the rhombus crystal on his forehead lit up and his body grew quite a bit.

"Kill!"

The white armored God gave off a glaring white light. The book he wielded ripped apart and countless fragments melded with the pike he held, making it more ancient than before.

"I'll have to use some effort." The most calm amongst the group was Luo Feng, who looked at the Nan Shen Armament, "The 9th form A match against Undying should be enough to destroy these stupid puppets."

Weng!

The dark gold long rod on his back instantly separated along with the golden pillar, countless gold blades swiftly formed together and became the Nan Shen Armament's most perfect form, the Nan Shen gold blade. A 3m long normal looking gold blade was formed.

"Nan Shen gold blade?"

"A Match against undying?"

"9th form?"

The scene completely shocked the other generals.

Chapter 761: Luo Feng's Blade

Even though the defenses of the F grade thunder puppet were incredibly strong, their attacks were naturally weak. They relied on the countless E grade puppets supplying energy from the thunder hell, and gathering them within the core of the F grade puppets to make them stronger...

Even so, just one F grade puppet alone was simply akin to one sector lord general in strength.

"Bastards, these punks sure are hard to deal with." Tai Wo raged.

3,000 F grade thunder puppets spread themselves about Tai Wo and surrounded him heavily.

They continued to absorb energy from the countless thunder puppets that were around. At this time, Tai Wo was constantly being attacked. Even though he didn't care about the single attacks, with 3,000 of them...as long as 1/3 of the attacks hit him, it would be a nightmare!

Luckily he dodged well.

Rumble!

Rumble!

He knocked them over and over away, making the number that surrounded him decrease. However after a while, they would once again returned almost undamaged.

Despite his fast attacking speed...the number of F grade puppets surrounding him never went below 2,500.

Just like that...

Tai Wo was held up by the 3,000 thunder puppets, unable to break free.

"Everybody be careful, these F grade puppets are all comparable to sector lord generals after receiving all the energy." Tai Wo communicated urgently. "Poison...we are relying on you. The enemy doesn't know your strength, give it your all. Keep Demon lady and Wei and the others into your world ring."

"And Madman." Tai Wo observed the battle, discovering Luo Feng's strength, "You can unleash the 9th form of the Nan Shen Armament, help the other members."

...

"Understood"

"Understood."

Poison and Luo Feng replied simultaneously.

Poison relied on the large amount of dark green vines extending out of his armor that wrapped about large amounts of normal automaton puppets. It dug through them in all directions, causing a big stir within the army of puppets. The 100 F grade puppets that surrounded him were hence unable to absorb sufficient energy from the others.

Actually from the scene, everybody could tell that the F grade puppets were simply large chunks of metal.

One dead piece of metal without any attacking ability.

The only reason their attacks were strong was because of the countless normal robots absorbing energy from the thunder hell and sending it over. Without the thunder hell...these F grade puppets would be no threat at all. Without the large amount of normal puppets, the F grade puppets' absorption of energy would be decreased by tens of thousands of times.

"Be careful poison." Luo Feng communicated.

The number of F grade puppets on him rose from 400 to 800 in an instant.

The other 400 aimed at Luo Feng and the others.

"Little punks." Luo Feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle and

controlled the Nan Shen gold blade.

Xiu!

The Nan Shen gold blade was demonic, appearing occasionally and instantly vanishing from sight as it travelled through space, appearing hundreds of meters elsewhere. Rumble! The blade hit 1 F grade puppet. This 9th form was powerful enough to harm an undying, one could only imagine its power.

Rumble! That F grade puppet was knocked far away as it spun out of control.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

It was extremely fast as it travelled and knocked the many F grade puppets away. One had to know...that it had the ability to travel through the slits of space, how terrifying was the speed of teleportation? It far exceeded the speed of Tai Wo's movements. As long as an undying hadn't reached the level of teleportation, their speed couldn't match up to this blade.

Even Tai Wo could easily knock close to 500 of the them away in an instant.

The 50 puppets surrounding Luo Feng, in the blink of an eye, had been knocked away as the gold blade attacked 50 times.

Xiu!

Luo Feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle and flashed, swiftly heading towards Demon lady who was getting fatigued from constantly defending.

"Demon lady." Luo Feng flashed over, his gold blade flashing through and knocking away the 50 F grade puppets.

"Madman, Madman. I love you to death." The fatigued demon lady shouted with glee. "Quickly keep me into your world ring."

Sou!

Demon lady was kept in Luo Feng's world ring.

"Bastard." Poison gritted his teeth. He had already brandished a bottle of colorful liquid, however after he saw Luo Feng unleash his strength, he immediately smiled and kept the bottle.

On the battlefield.

Luo Feng was fast as lightning as he passed through the puppet army. His gold blade flashed through simultaneously, appearing occasionally and attacking with terrifying speed.

"Hahaha...this new recruit the captain got sure is powerful. Madman, I really respect you." The illusionist Wei who was getting worn out from defending against the 50 puppets laughed loudly

too. He sent a flying kiss to Luo Feng, he was obviously excited to escape death.

Sou.

The illusionist Wei was kept in Luo Feng's world ring. One had to know that he easily got 100 world rings at Wu Long Stafield, the world rings...he had plenty of them.

"Come here quickly." Hammer roared urgently, "I can't hold on much longer."

Hammer was an incredibly intrepid fighter, and his offense and defense were strong. His only weakness was his flexibility He was often hit by the F grade puppets' attacks, if it weren't for his natural strength, he would have died long ago.

Sou!

As the 50 puppets were knocked away, Luo Feng kept Hammer in his world ring.

...

"Madman, you sure are powerful." The new recruit Rock complimented as well.

"Damn, the first time I met him, I knew this madman was a

powerful warrior. Haha, look, look how powerful he is, how decisive he is. 50 F grade puppets...they are merely toys against his Nan Shen gold blade. This final level of the Nan Shen Armament sure is powerful." The white armored God laughed carefree.

"Hehe, we are set for the future. Haha..." The fighter Tornado laughed too.

...

They were all kept in Luo Feng's world ring.

Only 4 people were left fighting against the puppets...Tai Wo, Poison, Luo Feng and Mad Wu.

Mad Wu was a spirit reader, he used the combination of Wind and space. Also, the God tearing armament, his current usage of the weapon was akin to the Nan Shen Armament's 8th level Space slicer, and its speed was terrifying, he could easily defend against the 50 puppets himself.

"Haha, Madman, come help me." Tai Wo communicated excitedly.

"Coming."

Luo Feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle and rushed forward, controlling the Nan Shen gold blade.

Weng...the blade became countless images. In almost a blink of an eye, it knocked over 100 of the puppets over 10k km away, and this was also only because of the countless normal puppets stopping them, otherwise they would have been knocked millions of km away.

Shua! Shua! Shua!

The Nan Shen gold blade was fast as lightning, appearing everywhere occasionally. The normal puppets didn't even affect its speed in the slightest.

The ability to pass through the slits of space was simply heavenly, it made its speed terrifying.

In an instant! Over 500 puppets were knocked far away...

When the 1st knocked away puppet had returned, Luo Feng had already knocked away 2,000 F grade puppets, Tai Wo took the chance to escape their trap.

"Haha, Madman, beautifully executed." Tai Wo exclaimed happily.

Rumble...

The little team of thunder puppet armies surrounding their

group swiftly began to retreat, dispersing in all directions, and the activated Thunder hell closed off too.

"They are gone."

"They've retreated."

Mad Wu, Poison, Tai Wo and Luo Feng looked at the huge army dispersing in 9 directions.

"Should we chase?" Luo Feng asked.

"We cannot." Tai Wo shook his head. "An automaton who is able to produce such a huge army definitely has a self destruct Core crystal akin to a normal undying, even the cheapest Fire god core crystal...would be extremely expensive. If that was used to attack us, it's simply a small loss to them. However if we continue to chase them down and force him to give his all...one fire god core crystal's explosion, if we are not careful, might wipe us out."

Luo Feng was shocked.

The fire god core crystal...he had used it as an excuse against Yan zhu emperor back then.

1 low grade fire god crystal (Akin to a normal flame undying's self destruct), with his current status he could purchase it at a discounted rate of 600,000 points.

And the automaton race proficient in making them could get them at an even lower price!

An automaton capable of setting up the thunder hell, would most likely have a fire god core crystal or such an item for self protection.

"My guess was right, this thunder puppet army should have suffered a huge loss before attacking us." Poison laughed. "We've experienced such battles before, looking at his control and resources...he could definitely do much better."

...

Within the distant broken ship's control room.

Palati roared in his alloy chair, "A sector lord level 9 plant assisting life form, another with the Nan Shen armament's 9th form, how can my luck be so bad. To actually meet such a rare human sector lord group...if, if only my losses from killing the official level undying before weren't that huge, with the thunder hell's attacking system being damaged, how could you escape? It's your good luck, just pray you don't meet me ever again."

In space.

Tai Wo brandished an E9 grade universe ship.

"Captain, this ship seems very similar to the previous one, the only difference is the resting area is empty." Luo Feng smiled.

"It’s not empty anymore." He stood within the ship and pointed ahead.

Sou.

The resting quarters suddenly appeared and locked right into place, completing the lay out.

Luo Feng and the 4 immediately stepped in.

"Haha, I ordered a total of 600 of these E9 exactly similar ships back then." Tai Wo smiled. "All of them are completely alike, and are able to at most hit 1.2 light speed in the dark universe, with simple law engravings outside. It can be said to be the cheapest E9 grade ships. However over the many years, we’ve already had 182 of them destroyed. Right, get everybody out."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded and with a thought.

Tornado, Wei, God, Rock, Demon lady and Hammer all appeared.

9 members and the captain all gathered there.

"Madman." Demon lady said, "I love you to death."

"Haha our team has one more powerful warrior."

The resting quarters erupted in cheers.

Chapter 762: Contribution Points

The disc shaped E9 grade ship flew at sub light speed carefully through the space, dodging the dangerous spots.

Within the resting quarters.

"Everybody sit." Tai Wo smiled and sat in the sofa. Using his undying energy to control a wine bottle and some glasses, he poured 10 cups of wine. The crystal clear glasses floated before the 10 of them.

He lifted his glass.

"Let’s toast." He said.

"Haha..."

The 9 members smiled carefree and lifted their glasses.

"For our luck in this battle, for our 2 new exceptional members, let’s toast." Tai Wo said.

"Cheers."

"Cheers."

The group of sector lords laughed loudly. Any one of them, when placed in the normal starfields would all be large figures living it up. However, they all chose to come to the outer region wars... because they all had the hopes of becoming even stronger and fighting other stronger warriors!

"As per usual, we'll first reflect on the battle." Tai Wo placed his glass down, "That battle before...everything was within the enemy's control. Whether it was the thunder hell set up or the 9 armies of thunder puppets, the 3,000 F grade puppets holding me up and killing you all after etc, everything was within his plan."

The 9 members listened intently.

"All the other old members did well, staying not too far from me and Poison. Even in danger...Poison would be able to give his all and save you all." Tai Wo revealed a smile, "The two new recruits did very well too. Amongst which I'm very satisfied with Rock, he did as well as the old members. I believe that through some more experience, he will get stronger too."

"Of course! The one that made everybody the happiest was...we got a new powerful member...Madman!" Tai Wo looked at Luo Feng.

"Madman."

"Madman."

The group looked at him and cheered. In such a dangerous place such as the battlefields, it was a good thing to have such powerful team mates.

"Because of him, Poison didn’t need to go all out, and we saved a valuable potion." Tai Wo looked at the childlike Poison squatting on the sofa, "Poison, you’ve got it made."

"Hehe." Poison grinned at Luo feng.

Luo Feng looked shocked at him.

This chemist was very strong?

"Madman." Demon lady’s voice was enchanting. "Poison is the 2nd strongest in our group, he once defeated an undying before."

"Defeated an undying?" Luo Feng looked shocked at him.

"What!" Rock was even more shocked.

Even the 9th form of the Nan Shen Armament, A match against Undying, was only a match, and could be use for survival. It couldn’t exactly defeat an undying. Of course the Heavenly Bridge’s level 13, 14 and 15 all used this move, of which the 15th level’s move had the ability to already kill a normal undying.

However that was the Heavenly Bridge level 15!

The requirement for official level undyings! Such an absolute genius would definitely become a sector lord core member of the Virtual Universe Company.

"The main thing is that I can rely on my natural ability and potions combined with the plant life form I nurtured." Poison smiled. "1 potion costs close to 80 mixed elements to succeed, hehe, Madman, you've saved me 80 mixed elements, come, let's drink."

Luo Feng lifted his glass, filled with respect within.

A chemist was able to create special potions, even according to one's own needs, nurturing special plant life forms.

"To reach this level, he is pretty impressive." Luo Feng thought.

"Other than the captain and Poison, Madman, you are our 3rd ranked warrior now." Mad Wu laughed.

"Hm, the 3rd."

"And you don't need potions like Poison."

The others all laughed and said.

...

This battle allowed everyone to know the strengths of their two new recruits, they got a good grasp on the two of them. Especially the new Madman, who was regarded as the 3rd ranked in the team.

Luo Feng was indifferent.

He didn’t care about such ranks, even though his earth body alone had the ability to kill an undying.

The ship continued forward. In a flash, two months had passed and even though they did encounter two other attacks, they were able to easily settle it. Afterall, a team led by an undying with 9 sector lord generals...wasn’t something just anyone could deal with.

This was also why they headed to a special location, the other locations’ enemies were simply too weak, and accumulating contribution points simply took too long.

...

"The two attacks before sure were weak, and the moment they saw we had an undying, they all fled."

"Hm, so boring."

"This makes accumulating points too slow."

The members discussed within the resting quarters.

"We've got two more days to reach the starfield 001289038484... Shattered stars." Tai Wo said, "Shattered stars is a more renowned battlefield area, as large amounts of other race warriors lay hidden there. Over there, we will definitely be pushed, the only thing we will be complaining about is our own lack of strength."

"Madman."

A deep voice resounded, the most sturdy looking of the team, Hammer, looked at him, "What's your contribution points quota?"

"My contribution points quota?" Luo Feng frowned.

Every soldier in the outer regions had a quota to hit, they had to get sufficient points to free themselves. For example, if one had a request of 1 million points, starting at zero, killing in the battlefields would give them points.

Until they reached 1 million, only then could he choose to retire, exchange for treasures or continue to fight, even fight alone etc...

He would gain the right to choose.

And before hitting that quota, they would have to obey the army orders.

"Right, how many do you have?"

"Madman’s quota should be high."

The sector lord team sat in the sofas and looked over.

"My..." Luo Feng said casually, "It’s still ok, the quota is 1 billion."

"1 billion?"

The white armored God stared wide eyed, "Did I hear right?"

Luo Feng nodded curiously, "Right, 1 billion." Was this number absurd, he thought it should be within a normal range.

"Damn, 1 billion?"

"My god!"

"It’s 1 billion."

Even the calm Tai Wo stood up, the old members all looked shocked at Luo Feng, the illusionist Wei stroking his cat turned quickly at Rock, "Rock, how much is your quota?"

"Mine is 2 hundred million." Rock said.

"Not bad."

"It’s already impressive."

"But Madman, it’s absurd, it’s actually 1 billion?"

The members all discussed.

The two new members however were curious, just what did this quota actually mean? Even though Luo Feng’s status was high, he had only checked on some information he needed to know. As for just what this quota number actually implied, he didn’t know.

"If you interact enough with the other sector lords, you would know." Tai Wo exclaimed, "The capable ones do the most work. The stronger one is, the higher his quota would be. When the new recruits first join the outer region wars...they would be given their quotas. These would accurately represent their strength."

"And the authority they are given is only the most raw judgment of their strength, the normal sector lord, the elite and the general, these are unclear levels."

"The sector lords usually have a lowest quota of 1million, the highest being 1 billion."

"Of which a normal soldier normally has 1 million to 10 million."

"The elites have 10 million to about 1 hundred million."

"Sector lord generals have 1 hundred million to 1 billion."

Tai Wo said, "The quotas between 1 hundred million to 1 billion are all sector lord generals, of which they have different levels of strengths too. It's obvious that Rock is already very exceptional for a new recruit. Even without any experience in the battlefield, he's gotten this strong. Madman however...you, you are simply..."

Luo Feng was stunned.

"1 billion is the top limit of a general. For anyone that has such a high quota...it means you have the strength no weaker than a normal undying." Tai Wo emphasized.

"Hm."

"The Virtual Universe Company's system will never be wrong, you have the strength to match a normal undying."

The members were all shocked as they looked at him.

However they didn't know...

That sector lords that could match a normal undying did have quotas of 1 billion. However, those able to kill a normal undying or even an official level undying etc all had the same 1 billion quota. As that was the absolute limit for sector lords.

They didn’t know that Luo Feng’s strength was much more terrifying than what they imagined. For them, being able to match and kill a normal undying was already heavenly!

"So, that’s how it is." Luo feng shook his head and laughed.

"Growing through the many life or death experiences in the battlefield before reaching general level. There are many sector lords that go through this. However, those able to match and kill a normal undying, those are extremely few and rare, of our entire 26th base, there are probably only 2 or 3 such sector lords." Tai Wo exclaimed, "In contrast, our alliance partners, even our enemies the bug clan sector lord queens, automaton sector lords, many are able to kill undyings. Some of their warrior talents are simply too heavenly, as for human sector lords able to do so are simply too rare."

"However, our team now has one." Tai Wo smiled at him.

Poison looked at him too.

Their eyes were filled with anticipation, their team now had 3 undying level strengths. Unlike Poison that had to rely on potions, Luo Feng truly had the battle strength of an undying. This would naturally raise their survival rate in Shattered stars by a lot.

"Howl."

Luo Feng could only smile.

1 billion contribution points quota?

He didn’t even think about the number, this quota was something the system itself had alloted him. It was a formality, every sector lord ranged between 1 million to 1 billion, and his strength was enough to be given the limit.

However the Virtual Universe Company had another request for him to accomplish through his life or death training.

That request was 10 trillion points!

After completing it, only then could he leave the outer region wars, this was his life or death training!

This was the army’s request, and another was the Virtual Universe Company’s sector lord level request.

One was 1 billion, another was 10 trillion!

Hence...

Luo Feng didn’t even think his 1 billion was a lot!

Chapter 763: Shattered Star System

The virtual universe had high standards for every primal region sector lord. Since, Luo Feng was one that had passed the domain lord Sky mountain and acquired 3 billion points in reward, also being the primal chaos city leader's disciple...one could only imagine their level of request and expectation they had of him.

It was definitely the highest amongst all the primal region sector lords!

10 trillion points quota, this was also after careful consideration from the company.

...

Time passed.

"We'll be arriving at our destination in half a day." Tai Wo gazed at the 9 sector lord generals, and his eyes were solemn. "Shattered stars is a very dangerous region, Madman and Rock, you probably know very little about the area. Before we arrive, I'll explain it to the both of you."

Luo Feng and Rock listened intently.

Luo Feng didn't dare relax at all, the other races had all sorts of methods and tactics, the moment he wasn't careful, even if he was strong, he'd still be killed.

"The entire starfield is a battlefield."

"Battles can erupt at anytime." Tai Wo looked at the two of them. "However, there are two types of battles. One is the army battles, and the other is between elite teams."

"Universe level and domain lords, these are weak. And some normal sector lord soldiers, without the invitation of any elite team, would be sent to lead large amounts of universe and domain lords, forming a huge army." Tai Wo said, "These armies are led by an undying to go into war with the other armies. The undyings would fight other undyings and the weaker ones would fight each other..."

"We are different."

"We are an elite sector lord team, just us alone is akin to a full army." Tai Wo said. "However, we are small in numbers, and there are many empty spaces within the 7th starfield battlefield. We can easily spot the enemies, fleeing as soon as we know we are not a match. Hence these areas aren't fit to be battlefields."

"Special regions are thus made within this 7th battlefield. The 4 pinnacle races put their strongest warriors within the regions and massacre each other, the battles are intense."

"We are heading to the 001289038484 region...Shatter stars system. It's a more renowned battle region. Over trillions of years, who knows how many warriors have fallen there."

Tai Wo gently tapped in mid air.

A light screen immediately formed and on it a star map appeared.

"This is Shattered stars system." Tai Wo pointed at the map.

Luo Feng looked carefully.

Shattered Stars system...it was like a region filled with asteroids.

"The legendary shattered stars system, when this secret region hadn’t become a battle field yet, it was a huge planet. According to what was said, it had a diameter of over 10 million km." Tai Wo exclaimed, "Later on, this planet was completely destroyed by one of the demon clan’s Top races, the 1,000 centipede clan. The planet was reduced to countless remains floating within this space with a diameter of 0.8 light years. Through countless battles after, these remains get shattered further over and over...hence there are countless fragments throughout the area...these fragments are called shattered stars.

"And this whole 0.8 light years in diameter area is called shattered stars system!" Tai Wo said.

Luo Feng nodded, "Shattered stars? Has anybody calculated how many pieces there are?"

"It’s shocking, almost every 1 hundred million km area has fragments, and some with more in density. Some are more sparse within the entire area..." Tai Wo laughed, "It may be due to it being a secret region but the fragments are incredibly cold and sturdy. Even a sector lord’s strength will find it hard to break these fragments."

"And because they are hard to destroy, shattered stars system became a renowned battlefield with large amounts of other race warriors hidden within." Tai Wo said.

"You two must remember!"

"There are simply too many other race warriors, hence we cannot fight for too long or draw too much attention!" Tai Wo emphasized. "The moment the battle drags, it may attract others to rush over, and once we get surrounded...that would be it. If the battle is too flashy...even an official level undying with an undying body, one who is arrogant and powerful, would be reduced to nothing and destroyed!"

Luo Feng nodded.

...

This disc shaped E9 ship finally reached shattered stars system.

Through the external simulator, Luo Feng gazed out. He could see floating planet fragments throughout the space, these

fragments were all over, and a formless energy permeated through everywhere.

"The energy here sure is shocking. Countless warriors have fallen throughout these areas." Poison laughed, "If you feel uncomfortable, you can send part of your consciousness into the virtual universe network to relax, no one will make fun of you. Afterall, we won't be here for a day or two, but for hundreds to thousands of years."

"There's a human sector lord team." Luo Feng looked at his screen.

On the battlefield, humans naturally could assist each other.

The main thing was to keep a portion of the consciousness connected to the virtual universe network. That way, if there were any allies or partners within a 1 billion km area, they would appear.

1, displaying ally markers (Within a 1 billion km area)

2, distress signals (all human allies within the 10 billion km area would receive it)

These were the two huge uses of the virtual universe network in the battlefield.

Of course, there were other uses like reporting and calculations

etc...

"Shattered stars system has many other race warriors." Mad Wu smiled. "There are many humans too, along with allies from other races. It's normal to discover allies within the 1 billion km area."

They progressed.

They often discovered other allies and their markers about.

"Stop."

"We'll stop at the shattered stars system nest for awhile." Tai Wo ordered. The ship slowed down swiftly, "Let's get out."

Hua!

Luo Feng and the others swiftly flew out and Tai Wo kept the resting quarters first before keeping the ship.

The group stood in space.

"The path we flew by, especially the regions we recently passed had many other humans and allies around. It means this is an area we humans mostly control, we'll choose this area to set up base." Tai Wo smiled.

The 9 sector lords nodded.

Luo Feng discovered through his screen that within the 1 billion km area, there were two gathering markers. It was obvious that there were two human and allies areas within.

"That fragment." Tai Wo pointed in the distance. "The scanners have discovered a deep cave within, it should be left behind by one of the teams, we don’t need to waste our strengths."

Sou! Sou! Sou!

The 10 warriors swiftly flew over, closing millions of km in an instant as they landed randomly within the fragment.

This fragment had many marks of battle, it was clear that over trillions of years, it had received countless ripples and attacks. Its largest diameter was 1.6km and smallest was 1.1 km, it had a total of 21 pathways within.

Luo Feng and the team followed one pathway until they reached the core of the fragment.

This was a huge cave with a diameter of about 100m.

"It’s pretty big." Tai Wo smiled and pointed at the ground.

Sou!

A resting quarters completely made of Tungsten essence appeared and landed on the ground.

"Open." Tai Wo ordered.

The cabin door opened automatically and the group entered.

...

Within the resting room deep in the fragment.

"We just arrived at Shattered stars system, everybody take a rest." Tai Wo smiled. "we'll first contact our neighbors through the virtual universe network...the allies that we have in this 1 billion km area. Even though humans have taken most of the region, there will be other race warriors that might invade the area. We cannot see their markers, and those that come will definitely have confidence and strength. Just our sector lord team won't be able to handle them alone, it's better to contact our allies." After which Tai Wo closed his eyes and sent his consciousness into the virtual universe network to contact the neighbors.

The others relaxed.

All calming themselves.

They rested in order to do better in battle.

"1 billion contribution points and 10 trillion." Luo Feng sat in the sofa and pondered. "The army gave me a quota of 1 billion. As long as I finish that...I'll be free, I can choose to retire or exchange for treasure, even choosing to continue to battle or battling alone."

"Hm."

"I'll first stick with Tai Wo and the others, I'll swiftly gain experience about the battlefield and I'll be able to quickly complete my 1 billion points quota too." He thought. "Once that's done, I'll probably understand how to survive in the battlefield, then I'll no longer need to stick to the team."

Sticking to this team, he had no way to fully unleash his strength.

As there were too many people, revealing his true strength would shock them and they would naturally tell their other friends about it...then it'd be troublesome.

Luo Feng was very clear.

His status as the primal chaos city leader's disciple didn't bring just benefits, it brought dangers as well...the other races would madly rush to kill him.

"When I work alone later on."

"I'll be able to unleash my strength and kill the other races, even if my identity is revealed, I can swiftly switch locations."

"Hm."

"I'm still a newbie here, I have to gain more experience." Luo Feng thought, "I'll help out this team while I'm here."

At this time, Tai Wo opened his eyes.

"Haha, I've already contacted our neighbors. They are also two elite sector lord teams led by undyings. One is a human elite team while another is an allied race team." Tai Wo smiled. "We've formed a offensive and defensive alliance. If anyone other race warriors dare attack us here, we 3 will join together. Our survival rate would grow by a huge amount. Everybody rest for a day, tomorrow we begin our battle!"

"Yes!"

The 9 sector lords replied, all filled with anticipation.

Chapter 764: Lei Quan Race

The 7 old members were on high alert when they arrived in Shattered star. This was completely normal to them, as they had been in such environments for too long.

Luo Feng was on high alert too when they first arrived. There was a saying that an able person was more daring. With his high perspectives, and mental state, Luo Feng quickly got used to such a state of alertness, that of being in critical danger at any time.

As for Rock.

He was a new recruit too, however his strength was far from Luo Feng's, and was only considered exceptional amongst other sector lords. After rushing to shattered stars the moment he signed on, the moment he thought about being in such danger all the time, he was unable to calm down. Since the killing aura within the entire area was too heavy, he was a nervous wreck.

"Rock, you should send a part of your consciousness to the virtual universe network to play some games and relax." Tai Wo smiled as he noticed.

"Yes captain." Rock was filled with regret.

"Don't feel bad, everyone here, when we first came to the wars, the feeling of a battle breaking out at any time...it forced everyone to go crazy. There are no such terrifying places in humanity's territories. The new recruits all go through the same thing, we call

it the new recruit sickness." Tai Wo smiled.

Rock nodded and connected to the virtual universe network to relax.

"Captain." Demon lady smiled, "Madman doesn't seem to have that sickness at all, he seems totally calm."

"You think he's an ordinary person?" Poison lay in his sofa and hugged his bottle of wine. He seemed to enjoy drinking the most out of all the members, as for creating potions...most of his experiments were done in the virtual universe as it was realistic enough. As long as there are enough materials, he could do the same in reality.

...

The group chatted casually, some choosing to rest up. Very quickly, the next day came.

"Gather!" The undying Tai wo ordered.

Poison, Mad Wu, God, madman...they all swiftly stood up.

"This is our first mission since coming to Shattered stars, we have to succeed." Tai Wo's gaze swept past the 9 of them. "The old members should know the rules. New recruits...when we encounter special situations, just watch how the old members react."

"Yes."

Luo Feng and Rock nodded.

"Alright, let’s go." Tai Wo smiled and ordered.

"We can finally begin to gain contribution points."

"Haha, I used up most of mine long ago." The old members all laughed, these old members had gone through many life or death situations to become sector lord generals, they had long completed their quotas, hence they were free from the army long ago, they could use the points gathered to exchange for treasures they needed.

Normally 100,000 contribution points added up to 1 mixed element.

Luo Feng and group swiftly exited the nest, the captain naturally kept the resting quarters.

"C9 grade ship?" Luo Feng and Rock stood on the fragment, shocked at the floating ship.

"Right, we’ll be taking a C9 grade ship out." Tai Wo nodded, "This C9 ship’s weakness is its slow acceleration and deceleration, and it dodges slow too. However the moment it accelerates, it can be

quite fast too. Reaching sub light speed shouldn’t be too hard."

"The most important thing is...there are too many powerful warriors in shattered stars, they can attack at any time. The moment they do, the ship would be destroyed...we will be staying here for a long time, if we lose a ship everytime, I cannot afford such losses. Hehe, such C9 grade ships are very cheap, even if I lose hundreds of thousands to millions of them, I wouldn’t feel the pinch." Tai Wo smiled.

Luo Feng was stunned.

C9 grade ships were indeed very cheap, even a million of them wouldn’t add up to 1 mixed element. To an undying...it was indeed very very cheap. Afterall, any heirs to some powerful families all can sit in C grade ships. These were definitely made large scale, just one ancient family alone...would probably have up to 10s of millions of them.

And the wealth of such families usually didn’t even add up to an undying’s.

...

Luo Feng and the others sat in the low quality C9 ship, flying at sub light speed, dodging the many fragments and maintaining distance from them.

"The scanning device I bring along with me is worth 120 mixed

elements, which is much more valuable than a C9 grade ship." Tai Wo stood in the resting quarters and smiled. "This scanning device is able to detect life signals within area with a diameter of 1 hundred million km. Even though we know the markers of our allies, we don't know our enemies'. Hence we have to rely on such devices, this thing...we cannot scrimp on it. A good scanning device is very important."

Luo Feng laughed.

The scanning device was indeed important, hence before coming to the outer region wars, he had exchanged for one himself. With his status and discount, he spent 3.9 million points on one. Naturally, to Luo Feng who had 3 billion points back then, it didn't cost much, and whether it was the outer region wars or the secret regions, this would come in handy.

Even after discount it was 3.9 million points.

If it were auctioned outside, it would cost at least 10 million mixed elements and normal official level undyings only had that much. Such an expensive scanning device like this...normally only emperor level undyings could afford.

"If the enemy has a powerful scanning device too, it would detect our scan." Tai Wo said, "Naturally a lot of other races are weaker technologically. They would only detect us after we began our attack."

The ship continued to progress.

The 1st day, they were mostly within the area with their allies.

The 2nd day, it began with sparse warriors about, later on they discovered many other race warriors.

...

2nd day, in the ship.

"Quick, change direction and fly away from the target." Tai Wo ordered, the ship changed its direction and maintained its sub light speed.

"What's wrong captain?"

"Why so scared?"

Demon lady and Mad Wu mocked.

Tai Wo hushed them, "There are ripples of 6 undyings."

"What?" Luo Feng was slightly shocked, everybody else however jumped up.

"6 undyings gathered together?" The illusionist Wei hugging his cat stared wide eyed.

"Hm."

"Relax, we've been maintaining our speed close to the limit within the area. And with us flying away from them, even if they wanted to chase...they wouldn't be able to." Tai Wo smiled, "They probably detected us too and are too lazy to bother."

"A team formed from 6 undyings?" Luo Feng was curious.

"Hm, this team might have an official level strength within such a team." Tai Wo nodded, "Such a terrifying team is definitely a trump card team. We are only an elite team. If we faced off...just one official level undying would be able to kill us all."

Flying within the space, they were careful throughout.

After experiencing several other dangerous situations.

"Discovered target."

"92.84 million km away from target, there are a total of 5 of them, they should all be sector lords." Tai Wo said.

"5 sector lords? No difficulty at all." The white armored God smiled.

"Be careful everyone, those able to come to shattered stars are all

not easy opponents. Even if they are just 5 sector lords, they should have some trump cards." Poison warned.

"Understood."

"Relax Little Chen Chen."

The ship then began to slow down and headed towards the targets.

"Distance shrinking, 90 million km...80 million...70 million...the 5 sector lords stayed within a fragment without any movement. I guess their scanning device is just average, hence they haven't discovered our scan...and their scanner, should have been jammed by ours already." Tai Wo said.

Anyone in the outer region wars definitely had scanning devices.

If I can detect you and you cant detect me, this was the difference in technology.

Like when they were attacked by the automaton warrior before, their scanners never picked up anything. It was obvious the enemy was much more advanced in technology. And this time...it seemed like their own device was superior to the targets'.

...

After awhile, the distance closed to 3 million km.

"Ship decreasing speed, stopping."

"We've already detected their appearances, they are 5 other race sector lords, look." Tai Wo's arm screen shot out a blurry light that projected the images in mid air. It had their height and size, skin color etc along with detailed information.

It was 5 other race warriors. Their heights were between 21-25m, and they were definitely giants compared to humanity.

They all wore thick armor.

The top half of their bodies were close to humans.

The bottom half were creatures with 6 thick hooves, with a long scaled tail, their entire body was covered in green scales.

"Lei Quan race." Tai Wo said seriously.

"They are creatures proficient in thunder, they are on the bug clan's side." Poison nodded.

"No wonder they dared to come here, the thunder race creatures are harder to deal with."

These old members all began their discussions.

Luo Feng carefully looked at the pictures, getting a better understanding of the other races. Actually Tai wo and Poison etc, they didn't know detailed information about the other races that much. They used their countless battles and interactions with the other races to accumulate their experiences. Hence they had a rough understanding of their abilities.

Luo Feng however knew everything extremely well.

Lei Quan race: They had a sacred land Lei Quan, every infant would be placed in that area, when they could use their own strengths to climb up to the peak of the area and out of it, only then would their nurturing stage be complete. Hence everyone of them...were naturally proficient in lightning laws, they could naturally control it and their comprehension of the laws too naturally made their strengths powerful.

Just like the mosha clansman being proficient in the space laws and the golden horned beast in that of the gold.

Naturally.

Even though they had natural talent, they mostly relied on the evolution from the Lei Quan sacred land. Hence, in terms of comprehension and law unleashing, it couldn't compare to the mosha clansman. Even so...compared to humans, it was already a huge advantage.

However they did have a weakness…their numbers weren’t even a millionth of humanity.

"Everybody get out of the ship."

"And sneak in."

"We will unleash our attacks simultaneously." Captain Tai Wo ordered.

"Yes."

The group sneakily flew down and Tai Wo kept the ship. Later on, they tore through the space and headed towards the fragment where the 5 sector lord Lei Quan race warriors were hiding…

Chapter 765: 1st Batch of Contribution Points

At this time within the fragment’s caves.

5 Lei Quan sector lords were chatting and laughing within.

"Superior, the contribution points we got this time were not bad. If this speed keeps up, within a decade, you’ll have collected sufficient contribution points. Then you can go back and be absorbed into the sacred land!" A warrior with a lion like body with 6 hooves, covered in green scales and a human like torso said.

The tallest 25 m Lei Quan race warrior laughed loudly.

"Right, those that looked down on you before will definitely regret it."

"They will think that he actually died in the outer region wars."

The many clansman all laughed loudly and happily.

Of which the smallest one with a height of 21m, an icy cold looking one revealed a rare smile. "Back then when I stayed in the clan I was under someone, I forced myself out of a death path... finding the only chance. Coming to the outer region wars only has two outcomes. One is to die and the other is to succeed and return, standing above others!"

...

In space, Tai Wo and the others were 100,000 km away.

"Stop." Tai Wo communicated.

The 9 sector lords stopped, the 10 of them were standing in space.

"Don’t get anxious." Tai Wo pointed at the distant fragment. "There are 5 sector lords within. They shouldn’t have discovered us yet, they are now within the fragment itself...let me first send the 1st attack, even if they don’t die, they’d lose half of their strength."

"Captain, we’ll rely on you."

"The captain’s cannon is coming."

The old members communicated and laughed.

Luo Feng watched on curiously.

"Hmph." Tai Wo raised his hands and immediately a torrent of ground undying energy began to gather in his hands, the god energy condensed further...it got stronger and stronger, until a yellow light ball formed between his hands. The strength of the god energy kept rising until even Luo Feng changed his expression.

This was purely overpowering the enemy with strength!

"Go!" Tai Wo rushed forward like lightning, flashing over 100,000 km until he was only a few km away from the fragment. Then he waved his hands almost like tossing out a huge asteroid.

Rumble!

An undying energy ball became a glaring laser, rushing into the spacious cave of the fragment (For the Lei Quan clansmen to fit through, it was naturally spacious).

Within the cave

"Not good!"

"Let's go." The skinny Lei Quan clansman changed his expression and ordered.

Their detection device in the superior's hands had gone off when Tai Wo had rushed closed to them with that powerful energy ripple, he immediately ordered all of them to flee...

At the time...rumble!

The Lei Quan clansmen flew in all directions, rushing into the pathways out when a huge explosion occurred.

Rumble...the powerful undying energy imploded within, large amounts of energy rippled along the caves and swiftly flew out. The powerful force had torn through space itself, flowing through the caves and rushing out.

It naturally hit the 5 Lei Quan warriors.

This attack was one that the undying Tai Wo had stored for long before unleashing. Even though they were only hit by the ripples of the explosion, it was still more deadly than 10 sector lords' combined attacks.

Chi! Purple blood spewed out.

The green scales tore apart.

The 5 Lei Quan warriors let out enraged roars, their 6 hooves stomping as they rushed out of the fragment.

At this time, a distant beam of light shot over.

"Kill!" The leading undying with powerful law ripples ordered.

"It's the humans."

"Human undying!"

"It’s the law domain."

The 5 Lei Quan warriors changed their expressions.

The undying Tai Wo instantly unleashed his law domain, countless yellow light dots spread over the area. Every dot was like a mountain, madly rushing at the incredibly huge Lei Quan sector lords. Even though the law domain couldn’t kill them, it had decreased their speeds by over half!

And Luo Feng, Poison and the others, went according to the plan…swiftly surrounding them.

"Be careful everybody."

"Killing 5 sector lords isn’t that difficult, however we don’t want any losses here." Tai Wo communicated.

"Relax."

"We understand."

The 9 members all followed, they knew too that falling into a trap would easily be dangerous for them. They all had partners who had fallen along with the enemy despite having huge advantages.

...

Seeing the human sector lord team surround them, the leader being an undying, the 5 Lei Quan warriors changed their expressions.

"I'll deal with the undying." The skinny little warrior's eyes gleamed with madness.

"Superior."

"Superior."

The other 4 looked nervous.

"Remember, there's only two options, live or die! Give it your all." The skinny warrior said. He was only skinny and small compared to the others. Compared to humans...he made the biggest Mother Flame race Hammer look like a child, he couldn't even compare to the size of one hoof!

"Right."

"Yes superior."

The 4 warriors almost simultaneously brandished close to 15m tall shields, another hand wielding 60m long pikes, their bodies covered in thunder snakes.

"Humans!!!" the skinny warrior brandished the same weapons, his shield however was slightly smaller. The pike however reached a length of 80m, and it had incredibly complex engravings on it, the blood thirst emanating from it was terrifying.

"Receive my attack!" The skinny warrior roared. His 6 hooves in space shook, as the surrounding space instantly tore apart. The long pike seemed to become a huge lightning bolt, as he roared, the pike pierced forward!

Rumble!

The pike became a thunder whirlpool, turning and changing as it pierced forward.

"Hm?" The undying Tai Wo receiving the attack felt his reaction time slow down by quite a bit, and his expression changed, "Not good, it’s a genius Lei Quan warrior that’s well trained in thunder and time laws."

The well experienced Tai Wo was very clear on this.

It was extremely hard for a human sector lord to be on par with an undying.

However the chances of that happening in the other races was much higher.

It was because their basic foundation was much higher.

"Roar!" Tai Wo instantly punched forward.

With the punch, it was like an endless mountain pushing forward, infused with law comprehension bound strongly to it.

Rumble!

The punch and the pike clashed head on.

The huge ‘skinny and small’ Lei Quan warrior was knocked back over 1,000km. Purple blood spewed from his mouth as he roared, "Go and die, go and die!" His expression malevolent as he stomped his 6 hooves in space and once again rushed at Tai Wo. The thunder pike in his hand seemed to grow even more and his arms seemed to tear because of it. His scales tore apart too, revealing his muscles, it was obvious that he had exceeded his limit.

"Howl!"

The thunder pike actually left his hands and revolved forwards, distorting time and space as it pierced at Tai Wo.

"Haha...the stronger you are, the more contribution points I’ll get from killing you." Tai Wo smiled wide. Stepping forward, his stomp tore through space and countless space fragments flowed messily, he however was a steady pillar amidst the mess, once again punching forward.

Rumble...

Due to the huge clash between the two of them, the surrounding 100km of space completely crumbled with countless slits of space flowing madly about.

The huge thunder pike was actually knocked back from the punch. However as it flew, it returned back to the skinny Lei Quan warrior with an ugly expression.

"It’s a pity, I’m not the same warrior as when I just came to the outer region wars. If it were the me of back then, I may even be disadvantaged. Now however...you will die, race genius, become my contribution points." Tai Wo’s energy soared, instantly becoming an endless majestic mountain in space itself, once again punching at the little and skinny Lei Quan warrior.

This punch was more terrifying than the two punches from before.

"Superior."

"Superior."

Harsh cries resounded from the other side.

The skinny warrior unleashed his world energy, he had long

discovered what had happened on the other side. Amongst his four underlings...two of them had already died.

...

"Ya..." One of the Lei Quan warriors stomped his hooves and pierced his pike at the illusionist Demon lady. It was actually one of her illusions...it caused two of them that had fallen under her spell to be instantly killed.

Demon lady's expression changed.

That warrior's eyes were filled with madness. How many years had it been? Back then, 30 underlings had followed their superior into the outer region wars. Massacring along the way, many had fallen...now only four were left. They had finally succeeded and killed a large number of enemies, accumulating their contribution points, seeing the reward within a decade of their grasp, who'd expect them to be attacked today.

Xiu!

A gold light flashed.

The Lei Quan warrior first saw a gold blade from the distance, after that it vanished into space and reappeared right before his eyes, as he stared with shock...

Chi! The gold blade pierced right through his head and into his

body, destroying his life core, causing the source to crumble and his internal world to collapse. Some items appeared and filled up the space that was filled with the aftermath of battles.

"Thanks." Demon lady looked at the dead Lei Quan warrior and winked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng laughed.

He thought within, "This, is probably the 1st other race warrior I've killed since coming to the outer region wars."

"Luo Feng, Luo Feng, you've got contribution points." Babata said.

"Ah?" Luo Feng smiled.

Every battle had to be connected to the virtual universe network, only that way could the system observe the battle and give the contribution points.

"1 million points?" Luo feng looked at the screen, shaking his head, "So stingy, I killed an opponent close to sector lord general level, and they only give me 1 million? However...it's also my 1st batch."

Chapter 766: Half a Year

This battle went about swiftly, especially with the illusionists Wei and Demon lady, they easily affected the 4 Lei Quan warriors. Only the captain Tai Wo had to clash head on with the strongest of the group over and over as he could block the illusions.

"No."

"I can’t accept this, I can’t accept this!" The skinny Lei Quan warrior was almost mad, roaring in his language with his final breaths.

He wanted to survive, but under the pressure of the law domain, his fleeing speed was greatly reduced, he couldn’t flee at all.

Even if he wanted to, he couldn’t!

He could only fight!

And he couldn’t win the fight, he could only die! There was no other choice.

Rumble! With Tai Wo’s 3rd punch, the skinny warrior was reduced to a mess of meat. His internal world within crumbled as well, as countless items appeared.

"Quickly keep the spoils and we’ll go." Tai Wo ordered.

"Yes."

The 9 sector lords swiftly collected all the goods before leaving swiftly, taking the ship and flying away at sub light speed.

Within a few minutes.

A few other race teams had arrived at the scene.

"Our allies are dead."

"The culprits sure fled fast."

The other teams all checked about before dispersing. The percentage of falling in the outer region wars were simply too high, especially an area like Shattered stars with so many other warriors, the death rate was shocking. The many warriors that came here were all used to it.

...

Within the ship.

"Our spoils are not bad." Tai Wo said, "That Lei Quan race left us many items, everybody split them."

"The strongest one was killed by you captain, whoever killed him has the right to decide, captain, you pick." The tall and sturdy Hammer said with a deep voice.

"I want his long pike. You guys can split everything else." Tai Wo kept the thunder pike, as an undying, his perspectives were much higher.

The group went through the goods.

"Madman you?"

"Do you want anything?"

Luo Feng sat in the sofa and drank the wine, shaking his head, "You guys go ahead, I don’t need them."

"That’s the manner of a strong warrior." Demon lady winked at Poison, "Little Chen Chen, you should show off such manners too, don’t compete with us."

"Do you think my potions are free." Poison grasped tightly on the world ring and began to search through the large amount of items, collecting whatever was valuable. After checking a while, he took two items and tossed it to Demon lady, "You guys go ahead, I’m done."

"Damn."

"Stingy fellow."

"Vicious, the best have been taken away."

Mad Wu, Wei and god all looked with despise at Poison. Actually after all the things they had been through, they were long life or death brothers in arms. This little argument was nothing but their show of affection towards each other. As for the distribution of spoils, they had their own rules that they followed.

Against their condescending gazes, Poison didn’t seemed ashamed at all. Instead, he was satisfied, "I’m not madman, he is a new recruit and he already has the strength to defeat an undying. Even if he wasn’t a core member of the 5 leviathans, he’ll definitely be a favored disciple of an absolute warrior. He definitely has plenty of treasures, he wouldn’t care about such little things, madman, am I right?"

Luo Feng smiled.

Since entering Cang Bird star till now, no one had recognized his true identity.

It wasn’t strange.

The number of humans was simply too much, there were all sorts of appearances, and only a few actually watched the genius battles. Hence, many had probably forgotten it already.

Secondly, over 4,000 years had passed and Luo Feng's strength and power had all changed completely. He was young and tender back then, however after training in the Beast God path, he was like a ferocious beast even when relaxed. When unleashed it was even more terrifying. After 4,000 years, it had a huge change on a person.

Thirdly, Luo Feng had changed his appearance slightly too.

He had changed his color slightly to give off a different look. Even if his overall look was the same, the slight changes would make him unrecognizable.

His energy and looks had all changed.

Who would have expected this to be the same star level punk from 4,000 years ago, for him to suddenly be a sector lord pinnacle with the strength to match an undying?

Luo Feng and their team sat in the C9 grade ship and carefully explored, dodging the powerful enemies and swiftly dealing with those they could. Each battle was extremely short, they fled right after it was over.

In the blink of an eye, they had already explored for about half a year, with 11 bloody battles!

Three of them were more dangerous, Mad Wu and Wu were

heavily injured before, luckily Luo Feng saved them.

...

"Madman, I owe you my life too." Within the ship's resting room, Mad Wu came out of the world ring and expressed his gratitude to Luo Feng.

"Even if didn't save you, Poison would have done so." Luo Feng said.

"Don't talk about me, even if I did, I would have paid quite a high cost." Poison shook his head as he sipped his wine in the sofa. "Having Madman sure is good, with his Nan Shen Armament... passing through the slits of space instantly, it's speed is shocking. It's extremely good for saving teammates. Since the enemies usually focus on the captain, thinking he's the most important, they never actually focus on Madman."

"They don't really care about sector lords." God's smile was like the sun. "With no one holding up Madman...the three dangers before, if Madman wasn't there, we'd have to go all out. But with him...it was much easier. With him attacking, it spoilt all the enemies' plans, messing them up, allowing us to flip the tables."

Rock however sat quietly in the corner only occasionally making a sound.

Luo Feng glanced at him, he could feel his depression. Rock had

joined the team with him, when he became the 2nd most important person next to the captain, Rock still required assistance occasionally from the other older members, naturally he would feel depressed.

He was filled with confidence before as a genius.

However, in front of Luo feng, he had lost his shine.

"A few more setbacks and he'll awaken." Luo Feng thought, "Babata, how many points do I have?"

"Including the two you just defeated, you've accumulated 32 million contribution points." Babata said.

"The two I killed just now only added 11 million?" Luo Feng shook his head within, "So stingy."

It was.

After he had killed the 1st Lei Quan warrior, including the 12 bloody battles over half a year, as well as the many warriors he had killed, according to how his points increased, he got a good understanding on the system.

Killing a normal sector lord soldier alone was 100,000 points.

Killing an elite sector lord soldier alone was 1 million points.

Killing a sector lord general alone was 10 million points.

And this was killing them alone. If others helped, the points would be split and he'd only get a portion of it.

Luo Feng had naturally dealt with the more powerful opponents, he killed mostly generals and elites, hence he accumulated 32 million.

"1 normal sector lord would give a lowest point of 1 million. This means...he'd have to kill 10 opponents of his level to complete his quota." Luo Feng thought. "Always fighting against others just as strong, to the new recruits, going through this life or death struggle at least ten times?"

Luo Feng shook his head.

Of course, the stronger one was, the higher the requests were.

The army gave him the limit of sector lords to accumulate 1 billion contribution points. The Virtual Universe Company however gave him 10 trillion.

"Not leaving the team and killing normal sector lords like that, even 10,000 years or a million years wouldn't be enough." Luo Feng thought. "What's more, there aren't any sector lord generals for me to kill. One army usually only has so few sector lords. It's obvious the Virtual Universe Company is forcing me to kill

undyings."

In the Virtual Universe Company's point of view, the disciple of the primal chaos city leader should be able to kill undyings at sector lord level.

...

In this half a year, their team had returned to the base 3 times and rested for 10 days to half a month.

"One more battle and we'll return to rest." Tai Wo said.

"Yes."

"After we kill them, we'll head back to rest."

The members all laughed, relaxed.

They carefully scouted for enemies, after 8 hours had passed, they found their target.

A completely jade green ship was flying within shattered stars system.

A living ship was actually one that was commonly seen in the universe. However...it was more mainstream only within the

demon clan etc, as for humans and automatons, they mostly used alloy and metal ships. The living ships and the metal ships all had their pros and cons.

Within the control room.

Standing at 1.6m tall, a completely red scaled life form extended its claws and grabbed a glass of wine and sipped. Beside him stood another that looked exactly alike.

The two of them gave off fire law ripples.

"Two captains, the swallowing is complete, the living ship has reached 100% completion." A smaller sector lord said respectfully.

"Hm."

The two captains nodded.

20 sector lords were gathered within the control, all of them were obviously from the same race. Even though they were all about 1.3m to 1.7m tall, their eyes were vicious and their bodies covered in scales, their elbows and knees sharp, it was obviously a race proficient in battle.

"The scanning device has detected battle ripples." 1 stronger looking undying being said.

"Get close!" Another scaled being immediately ordered, "Also scan their strengths."

"Hm."

In just 10 seconds or so.

"We've already discovered their ripples, there's an undying and the rest are sector lords." The stronger looking being said excitedly, "Just one undying."

"Prepare for battle!" The other one immediately stood up and roared.

Hua!

20 sector lord scaled beings all stood up, armor appeared on the surface of their bodies. Weapons appeared in their arms and their eyes were mad and blood thirsty.

Chapter 767: Sworn Enemy

"Fu Wei San, the target's scanning device should be lousier than ours, they haven't detected us." The stronger looking undying being said solemnly.

"Hm." The intrepid scaled being nodded, his gaze sweeping over the 20 sector lords. "Children, the targets haven't detected us, we'll sneak in. Remember, you all have to stick close to Tuo Lu, that way our scanning device can jam theirs and make them unable to detect us."

"Yes." The 20 sector lords all seemed to be frantic to go.

"Distance shrinking, 10 million km, 8 million, 6 million..." The stronger looking undying said softly.

"Slowing down." The one called Fu Wei San ordered.

The living ship swiftly stopped.

"All get off, we'll fly over." Fu Wei Sand ordered.

Immediately 20 bloodthirsty sector lord scaled beings all rushed out. The other two undyings followed.

In space.

Luo Feng and their team were engaged in battle with another team. Without a doubt, Luo Feng's team had the advantage as the enemy had only two sector lords remaining.

"Hm?" Luo Feng gazed into the distant black blur, "Enemies?"

Tai wo's scanning device was only worth 120 mixed elements, maybe it was better than the Lei Quan race's device. However, amongst the undying, there were many that had devices better than Tai Wo's. Luo Feng's scanning device was much more advanced, with his status, with a huge discount, he bought one at 3.9 million points.

The auction of that same device would hit up to over 10 million mixed elements.

Hence...when they were 1 billion km away, Luo Feng's scanning device had already detected them. The only thing was he didn't care too much...as it was very likely that they were simply passing by. However, as they drew closer and began to head in their direction, Luo Feng understood that they had been discovered.

"Small things." Luo Feng thought, his inherited memories had allowed him to know of these creatures.

Qiu Shi race: One of the tens of millions of energy life forms, blood thirsty and enjoyed swallowing other life forms, they are very brutal.

Just like the rock life forms, some had souls while others didn't.

The blood and flesh life forms, some had weaker bodies while some had bodies stronger than even the metal life forms.

One theory was that the energy life forms, as one of the powerful life forms had all sorts of creatures. Some were well known for assassination like the Mosha clan, standing at the pinnacle of the energy life forms. However, there were others more commonly seen like the Qiu Shi race, they had terrifying soul attacks but couldn't change their forms like the Mosha, stuck in fixed forms.

However the moment they exploded their bodies, they could still reform it, this was a power of the energy life forms.

However everytime they exploded, the harm to their bodies was huge.

And also, they swallowed other life forms, using them to replenish their energies as they absorb, this was also a power of the energy life forms.

Swallowing living bodies, there were many in the universe that enjoyed doing so.

...

In the distance.

The scaled beings were suppressing their excitement as they drew closer, the skinny scaled being ordered, "Slow down, Tuo Lu, we'll attack them first and heavily injure them."

"Alright." The stronger looking undying was obviously excited.

Chi chi...the two undying scaled beings extended their two claws. Mad undying energy began to gather within, condensing and forming a fire god core crystal kind of attack. The fire god core crystals were incredibly condensed undying crystals, melded into a crystal and used to detonate into an explosion.

Even an emperor level undying wouldn't have the ability to condense enough energy to form a core crystal level kind of power.

"Kill!"

The two undyings swiftly flashed forward and the 20 sector lords immediately followed.

As they drew closer, the two undyings were already prepared to unleash their undying energy balls.

...

"Qiu Shi race, blood thirsty and proficient in battle." Luo Feng thought. "Two undyings and 20 sector lords, quite troublesome.

Hm? Condensed undying energy?"

"Haha, hurry and collect the spoils, once we are done we will return to our base." Captain Tai Wo laughed and said.

"This battle was easy enough." Illusionist Wei laughed.

"Back to the nest." Poison cheered.

"We can finally rest." The white robed God smiled.

The group of sector lords swiftly collected the floating goods about, Luo Feng pretended to look about, suddenly he stared into the distance and shouted to the group, "Enemies!"

"Enemies?"

"Where? We haven't even battled for 3 minutes and others have come?"

Tai Wo, Poison and the others all looked in the direction of where Luo Feng was looking. In the distance, two beams of lights were rushing over.

"Condensed Undying energy attack!" Tai Wo's expression changed as he immediately raised his hands.

Rumble! Rumble!

Two light pillars shot out from Tai Wo’s hands headed straight for the two beams of light. Tai Wo simultaneously shouted, "Retreat, hurry and retreat." The sector lord team swiftly began to flee.

Rumble...

His two light pillars clashed instantly with the condensed undying flame energy, creating a terrifying explosion. The powerful undying energy instantly tore through up to 1,000 km of space, rippling in all directions. Luckily Luo Feng had warned them quick enough and Tai Wo reacted quickly...hence their team was far enough to be slightly hit by the ripples without anyone getting injured.

"This undying energy!" Tai Wo’s expression changed.

"This flame undying energy..." Poison who was originally serious suddenly began to grow enraged as he shouted hoarsely, "It’s them! It’s them!!!"

The most collected of the team, Tornado felt the flame undying energy and even his expression grew mad. One had to know that every undying energy was unique. His eyes grew bloodshot as he howled, "It’s that flesh eating freak, that flesh eating freak!!!"

"The flesh eating freak!" Demon lady and Wei, the two

illusionists changed their expressions too.

Mad Wu!

God!

Hammer!

The captain Tai Wo!

They all flew into a frenzy.

"What's going on?" Luo Feng and Rock were stunned.

"Madman, Rock, that team is our sworn enemy, don't hold back, use everything to kill them. Kill all of them flesh eating freaks." Tai Wo ordered.

"7th brother! 7th brother!" Poison howled as tears welled up in his eyes. He could never forget the scene of the number two of their team back then, 7th brother, risking his life to save them from that undying scaled being. He finally died and was even eaten before the team. Poison had gone mad back then.

"Kill!"

"Kill!"

Captain Tai Wo and the 7 old members all were enraged, charging straight into the distance, Luo Feng and rock naturally followed.

A group of lights shot over too.

"Haha, they actually didn’t flee."

"We knew it was the bunch of humans that survived back then. I didn’t expect you all to come and fight."

The two undying scaled beings were excited as they laughed, they were very clear of the enemies’ strength. This human team only had one undying that was harder to deal with. Back then, there was another fighter that was very powerful, able to match up to an undying. However he was still finally eaten by Tuo Lu.

Two teams.

One with one undying and 9 sector lords.

Another with two undyings and 20 sector lords.

Both met in space and almost instantly clashed.

"Children, kill them all, eat them all." The intrepid scaled undying cackled as he ordered.

"Yes."

"Yes lord."

The group of sector lord beings laughed madly, all wielding blades and knives etc, all extremely fast and nimble as they rushed forward.

"Ah!!!" Poison's voice was hoarse, his expression manic as he howled. The originally 1m tall little childlike being instantly grew stronger and bigger, his body began to shoot out dark green vines that madly spread in all directions, he flipped his hand and brandished a colorful potion that was instantly swallowed by the vines.

"Grow!" Poison roared, "Die!"

Rumble!

Poison had already grown into a 12m tall giant, his chest glowing with a glaring engraving gold light, that light shone on the vines. The dark green vines that had absorbed the potion began to go through a special change along with Poison. The originally dark green vines...grew a layer of gold membrane over it.

"3,621 years!"

"7th brother died for us."

"I've been making potions everyday and studying them, finally I succeeded in making one that can combine with my plant life form, all for this day...all for this day!!! Go and die, all of you!!!" Poison howled, a total of 72 vines, almost like 72 gold snakes pierced through space and madly waved about.

The two scaled sector lords originally rushing at him were instantly wrapped by two vines. "Pu chi..." They were instantly torn to shreds, causing their internal life core to break. Their internal worlds collapsed and countless items flew out.

"It's you, you."

"You ate 7th brother."

"Go and die." The manic giant Poison howled as he stared at the stronger looking scaled undying.

Rumble...72 huge vines covered in gold membrane shot through 1,000km, all aiming towards that undying.

"Kill." Tai Wo was engaged in battle with that intrepid scaled undying too.

Madness!

The battle had reached its climax in an instant.

Chapter 768: Annihilation

"Fu Wei San, this little punk is stronger than before." The stronger looking scaled undying suddenly brandished a 3m long flame red blade as he spoke.

"I'll handle the human undying, you settle that chemist! All children kill the human sector lords." A 100m long chain appeared in his hands as flames burned about it, that chain was like a black fire dragon dancing in space.

"Understood." The other undying laughed.

"Kill!"

"Kill!"

The manic little sector lord scaled beings all wielded their weapons and clashed with the humans.

...

The most intense battle was without doubt Poison against the stronger looking scaled undying Tuo Lu.

"Rumble..." 72 gold vines madly rushed at Tuo Lu, the surrounding space was torn apart but Tuo Lu maintained his manic laughter. He instantly unleashed his law domain, causing

countless flames to fill the area. They burned the vines and even Poison himself.

"Go and die!!!" Poison howled, bearing with the flames.

"Haha, little punk, you think you can use the plant life form to kill me at sector lord level?" Tuo Lu smiled manically. The scales on his face shifted as he attacked the vines about him ferociously.

The fiery blade kept flashing!

Almost like a huge fire wheel, it knocked away the large amounts of vines around even knocking away the gold membrane and slashing through one of the vines. Some of the gold membranes that were torn apart quickly regrew new ones.

Under the attack of the huge fire wheel, the many gold membranes began to dissipate and the vines were being cut.

"Howl." The dark green vine let out a painful thought.

"Ah Mo, Ah Mo, give it your all. Even if we die, we have to kill him, kill him." Poison's expression was manic. The plant life form was extremely loyal, the moment it recognized its owner, it would die along with him. Since the owner was giving his all...this plant would naturally not hesitate!

Rumble...gold membrane vines pierced through the space and wrapped about Tuo Lu.

There were vines being cut all around, however they would join with the broken pieces, its regenerative speed was quite fast. However...everytime it got cut, the damage to the plant was huge.

"Ah Mo, Ah mo." Poison howled.

Powerless!

He could feel...against this ugly scaled undying, he was disadvantaged.

"I'm still not strong enough. Even though I've successfully killed an undying before, that was one that used a large hammer, he had no way to cut Ah Mo. He was finally worn out by Ah Mo." Poison teared as he stared hard at the enemy, roaring within, "7th brother, 7th brother, I will definitely kill him, definitely!"

...

Poison's battle was very intense, however the other old members were just as fatigued.

Everyone of them had 2-3 sector lords attacking them. These beings were bloodthirsty and intrepid. Maybe alone they were no match for the humans, but with 2 to 3 of them together, it wore out the members.

"Illusions have little effect on them." Demon lady said anxiously.

Hammer wielded a shield and large hammer, protecting her beside him, "These flesh eating freaks, their home is filled with massacre. They've been killing since young and have grown up in such an atmosphere. They've long become used to such a demeanor, it's in their bones. Hypnotizing them is hard, we can only kill!"

"I've killed one." Mad Wu was in a dangerous place too, he was being attacked by 4 of them at a time.

"Harming them is useless." Rock said urgently. "Damaging them is useless."

"Rock, if you don't destroy their life core, even if their bodies explode, they can reform. The moment you pierce their bodies, you have to destroy their life core." God said anxiously.

The battle reached a crazy level.

"Madman."

"Madman, help."

"Madman, hurry, Poison is risking his life, he's in the most danger." The captain Tai Wo was extremely urgent.

Luo Feng gazed about after killing two sector lords. The gold Nan Shen blade instantly became a splendid gold light and tore through space before vanishing.

"Chi!" The gold light appeared and pierced through a sector lord scaled being's chest, destroying its energy crystal. "Rumble!" Large amounts of items poured out.

"Shua!" The gold light flashed again and another scaled being stared wide eyed with its mouth opened wide, revealing cold fangs, its gaze dimming...

Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua!

Luo Feng used his strength, even though he hadn't unleashed much, it was still akin to a normal undying's strength. The Nan Shen gold blade that could pass through the slits of space killed at a shocking speed, 10 sector lord scaled beings were instantly killed within three seconds.

The many scaled bodies floated in space, their internal worlds collapsed and countless items filled the area.

"Madman sure is powerful."

"Powerful."

The other sector lord members couldn't help but get shocked. It was actually not that easy for an undying to massacre so many

sector lords in the battle field. One had to see the type! If a fighter undying wanted to kill 10 sector lords, it would be a troublesome thing. And Luo Feng however used the Nan Shen Blade that was proficient in chasing down and killing others.

"What." The intrepid scaled undying stuck with Tai Wo, Fu Wi San, was shocked to see the distant black armored human, "Nan Shen armament? 9th form?"

"Fu Wei San, there's one in the team akin to an undying." The other scaled undying Tuo Lu was shocked too, "What do we do?"

"Retreat!" Fu Wei San ordered.

The tables had turned.

The humans now had three undying strengths.

They only had two.

And the human side...had the other sector lords. While they wouldn't be able to kill them, they could weaken and affect them.

"You can't run." Luo Feng had just killed 10 sector lord scaled beings in one breath. He immediately controlled the gold blade to rush at the scaled undying Tuo Lu that was fighting the dark green vines.

Xiu!

The gold blade vanished and appeared 300m away, and them immediately 2m behind Tuo Lu.

Pu Chi!

It instantly pierced at his armor, the armor however blocked it. The powerful force within the Nan Shen gold blade caused a huge vibration within his body. His two blades were affected and the dark green vines immediately rushed in, wrapping around the undying Tuo Lu.

"Hm? An undying's defense sure is strong." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed in the distance. "Looks like the 1st level of the 9th form doesn't have much effect."

The Nan Shen armament's 9th form, A Match against undying.

Could actually be split into 3 levels.

Its power too could be split into passing the heavenly bridge's 13th, 14th and 15th level.

Of which the 1st level, when unleashed would vanish occasionally...able to travel through the slits of space and re-appear. The distance it could do so was short, only a few hundred meters. The travel distance was very short...hence the attack power was only average, at most harming a normal undying.

Normally unleashing the 1st level was enough to affect an undying, causing him to be unable to chase back. One would be able to survive against an undying.

The 2nd level had a huge increase in power, the distance it could vanish for would get even further.

Both levels had a weakness though. When it travelled through the slits of space it would have law ripples. An undying proficient in space law would be able to sense this ripple and easily dodge and defend against it.

Only the 3rd level!

It’s power increased by leaps and bounds! It’s travel distance would reach over a million km! And only then would its travel reach the level of true teleportation, without a sense of space ripple, making it undetectable! Of course it’s only the weapon being teleported, and that...was obviously much easier than the teleportation of one’s body.

Even so, it was the maximum power of the Nan Shen Armament!

"However it’s obvious that this scaled undying’s space comprehension is very weak. He cannot seem to detect the space ripples." Luo Feng’s gaze flashed coldly.

...

"The Nan Shen armament cannot harm me." The undying Tuo Lu howled, beginning to defend against the dark green vines and flee.

Xiu!

A gold light flashed.

It once again pierced at Tuo Lu's body. With experience from before, he was filled with confidence, however after that he felt a terrifying force pass through his body, weng...it caused his undying body to shake and make it almost crumble, his hands going completely numb.

Hu...the dark green vines once again wrapped about him.

Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou!

72 heavily damaged vines shrank swiftly and became the thickness of an arm, wrapping madly about Tuo Lu.

"Ah ah..." Tuo Lu struggled madly.

However in terms of strength, with the special form of the 72 vines combined, it was much stronger than him.

"Hahaha... go and die." Poison immediately went mad as he howled. "The last undying died just like that, you are set to die."

Ka cha ka cha...

Pa! Pa!

Tuo Lu's bones were constricted till they broke apart, after which large amount undying energy exploded from within. The 72 vines however had formed a dark green cage covered in gold light, without a single slit, it completely trapped his undying energy within.

If he had reached the level of undying body, he could have disintegrated and slipped out. However he hadn't reached that level, if the damage was too severe and his spirit imprint was destroyed, that would be the end.

Howl...Pain and rage rang from within the dark green cage, dissipating after awhile.

The undying Tuo Lu had fallen!

"7th brother!!!" Poison raised his head and howled, his throat had gone completely hoarse as tears flowed down his eyes. He knelt before the dark green vines.

Chapter 769: Sinister Tactics

After holding the hatred for over 3,000 years, he had studied on raising his potion strength madly, dreaming of the day he could take his revenge. Poison had always thought...if his 7th brother hadn't gone to distract the enemy back then, he could have totally escaped. However, to save poison, he went to block the scaled undying Tuo Lu, thereby sacrificing his life.

"I've succeeded, 7th brother, I did it, I'll killed that flesh eating freak." Poison shouted within. Over the 3,000 years, he laughed and cursed on the surface, but that hatred had always remained within.

This grudge was settled.

"There's another one." Poison turned fiercely and stared at the distant Tai Wo fighting against the scaled undying Fu Wei San.

"Go and die." Poison controlled his plant life form and immediately 72 vines swiftly shot towards him.

It wasn't just him.

Luo Feng had already controlled his Nan Shen Armament to head towards the last enemy, the strongest of the Qiu Shi group.

...

"Die."

"You can’t escape."

"Die."

The illusionists Wei and Demon lady, along with the spirit reader Mad Wu and god etc, all used their soul attacks and illusions, along with spirit weapons and so on. They didn’t aim to actually damage him, but as long as they could affect him in the slightest, it would allow Tai Wo to gain the advantage.

"Tuo Lu is dead." Fu Wei San noticed his partner’s death and glanced at Luo Feng and Poison who were rushing over. He was shocked within, "Those two sector lords are very powerful, the moment they combine forces with this human undying...I’ll be in trouble. I may even fall here."

"I can’t care about anything else."

The scaled undying Fu Wei San wanted to flee without getting injured, however with Tai Wo holding him back now and Luo Feng and poison rushing over.

"Yayaya..." He roared manically, the flaming black chain on his body instantly vanished and he used his two claws to smash directly at Tai Wo’s fists.

"Swell!!!"

His two claws immediately glowed a glaring fiery red. One had to know that an undying's body was formed from countless amounts of undying energy condensed together. The moment one became undying, his body could easily become endless undying energy and vice versa, of course he had to maintain the spirit imprint for it to be complete.

Fu Wei San instantly gave up both his arms, placing about 10% of the energy he had accumulated over countless years into them. It may seem like a small 10%, however every part of an undying's body was filled with their spirit imprint. Hence, while exploding, it would give up part of their spirit imprint too. He didn't have an undying body yet, that was something that allowed regeneration so long as there was a single cell available. He wasn't at that level, hence...blowing up 10% of his body was already his limit.

Rumble...

The powerful explosion hit Tai Wo and knocked him far away.

The surrounding space exploded open with a large ravine opening from the tears. Countless space fragments flowed madly throughout and rippled in all directions, even the distant floating scaled sector lord warrior corpses' large amount of items were instantly destroyed from the ripples.

Rumble! Fu Wei San used his undying armor to withstand the explosion and used its force to propel him away as he swiftly escaped!

Sou!

He instantly flew over 100,000 km away.

As he escaped, the large amount of items about were knocked astray, no one would have discovered that among the countless items, there was a seemingly normal black space ring.

"Bastard, he got away." Poison gritted his teeth.

"He sure fled real fast." Luo Feng gazed at the opponent that was already a million km away flying close to light speed.

When an undying truly wanted to flee, and there was distance.

Unless one had teleportation, otherwise even an emperor level undying wouldn’t be able to chase.

"Let’s go, the commotion was too huge. If time drags on, there will definitely be many other race warriors rushing over." Tai Wo ordered. "Hurry and collect the spoils."

The sector lord elite team swiftly collected the goods, sat in the C9 ship and left.

Shattered stars space.

The C9 grade ship was progressing, heading to their base.

"So close, just a little more and we would have killed the other undying flesh eating freak." Poison had regained his normal form, his eyes filled with mad excitement.

"Alright, it's already not bad. To force that punk to sacrifice 10% of his undying body, that's already a huge cost." Tai Wo laughed. "Even after 100,000 to 1 million years, he won't be able to regain the spirit imprint."

"What's going on?" Rock asked curiously, "Their race can self destruct without any consequences. How can him exploding 10% of his undying body have such a high cost?"

"Their explosions only explodes the body, later, returning it to undying energy." Tai Wo explained, "And this undying energy... holds energy and their spirit imprint, it's the foundation of an undying. With the energy gathered together, it can form an undying body."

"However the moment one self destructs...it blows up even the undying energy with no remains at all, becoming the most basic particle flow." Tai Wo laughed, "Hence its power is huge."

"This is also why the explosion wouldn't be huge."

"Self destructing however creates a huge explosion."

Tai Wo said, "That undying energy holds his spirit imprint, if he only lost a little, it can easily regenerate. However losing 10% at one go, equates to losing 10% of his soul. Even though the imprint is still whole, his strength and abilities etc will all suffer a huge loss...it would take a very long time to recover."

"Of course."

"If he had reached the level of Undying body, even after the explosion and the undying energy begins to crumble, the spirit imprint collapsing...as long as one fragment remains! He would be able to instantly absorb the countless broken fragments of energy and regain his complete undying body." Tai Wo said, "Once one reaches that level, he would be very hard to kill. Not just 10%, even if he loses 99.99% of his body, as long as there's a fragment, he can completely recover and instantly."

Rock nodded.

...

"Let's toast."

"For 7th brother, for the many lost comrades over the years, cheers."

"Cheers."

Tai Wo, Poison and the others all lifted their glasses. Even though Luo Feng and Rock were new recruits, they could feel how emotional they were.

"From the day I entered the outer region wars, death has always been beside me. I've been here for over 30,000 years. During this period, from sector lord to undying, the many life and death partners, Big brother, 3rd brother, 4th, 5th, 6th, 7th and 9th, they've all died." Tai Wo looked at Poison beside him.

Poison took a deep breath too.

Back then Tai Wo was number two Poison joined the team later on too and had always been taken care of by 7th brother. He enjoyed the company of the childlike adorable Poison.

"The old comrades go and new ones come." Tai Wo exclaimed, "We all have our own targets, our team's 2nd fool completed his target and retired, I'll probably retire in another 20,000 years too. Let's wish...that the brothers and sisters here will live until they retire."

"Hm." The group raised their glasses.

"Living till retirement."

They toasted.

The group of old members had already completed their most

basic quotas, they were all free. However they didn't want to return to living normal lives, as they had their own goals. Hence, they wanted to acquire large amount of contribution points to exchange for treasures. One had to know that 100,000 contribution points could exchange for 1 mixed element, and that allowed them to get treasure from the army system.

Accumulating 1 billion points was 10,000 mixed elements, that was already the wealth of a normal undying.

Within humanity's territories...these sector lord generals, even after risking it all for 1,000 eras, they probably wouldn't even earn 10,000 mixed elements unless they had special encounters.

And in the outer region wars, as long as they could survive for a few tens of thousands of years, accumulating 10,000 mixed elements was very easy.

Of course...

The prerequisite was surviving for tens of thousands of years.

"Poison, your grudge has been settled, you can drink less from now on." Tai Wo said softly.

"Hm." Poison nodded.

Poison walked to Luo Feng and looked up at him, his eyes gleaming with gratitude, "Madman, thanks."

"Hehe." Luo Feng smiled.

At this time, within the spirit reader Mad Wu's space ring with all the goods from the battle, there was a blur of items within. Of which there was a very normal black space ring, amongst the many items in there there was a level 5 spirit weapon.

...

The living ship carefully flew within shattered stars.

"Bastard, bastards, despicable humans, bastards!!!" The scaled undying Fu Wei San howled in the control room, he was madly sweeping his wine and other items about, Pa! Pa! Breaking sounds and curses were spewed about, reverberating throughout the room.

After while, he stopped, his claws had already returned to normal.

His eyes filled with madness, "10% of my soul, this will make my space law comprehension slow down so much, despicable humans...I will definitely kill you!"

"I bet you didn't even notice amongst the countless items floating in space there's a normal space ring, and within that space ring there's a weapon." His eyes gleamed with ferocity, "That weapon is my marker item, I've hidden my spirit imprint on it, no matter

how far away it is, I can feel it."

"And through it, I can naturally determine your locations at anytime."

His eyes were filled with hatred.

An undying was able to use his god country teleportation at any time, as long as there was a marker which was actually an undying crystal, undying energy was filled with their spirit imprint. It could be a plant life form or even a specially made marker, like the one the primal chaos city leader gave to Luo Feng.

With some of the undying's spirit imprint within the item...no matter how far away , whether it was in an internal world, god country etc, he could still feel it.

"No."

"I cannot waste time."

"These despicable humans may have already discovered it's secret. Even though the chances of that happening are low...I cannot afford the chance...I have to take revenge and kill them." Fu Wei San gritted his teeth, "I have to immediately contact the other undying allies and partners and settle them together."

Chapter 770: Invitation

"Who should I look for?" Fu Wei San sat in the living ship, his claws tapping the arm rest as it scratched.

Suddenly, his eyes gleamed, "Right, my fellow clansman Lake Ya, he should be here in Shattered stars too, I'll look for him." He immediately used his consciousness to contact his clansman via his quantum computer. He cursed, "The demon race is one of the pinnacle races of the universe, however in terms of communication, it's far inferior to the humans and automaton. Especially the humans, I heard they can enter a virtual universe from anywhere in the vast universe, and it can do 100% simulation, almost like reality. I'm so envious...I'm a great undying and yet I've never had such an opportunity."

Consciousness simulation technology was advanced a long time ago.

These other race undyings normally had such chances to enter the virtual universe, however their areas were usually extremely limited. Like how earth had the virtual world war god shrine, which only spread over earth. These other races had their own virtual worlds that probably covered 1 galaxy, it wasn't even close to the size of humanity's virtual universe.

And its messaging system was even worse!

The universe was too huge, this was a hard problem to solve.

Even within the demon race territories, it could at most do consciousness conversations within a universe country area... almost like making a call on earth, it can only hold a conversation and not actually see the other party. And it had to be within the area, the demon race area. If it was outside their territory...

There was no way to communicate!

Of course, as the outer region battlefields were a special place, communication devices were erected throughout, thus the leading allies and races could use these to communicate, and only have conversations.

...

The universe was vast, communication was a huge problem.

Even amongst the many pinnacle races, only the humans and automatons could actually communicate at any spot in the universe. The automaton virtual world normally only covered one universe country size! The entire automaton territory had hundreds of them, every one with their own virtual world.

The moment they left their territories, even though they could communicated in other places, it was like making long distance calls, very simple.

Only the humans!

They had the virtual universe, which was a legendary existence. It could simulate any universe laws, even the fusion laws. It spread throughout everywhere, even to another universe...the primal universe was within its boundaries.

Using the virtual universe, humanity's strength could combine together, conquering a whole territory and becoming a pinnacle race thus wasn't so strange.

Amongst the countless shattered fragments in the area, within a particular shattered fragment.

A scaled undying was sipping his wine and enjoying, while his underling sector lords were singing praises and flattery of him.

"Great Lake ya, you are the greatest leader of our west mountain area, only you can become its greatest leader."

"Lake ya!"

The scaled sector lords all cheered.

And the powerful scaled undying was enjoying the flattery, suddenly he raised his hand and all the sector lords immediately went silent.

"The punk Fu Wei San is actually looking for me?" His eyes gleamed with villainy, his ugly claw grabbed the wine glass and he sipped from it, "Accept!"

"Lake ya."

"Fu Wei San, it’s rare for you to find me, what’s the matter? Ah, you must know I’m very busy now exploring shatter stars. I may encounter a battle anytime, I have no time to be distracted by you, get to the point. Otherwise I may get into a battle anytime and break the call, then you can’t blame me." Lake ya said.

"Tuo Lu is dead."

Lake ya who initially wanted to have some fun with his partner was shocked, his expression changed.

The Qiu Shi race was a blood thirsty race, every one of them grew up amidst massacre. With intense competition, only the victor could stand above the countless piles of corpses. However whenever there were external pressures...the entire race would be incredibly united, all working together.

"How did he die?" Lake ya said seriously.

The two chatted through the communication device.

"He was killed by humans." Fu Wei San said.

"Fu Wei San, are you stupid, this is the outer region wars. The 4 pinnacle races have many subservient races, and countless

warriors killing in all directions. Tuo Lu being killed by humans is a very normal thing. Over a trillion years, who knows how many of our warriors have fallen." Lake ya said.

"I want to kill that human team." Fu Wei san said.

"Revenge?" Lake Ya was suspicious, "Can you determine their location."

"Yes, when they collected the goods from the battle, I tossed out a space ring. That space ring has always been my trap for whenever I need to take revenge. The spirit imprint on that ring is that of one of my sector lords and there are large amounts of items within, of which one weapon seems to give off sector lord energy, but in its inner core I've hidden my marker and my spirit imprint. Unless they have an official level or emperor level undying to scan through the items and find the weakest signals within, otherwise... they'd never know what I left them"

"You sure are crafty."

"They killed my brother and underlings, I definitely have to take my revenge."

"You should know that during battle, the humans activate their scanning devices and the virtual universe network broadcast to determine their contribution points. These two together...would discover the extra space ring amidst the countless others floating in space. That's a suspicious point!"

"Relax, I naturally won’t commit such a stupid mistake." Fu Wei San said confidently, "I was using my strongest attack against their undying back then, tearing through space and destroying a large amount of the items. Among which some space rings broke and produced large amounts of items from them to take. I took the chance to toss out this ring. Even if their scanning devices and broadcast detected it, it wouldn’t be suspicious at all."

"Hm, you sure are crafty." Lake ya admitted, there was indeed no loophole in his plan.

"What’s the human’s strength?" Lake ya asked.

"Their team has one undying and nine sector lords." Fu Wei san said, "Of which two sector lords are extremely powerful, akin to undyings. One is a chemist and other is a spirit reader with the Nan Shen arment, the two of them combined easily killed Tuo Lu."

"Three undying strength?" Lake ya was shocked, quickly asking, "All normal level undying fighting strength?"

"Yes, do you think I could survive if they were stronger?" Fu Wei san said.

Undyings were split into generals, official level and emperor level.

Even the lowest level generals, had their difference in strength, the weakest were those that could pass the 10th level of the

heavenly bridge. The strongest could pass the 14th. The moment they passed the 15th...that would be the official level of strength.

From the 10th to 14th, they were all general level, of course the difference within was still huge.

Undying generals were also called normal undyings.

In the battlefield they were naturally split into normal undying low, mid and pinnacle.

"Hm, that's still ok, however even the normal level undying, there's three of them. The two of us together would still have no hope." Lake ya shook his head.

"Relax, I won't send you to your death. Since I've set this up, I want to act only with full guarantee. Lake Ya...you are just one of the members I've invited, I heard that you are close to the demon clan's majesty Meng Wei Na?" Fu Wei San said excitedly, "As long as he can come along with us, even if we don't invite the other allies, just him alone would be able to destroy the human team."

"His majesty Meng Wei Na?" Lake Ya was shocked.

Even though their communication system was inferior, their strengths were powerful.

In terms of numbers...they didn't lose to the humans.

In terms of intelligence...the weakest demons were akin to the normal humans.

And their natural talents were much stronger than humans. Hence, their sector lords and undyings etc...they could completely suppress the humans. However, the upper echelon of humanity was very powerful, plus they had the virtual universe to assist...in a true universe battle, they had never been suppressed by the demon clan. The two pinnacle races had been fighting for countless years.

The demon clan was different from humanity.

The demon clan favored bloodline! Just like the space beast bloodline, they had a definite higher or lower level.

Their emphasis on the bloodline was very strong. Hence, they had a large number of empires...of which some of them had countless races that could have emperors or kings, distinguishing between their bloodlines. As long as one had emperors and kings, they would be called majesties.

The Qiu Shi race etc were subservient races, towards the demon clan, they were very respectful.

Just like how the gold horn race and many other subservient races respected humans.

"His majesty Meng Wei Nan, is one of the members of the 10,000 Hidden snakes empire, you want to invite him?" Lake Ya was still hesitant.

"His majesty's normal state is that of a higher normal undying. However once he unleashes his talents, his battle strength rises close to an official level undying." Fu Wei San said, "He can beat anyone below official level. With him there, we'll have a full guarantee."

"I can help you ask, but I can't promise anything." Lake Ya said.

"Give me his number. Once you let him know that I am looking for him, I'll then try to contact him. I have a full guarantee of getting him to help." Fu Wei San said.

"Full guarantee?" Lake Ya was shocked.

"You'll know soon enough." Fu Wei San said confidently.

Chapter 771: Special Reward from Demon Race

When the Qiu Shi undying Fu Wei San had contacted Lake Ya, Luo Feng and his team was on the way back to their base.

Within the C9 ship’s resting quarters.

"Everybody split the goods."

"We got rid of 20 sector lords and 1 undying this time, there’s plenty of goods. That fallen undying must have many treasures within his world ring. Haha..." Tai Wo laughed, ordering simultaneously, "Mad Wu, you are in charge of checking, whether any of the goods have any hidden spirit imprint of the undying that escaped."

"I’ll check."

Mad Wu took the 6 world rings and checked through each of them. Actually, whenever there were goods from a battle that involved an undying that escaped, they had to check.

The scanning devices were used to check on the battlefield.

The goods had to be checked again.

Hence the chances of falling for a trap was very low. However, no

matter how well one’s defenses were, as long as an undying purposely intended to set the trap, one would definitely fall for it. Like if one of the sector lords in Tai Wo’s team had a huge background and he had an item from his teacher. The moment he died, Tai Wo wouldn’t be able to recognize the item either.

However the outer region wars were filled with dangers, there were many that fell, very few that tried to take revenge.

Hence the warriors on the battlefield didn’t care too much.

"No problem." Mad Wu laughed.

"Good, then let’s split the goods." Tai Wo said, "This time, Madman and Poison did the most work, Poison even used a valuable potion, you two can pick first."

"Without madman, I wouldn’t have been able to kill that flesh eating freak, Madman you can go first."

"You go ahead."

Luo Feng sat in the sofa and lifted a wine glass, casually.

...

After splitting the goods, Luo Feng and the others took the C9 chip all the way back to their base, returning to rest within their

base. The members all reflected on the battle and used that experience to train and strengthen themselves.

Shatter Stars, within one particular fragment.

The scaled undying Fu Wei San stood alone within, his eyes gleaming with ferocity, "You made me lose 10% of my soul, despicable humans, I'll make you regret it!"

"What's up with Lake Ya, I've already returned to the base and he still hasn't contacted his majesty Meng Wei Na?" Fu Wei San was very anxious. As a subservient race, the Qiu Shi race was naturally far below the demon race. Even with the same level of strength, the Qiu Shi race still had to be very respectful of the demon race warriors.

What's more, Meng Wei Na was from an empire, and he was stronger than him. Even though he really wanted to kill the human team, he didn't dare go bother him.

"Call?" Fu Wei San revealed a fanged smile, finally a call had come.

"Lake Ya, I've waited so long for you to finally contact me." Fu Wei San said happily.

"Hmph, among the empires in the demon clan, the 10,000 Hidden snake clan is renowned to be ruthless. Even though I have some interaction with his majesty Meng Wei Na, calling him randomly

would enrage him. Hence, I had to detour a little...just now he agreed to accept your call." Lake Ya said, "This is his number."

Fu Wei San was extremely happy on acquiring the number.

"I'll contact you once I've successfully got him on board." Fu Wei San said.

"If his majesty agrees, I'll definitely come along." Lake Ya said.

"Then just wait for my good news."

Pa.

Fu Wei San cut off the call and pondered for a bit, saying softly, "The news I heard before should be right. If I'm not wrong, then I'll have a 100% guarantee of getting his majesty on board." After which he dialed the number and awaited the answer.

In an instant.

"Who's this?" A hoarse powerful voice resounded, almost like within a deep valley, this voice resounded straight within Fu Wei San's mind.

It made Fu Wei San to be able to help but think, "The demon clan can at most communicate verbally, but their level of communication can actually emulate normal speaking voices? In

terms of technology, it’s much better than our Qiu Shi race. The moment there’s a bit of distance, we’d have to take a ship to pass on the news."

"Great majesty Meng Wei Na, I am from the Qiu Shi race, Fu Wei San." He said, "I believe Lake Ya has already introduced me."

"Fu Wei San? You wish for me to come help you kill the humans?" A thick voice resounded.

"Yes." Fu Wei San said.

"Countless warriors fall in the outer region wars, are we to take revenge for every one of them? Would that still be a war?" The thick voice was somewhat enraged, "Speak, tell me your reasons."

"Your majesty Meng Wei Na." Fu Wei San said respectfully, "I believe my clansman Lake Ya didn’t introduce the human team to you properly, otherwise you wouldn’t be angry. In fact you’d be happy."

"Hm?" The thick voice responded, "Speak."

"That human team has an undying and nine sector lords. Of which two of the nine have strengths akin to a normal undying." Fu Wei San explained.

"Two human sector lords with undying strength?" The thick voice seemed urgent.

"Yes your majesty." The scales on Fu Wei San’s face creased as he smiled satisfied. Looks like the news he heard was right.

"Tell me about these two sector lords." The thick voice ordered.

"Among these two humans, one is a chemist. He’s nurtured a sector lord plant life form, using his potions to make it have undying strength. The other is a spirit reader that uses the Nan Shen Armament. He can actually unleash the 9th form A match against undying, heavily injuring us." Fu Wei San said.

"Good, very good." The thick voice seemed excited, "Fu Wei San from the Qiu Shi clan, from now on, you have become my friend. Of course...you cannot lie to me!"

"Definitely not." Fu Wei san said.

"I heard from Lake Ya that you can determine their location?" The thick voice questioned.

Fu Wei San explained in detail about his guaranteed safe trap. After everything, he said, "Even now I can clearly feel their location."

"Where are they?"

"Their exact universe marker location is..." Fu Wei San

explained.

Actually, once the marker was too far away, even though an undying would be able to roughly feel its location, they wouldn't be able to tell the exact coordinates. However Shattered stars had a diameter of 0.8 light years, an emperor level undying with teleportation could easily travel end to end, the distance was simply too short.

Luo Feng and his team's base wasn't even 0.1 light years away from Fu Wei San, thus he could clearly feel their location and determine their coordinates.

"That's within shattered stars, there are many human powers gathered within." The thick voice said, "We cannot risk entering."

"Ah." Fu Wei San was stunned, "Your majesty, as long as we are careful..."

"No."

The thick voice said, "We have to wait until they leave the area of the humans. Only then can we make our move."

Fu Wei San could only reply, "Yes."

PA!

The call was cut off.

Within the dark fragment, Fu Wei San sat crossed legged. He used his claws to scratch the rocks below, while roaring, "The 10,000 Hidden snakes clan is ruthless yet careful, the rumores sure were right indeed. Hmph! Looks like we can only wait, I believe they'll leave their nest quickly."

"At least I succeeded in getting this demon on board."

"The news I heard was right, amongst the demons, killing genius humans had extra rewards." Fu Wei San was very proud.

...

The overall talent of humans was weaker than the demons.

Hence it was extremely rare for a human sector lord to have the power of an undying. And it was so few that within the 7th battlefield's entire 26 camp, one could easily count them with one hand. And their enemy, the demon race had special rewards for their warriors when they killed human geniuses.

The 10,000 Hidden snakes clan was simply one of the empires, there were many more powerful ones above them!

Hence, Meng Wei Na, as a relatively normal undying within the clan with not many resources would get so excited about the reward of killing two human geniuses.

Under his orders, the Qiu Shi race’s two undyings, Lake Ya and Fu Wei San headed to a gathering spot.

The three of them gathered.

They stuck together and awaited the human sector lord team to come out. The moment they left the area of where many of the human forces had gathered, they could make their move.

"It’s been eight days already, why aren’t they coming out?"

"Fu Wei San, are you sure your item hasn’t been found, they may have purposely left it there."

"Relax, it definitely wouldn’t be found. My item was hidden within the slits of a weapon. Unless they destroyed the weapon... could it be that they madly destroyed all weapons?"

"Be quiet and wait!"

The undying team were like hunters, patiently waiting for the chance to arrive.

...

Shattered stars, within Luo Feng’s team base.

"We've rested for fifteen days this time. This is five days more than the previous time. I'm sure everybody's well rested." Tai Wo smiled.

The tall and sturdy Mother flame race Hammer said with his thick voice, "My hammer is already starving."

"I still lack a lot of points." The illusionist Wei said, rubbing the cat on his stomach.

The members all got up.

After resting for so long, they were ready for battle.

"It's been half a year, I've got a good grasp of the outer region wars already." Luo Feng thought. "Should I follow this team for long? Accumulating points with them is simply too slow. If I went out alone, I could totally go hunt undyings and some even more powerful undyings."

"However before the 1 billion points are accumulated, I'm not free and have to follow the army's arrangements."

Luo Feng pondered.

"Haha, we managed to kill an undying the last time, I hope this time we can get a similarly huge reward." Tai Wo's eyes gleamed as

he ordered, "Let’s go."

Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou!

All the members swiftly followed the deep pathways out and flew into space, after which they took their C9 ship and once again began their journey of massacre...

Chapter 772: Prey

"The human sector lord team has departed!" The scaled undying Fu Wei Sand shouted excitedly.

"Ah?"

The 2m tall snake head demon with a human body with silver skin sitting in the alloy chair looked over. Beside him were two other chairs, and in one of them sat a scaled man with a dragon head and the other, a lady with a mouse head.

"Yes, your majesty Meng Wei Na." Fu Wei San said.

"They just left, it should take them a day to leave the human area." Another scaled undying that was slightly bigger Lake Ya said beside him, "Don’t be anxious, it’s still early."

Fu Wei San immediately shouted, "If we leave now and fly in their direction, it would still take two days for us to meet them. Leaving now wouldn’t be too early."

"Hm, let’s head out."

The snake head man stood up, beside him the dragon head and mouse head lady stood up simultaneously.

These three looked like they were made from alloys, somewhat

similar to the Liquid Silver guards Luo Feng used back then, totally unlike real life forms.

Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou!

The five silhouettes flew out of the dark pathway and into space, the leading snake head man waved his hand and a living ship with a diameter of 100m appeared. A cabin door opened on its body.

"I really envy you." The snake head man looked down at the two Qiu Shi undyings Fu Wei San and Lake Ya, exclaiming, "Even though your bodies are small, it allows you to easily take any ship. Our demon race...especially the strong ones, find it extremely hard to take a ship. Take me for instance, just to fit my body alone, I require an interstellar battleship..."

"Hm." The dragon head man nodded. "To store my actual body is the same, it’s not just the size of the ship. Even the cabin door has to be huge, otherwise I’d be stuck and wouldn’t be able to get out."

"There are always pros and cons." The mouse head lady said beside him.

The two Qiu Shi undyings cursed within as they heard, Fu Wei San was jealous, "It’s a natural gift to be so big and strong, and it’s just a simple matter of not being able to fit into a ship. I would like to have such size and power too. It’s just the size problem...simply relying on a puppet body would allow them to board no?"

Right, the three beast head demons were using puppet bodies, somewhat similar to the automaton puppets.

Their bodies were simply too huge, unable to fit in any ships. Hence, they could only hide their bodies in their world rings.

Allowing their puppet bodies to carry the rings in the ship, the moment there was danger, they could rush out from the rings at anytime. As for the puppet bodies, they were very popular within the demon race, controllable via one's consciousness , they were made of alloys.

Using a thread of consciousness to control them, one could fully mobilize them.

Hiding their true bodies in the world ring, they could come out any time, and these were the weak and small world rings. Even in any dangerous situations, they could use their strengths to break out of the world ring.

In all...

The puppets carried their true bodies in the world rings. And this was very safe and mainstream amongst the demons in the universe that needed to take ships. They had thought of ways to curb the dangers.

Of course, only the demon race could afford such things, world rings were afterall very expensive.

"I really envy the races with powerful bodies. Our bodies are so small, even our undying bodies are so small." Fu Wei San exclaimed within.

"If I had the powerful body of one from the 10,000 hidden snakes clan..." Lake Ya was envious too.

The larger the body, the moment one breaks through to undying, the bigger the advantage would be!

The instant one breaks through to undying, it would connect to the universe energy and law source. At that time, endless amounts of energy would instantly be provided to transform the sector lord body to an undying. Everybody only got such a free transfer once in their life.

Some life forms were only 1 or 2 meters tall, how much energy would they absorb from breaking through?

While, some were 1 to 2 km long, the amount of energy required was much more shocking.

The space beast, reaching up to 1,000s of km, the amount they required was heavenly! In terms of attack, their strength may only be 10 times more, however the amount of undying energy stored within was much much more.

...

The demon clan Meng Wei Na led the undying team in the living ship, swiftly heading towards the sector lord team.

Time passed.

In the blink of an eye, two days had passed.

Within the control room of the living ship, the three demon puppets sat in the alloy chairs.

"Your majesty Meng Wei Na, in about three minutes, we will meet with the ship." Fu Wei San said respectfully using demon race language. "The human sector lord team has a lousy scanning device, it cannot even match the one I use. Much less your majesty’s, they definitely won’t be able to detect us."

The snake head Meng Wei Na nodded and laughed, "Very good, when they discover us, it would be too late to flee."

"Long Tu." Meng Wei Na looked at his two underlings, "Later on, you and the two Qiu Shi race will swiftly separate and surround them. No matter what, don’t let any one of them escape."

"Understood."

The dragon head demon and mouse head demon replied. They only followed because Meng Wei Na was stronger than them,

however they didn’t need to be too respectful. They were afterall members of the demon race too. In terms of the status...Long Tu wasn’t any lower than Meng Wei Na.

"Making contact in 60 seconds, 59, 58, 57, 56..." Fu Wei San suddenly shouted.

"Fu Wei San, Lake Ya, I’ll let you destroy their ship." Meng Wei Na ordered.

"Yes."

Fu Wei San and Lake Ya responded respectfully.

"Humans..." Meng Na Wei’s puppet eyes were gleaming with excitement.

About 10 million km away from the living ship, a C9 ship flew.

Within its resting quarters.

The group were laughing and chatting, Luo Feng however sat in the corner of his sofa, "Three demon race puppets? Two undyings from the Qiu Shi race?" Long when the other ship was 1 billion km away, his scanning device had detected them. In terms of value, his scanning device...was simply far beyond that of his majesty Meng Na Wei’s.

"Looks like their target is our team, seeing the way they are heading straight for us."

"That undying that fled before actually dared to come back, looks like he has some sort of guarantee and has brought some powerful help." Luo Feng squinted his eyes. "Three demon puppet bodies... normally they have human bodies and demon heads, hehe, even in their dreams they want to be above us."

"Looking at how respectful the two Qiu Shi undyings are, those three demons should be undyings too."

"Five undyings!"

"No wonder they are so confident." Luo Feng thought. "Just relying on captain Tai Wo and Poison along with the others, they definitely wouldn't be able to deal with it."

"I need to do something, I haven't got the chance to kill an undying since coming to the outer region wars. The last time Poison killed that Qiu Shi undying. And that was just a normal undying, because of my help, I got 10 million contribution points, but Poison got 90 million points, for a total of 1 hundred million points." Luo Feng thought, "A stronger undying should probably have more."

Killing a sector lord alone would at least give 100,000 points and a maximum of 10 million points, Luo feng knew this long ago.

And killing an undying alone had a minimum of 1 hundred million and a maximum of 1 quadrillion (Killing an emperor pinnacle).

The 1 quadrillion points news had long spread throughout the camp. As long as one could kill a pinnacle level emperor, one would get shocking amount of points. But that was pinnacle level emperor! That would mean at least Fantasy spirit or Bloodthirst emperor level, the renowned undyings of the universe.

Killing an official level mostly required an emperor level strength.

Killing a pinnacle emperor level?

That was extremely tough.

Defeating was easy, capturing was difficult and killing was the hardest.

As for Luo Feng's 10 trillion points quota...he would probably take very long to complete it. However, the basic army quota of 1 billion was very easy.

"Five undyings. I wonder if it's enough to accumulate 1 billion points." Luo Feng thought. "Let's hope all of them are worth 1 hundred million points each."

"Warning, we've encountered..."

The ship suddenly rang with an ear piercing alarm.

"What."

The originally relaxed members all suddenly stood up, armors appearing throughout as they brandished their weapons.

"Rumble!" A powerful force collided with the ship. Everybody within felt the shockwave after as the resting quarters flew madly about. The body of the C9 ship was destroyed just like tofu.

Hua! Hua! Hua! Hua!

Four doors opened from the ship as the sector lord elite team all rushed out in two’s, the undying Tai Wo kept the resting quarters too.

...

In space.

Tai Wo and the others stood there, looking at the distant two scaled undyings.

"You actually dared to come." Poison stared hard at the distant Fu Wei San.

"Of course." He used an ear piercing voice to speak in human language. The Qiu Shi Fu Wei San smiled, "Despicable humans, you made me destroy 10% of my soul, this time, you will all die."

Rumble! Rumble!

From the distance, two incredibly powerful energies swept past them. It made the originally confident Tai Wo, Poison and the others all change their expressions as they turned to look. Two enormous beings had appeared, one was a single horned dragon covered in scales and the other was one completely covered in sharp spikes with a flappy membrane over the neck area and with a mouse head on the top. Although it's eyes seemed adorable, but its gaze was filled with bone chilling killing intent.

"Demon race!"

"Demon undying."

"Four undyings." Tai Wo, Poison, Mad Wu, Wei, Hammer, Tornado, Demon lady, God and Rock all went completely pale. Luo Feng's gaze however was fixed on the distant snake head demon puppet.

Chapter 773: The Blooming Star Eating Plant

The Blooming Star Eating Plant

"It’s over." God shuddered.

"No." Demon lady stared about.

"Madman, Poison, Mad Wu, Wei, Hammer, Tornado, Demon lady, God, Rock." Tai Wo’s eyes were filled with despair as he communicated, "This is the flesh eating undying’s revenge. He’s already seen our strength, hence he definitely got enough back up, we don’t have much hope. When I give the order, the moment there’s a chance, everybody will disperse and flee. We have 10 of us, with some luck...some can still live on. Everybody give it their all."

"Let’s stake it all." Mad Wu gritted his teeth.

"We have to at least drag one of them down with us." Poison’s eyes gleamed with madness.

At this time, the Qiu Shi Fu Wei San and Lake Ya had another silhouette fly up from behind, it was the snake head puppet.

"Your majesty Meng Wei Na."

"Your majesty Meng Wei Na."

The two were very respectful.

The scene made everybody about shudder within. My god, there was an even stronger opponent?

"Humans." The snake head puppet stood before the two Qiu Shi warriors, smiling as his gaze landed on Luo Feng and Poison. Fu Wei San had long shown him the images of the two of them. Hence, he was very clear, and wouldn't care about the other humans. But his majesty would definitely want to personally kill Poison and Luo Feng.

The snake head puppet spoke with passionate human language, "Congratulations, to die under me, Meng Wei Na's hands, it's your honor to see my true form."

After which the puppet vanished and a majestic mountain like snake appeared in space. It was about 200m thick with 12km in length. This was much higher than any peak snake on earth. It was completely green in color with scales throughout its veins, each with over 1,000 rings.

It had six wings made from muscles, and it only had one eye that was jet black.

Rumble...as this 10,000 hidden snake clan member appeared, an unbelievable chill instantly spread over 10,000 km. Water droplets

appeared about within the area, after which, countless flows of water froze into ice, just like an ice domain. Even if Tai Wo unleashed his law domains to withstand it, the sector lords would still feel the bone chilling cold.

"Five individuals!" Tai Wo's eyes were filled with despair.

"And this one is much stronger than those four" Poison stared and gritted his teeth.

"It's really over."

...

Just from a simple energy scan, one could clearly feel the huge disparity between the 10,000 hidden snake member compared to the other four undyings, it was simply that much stronger.

"Give it your all brothers and sisters. We've lived for thousands of years, we've long anticipated the day we fell. Even if we die, we cannot let them do it easily."

"Right, kill."

"Even if we die we have to drag one down with us."

"Back then when 7th brother died, I had thought of the day I would die too, it's finally here."

The members including captain Tai Wo didn’t even think about feelings anymore, their only thought...was to drag a couple of them down with them.

"Make your move." Meng Wei Na stood up above as his cold gaze swept past the team while he ordered, "Leave those two humans to me, you all can settle the rest."

"Yes."

Rumble!

Immediately, the three undyings including Meng Wei Na along with the two Qiu Shi undyings all released their law domains. Flashing from all directions towards the humans, some were cold, while others laughing maniacally.

"Brothers, kill." Tai Wo ordered.

"Kill." The members all felt despair and roared madly.

The two sides moved instantly.

At this time, an incredibly powerful energy engulfed the area from the human side, it even made Tai Wo and the others turn immediately. Even his majesty Meng Wei Na and the others rushing over were shocked as they felt the rush of power. Whether

it was humans, Qiu Shi or demons, it was hard to believe this scene.

A huge water plant like plant life form floated before Luo Feng, it was completely gold and had thick vines, and there were a total of 100 of them.

"Bloom." Luo Feng muttered softly.

Almost like a little plant growing into a huge monster, this gold plant madly expanded in all directions. Every vine of the star eating plant grew thicker and thicker, countless incredibly sharp leaves shot out like teeth, and in an instant, it had become almost like a huge heavenly body.

Every vine reached over 100,000 km. The main vines had countless leaves that were used to wrap around and swallow.

100 vines...it made the undying star eating plant to look akin to almost the sun!

The completely unleashed star eating plant floated in space almost like an incredibly lush plant...only this plant had the size of a sun. The five undyings that were rushing at the human team were only a few ten thousand km away, naturally they were instantly engulfed by the size of the plant's countless leaves.

It was almost like fish struggling in the water against a huge plant, the sun like undying star eating plant, how could they get

away from that?

"My god."

"My god."

"This..."

"This is simply..."

Tai Wo and the other members of the human team were completely stunned. Personally seeing a 1m tall gold plant... instantly swell to the size of a star, this terrifying undying energy gave them the chills.

An undying plant! This was an undying plant!

"Plant life, this is an undying plant." Fu Wei San's eyes were filled with shock. "How can there be an undying plant, every plant life form is incredibly hard to nurture. Even the lowest level have extremely powerful strength, they require countless amounts of treasure and wealth. How can someone in shattered stars have an undying plant."

"Big trouble." He looked about at the countless leaves that looked like teeth surrounding them.

The scaled one horned dragon along with the spiky mouse demon

were all in despair. Their bodies had a length of 8km and 5km, compared to humans and the bug clan etc, they were huge. However compared to the plant life forms...

The plant life form was like a star! Over 100 vines spreading about, covering an area with a diameter of close to 1 million km. Even a single gold leaf alone was bigger than their bodies.

"Star eating plant, an undying star eating plant." The 10,000 hidden snakes Meng Wei Na looked around as the large amount of huge gold leaves surrounded him. He was prepared to defend at any time, however he knew about the star eating plant in front of him Hence, he didn't have any confidence in fleeing, "This is the most sturdy offensive plant life form, which is incredibly solid. The moment one is trapped by it, even an official level undying wouldn't be able to flee quickly, much less me. I'll send distress signals! Call everyone! We've met a human with an undying 100 vine star eating plant!"

...

Tai Wo and the other humans all looked at Luo Feng. The other five undyings all saw through the slits of the huge leaves, they knew too...that this undying star eating plant came from that black armored human.

Luo Feng simply complimented softly, "The fully bloomed star eating plant sure is beautiful."

"Dying from the star eating plant is your honor." Luo Feng said

softly.

"No!"

The single horned dragon, the mouse demon and the two Qiu Shi undyings all howled as they madly struggled and unleashed their undying energies.

The large amount of gold leaves that weren't attacking before suddenly became like a man eating plant, rushing at them. They used tens of spiky teeth like gold leaves to surround each undying, whether it was the huge demon race undying or the Qiu Shi undyings, they were all completely wrapped up.

Chi chi chi...they were completely trapped within the gold leaves as they madly struggled.

The leaves constricted tighter and tighter.

Their bones broke and their muscles tore apart, their bodies crumbling altogether. Against the 'large mouths' of each gold leaf they were completely shredded and swallowed! This star eating plant naturally had the ability to swallow large amounts of plants, metal, rocks etc, even flesh and blood.

Howl...

"Ah."

"No!"

"Self destruct, self destruct!"

The 4 undyings wrapped within the leaves let out all sorts of noises, 2 undyings chose to self destruct in despair, rumble! Rumble! They only managed to damage a few gold leaves, however this undying star eating plant...was a huge heavenly body the size of a star with countless gold leaves.

Just like that, the four powerful undyings were swallowed whole by the star eating plant.

"If there weren't five undyings, I wouldn't even have bothered to use the star eating plant, using it sure is overkill." Luo feng looked at the scene and couldn't help but feel shocked. One had to know that this undying star eating plant was considered pinnacle general level, after taking some strengthening abilities into consideration, even official level undyings wouldn't be able to escape quickly.

Being surrounded by countless vines and leaves was indeed a very terrifying thing.

"Luo Feng, the four undyings have been killed. You received four hundred million contribution points." Babata's voice resounded in Luo Feng's mind.

"What, only four hundred million?" Luo Feng couldn't help but

feel helpless.

Damn.

His target was one billion contribution points, he had to hit that quota before fulfilling their requirements and setting himself free.

"This last Meng Wei Na demon undying, he must be the leader. He seems much stronger, my undying star eating plant cannot suppress him in a short amount of time. The other four only gave me one hundred million points each, this guy should be worth more." Luo Feng glanced over. That 10,000 Hidden snakes demon was howling madly as the large amount of water and ice particles surrounded him, he twisted about madly as he attacked with space laws infused within.

The large amount of gold leaves were forced aside, unable to suppress him.

"No."

"No." He madly struggled within, almost as though he could see his demise.

Chapter 774: Quick End

Against the engulfing golden leaves from all directions, Meng Wei Na of the 10,000 Hidden snakes fought madly to defend himself. Every time his snake tail whipped about, it would be infused with space laws that knocked the surrounding leaves away, even destroying part of it.

"I can’t get away, I can’t get away." He was extremely worried, his one eye gleaming with madness, "There’s no other hope, I can only call for help and hope for the close by allies to rush over. I have to hold out until they get here. I can do it!"

"Distress signals, there’s a human sector lord with an undying star eating plant!"

While Meng Wei Na was struggling against the undying plant, he was constantly sending out distress signals.

...

Similar to humans, when the demon clan warriors sent out distress signals, it would swiftly be transmitted via their communication systems to the surrounding ten billion km area to their allies. Ten billion km was relatively small, with light speed at 300,000 km per second, it would take about half a day for anyone within the ten billion km away to get here. And Luo Feng and his team were only two days out from their base.

Half day was only the distance of the diameter, if they were

spread out even further.

Allies, how many were there?

"There’s a sector lord human with an undying star eating plant." This news was swiftly spread throughout the groups amongst the demon race.

"Undying star eating plant, going there would be suicide."

"Who’d go."

"Unlucky fellow."

"Poor thing."

"So unlucky."

"Hehe, for a human sector lord to have an undying star eating plant, looks like his background must be huge. Killing him should have extra rewards. It’s a pity, you’d have to be extremely powerful to do it, haha, I wont commit suicide." The large amount of warriors in the demon clan all received the news and simply scoffed at it.

There were afterall very few in shattered stars that could mess with an undying star eating plant.

...

However, there were still seven teams that rushed over in the area.

"It should be some genius of humanity." Within the ship, a wolf head man with a human body smiled, "He must have some background to have an undying star eating plant. However no matter what...he's still from another race! Haha, the stronger the genius, the more achievement I get when I kill him."

The man sat high above.

Below him were eight other demon puppets, and below them were even more demon puppets gathered about respectfully. It was obvious that the close to hundred puppets right below represented the sector lords.

The leader of this team was very well known within shattered stars. He was called Cocoon Wolf official, and he was an official level undying.

Shattered stars, even though many warriors had gathered there, there were very few official level undyings there. Also, it was obvious that this official level undying was afraid of death, not daring to head out to other dangerous regions, staying within shattered stars. But here...this team was considered extremely powerful.

In space, within the star like star eating plant, the over 10km long Meng Wei Na was struggling hard to break free.

"Hm?"

Luo Feng gazed at him struggling for five seconds and frowned. "This is trouble, my undying star eating plant only has 100 vines, and it’s only as strong as a pinnacle level general. Anything stronger than that 10,000 Hidden snakes member will be trouble. Even though I can bind that guy, I cannot kill him within a short amount of time, I need quite some time to grind him to death."

"No."

"He will definitely call for help."

"Once time drags, the nearby warriors of the demon race will rush over. Even though the chances of those brave enough to face an undying star eating plant is very low. I cannot take the risk." Luo Feng instantly made his decision. "Using the Nan Shen Armament will be hard for me to kill this undying general pinnacle demon."

"I’ll use the soldier armor." Luo Feng thought.

A black armor instantly extended about him and formed his helmet along with a complete armor. The armor was streamlined and the power from this mysterious armor coursed through out his body. A strength that was total of 1,000 times a normal human

sector lord pinnacle, and akin to the body of an official level undying coursed through his body.

"Clang." A silver blade with blood red around its edges appeared in his right hand.

In his left a silver six edged shield.

"Kill!" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed coldly.

Xiu!

He became a beam of light and rushed straight at Meng Wei Na.

"Madman."

"Madman is a fighter?"

"That, that..." Tai Wo and the others had just awoken from the shock of seeing an undying star eating plant. They were even more shocked as they saw him take on the form of a fighter, with a shield and blade.

"A sector lord able to use the Nan Shen Armament to that level, he's actually a fighter?" Poison's eyes stared wide eyed.

"A fighter."

Tai Wo communicated seriously, "And a very powerful one, even more than his Nan Shen Armament control, his instantaneous speed earlier was even faster than my full speed."

"What?"

The members were all shocked.

...

Countless gold leaves wrapped about as Luo Feng rushed forward, he ordered, "Star eating plant, use your leaves to wrap about, I don’t want the captain to see my battle with him."

"Yes master." The undying plant sent a thought back. Right away, countless gold leaves moved and completely blocked the captain and the others from watching. Simultaneously, Luo Feng used his scanning device to jam all other signals about, he didn’t want them to witness his battle to prevent more trouble.

Xiu!

Luo Feng became a black blur and instantly reached Meng Wei Na.

"Human." Meng Wei Na was happy within. "If you didn’t have this plant, how could you be my match. Yet now you actually come

to me." His terrifying ice aura expanded throughout and large amounts of water droplets moved, freezing occasionally and flowing at other times.

The icy energy spread over 10,000 km and Luo Feng instantly rushed in.

"Hmph!" His eyes gleamed, "Law domain, what a joke!"

Rumble!

He used his world projection and the space around it instantly warped into an endless vast grassland. Even the law domain of Meng Wei Na crumbled instantly under the pressure!

"How can this be?" His eyes were filled with shock as he let out an ear piercing scream in demon race language.

A world projection actually crushed a law domain?

How powerful was this internal world for it to have such a world projection.

Some golden horned beasts that chose to rely on universe crystals to evolve had internal worlds with diameters of 30 million km at sector lord pinnacle. The world projection of such an internal world was completely able to match a law domain. Luo Feng's internal world right now was over 90 million km!

In terms of size, it was 27 times bigger!

The power of the world projection was much stronger. Back then when his internal world was 60 million km in diameter, it was already able to suppress a law domain, now it could completely crush it.

"I'll settle this fast." Luo Feng was fast as lightning.

"Howl..." Meng Wei Na's six muscular wings flapped. He rushed forward and opened his mouth, forming a few km wide huge mouth. Using his law power to swallow, he caused the surrounding space to warp.

This ferocious swallow!

Rumble!

The surrounding space completely crumbled and countless space fragments were sucked into his mouth. The black armored Luo Feng that was rushing in could feel the terrifying force as well.

"Die." Meng Wei Na's eye gleamed with madness.

"What a joke." Luo Feng squinted his eyes.

Rumble!

His speed soared as he became a black beam of light and rushed straight at his mouth, waving the blood shadow blade in his hand. The instant he waved it...the surrounding space seemed to be torn apart almost as if there was a giant splitting it, forming a huge slit without a sound.

The blade flashed and slashed over 10,000 km, splitting the space in two.

A beautiful flash, it made others shudder.

Silence...

Meng Wei Na maintained his open mouth manic position, his eye however was filled with fear, after which, his head was sliced right through the middle and his entire body was split in two, as large amounts of his organs spilled out.

He was sliced clean in two!

Illusionary 7 blades, Dutchman’s pipe!

"Clang!" Luo Feng shook the blade and looked at Meng Wei Na split in two, "You should be honoured to be killed by the Dutchman’s pipe."

Simultaneously, countless gold leaves wrapped about and

instantly held on to the two pieces of his body. Even though he was split in two, he still wasn't dead. But the only thing was... that moment, his body pieces were wrapped up by the countless gold leaves, with countless teeth like blades chomping down, he didn't have any chance of survival.

In the blink of an eye, Meng Wei Na was swallowed by the countless mad gold leaves.

"Using the soldier armor I roughly have the strength of an official, my law comprehension level however has long reached official level." Luo Feng sighed. "Even though I didn't use the beast god presence to unleash the strongest move of the illusionary 7 blades Burial, just the Dutchman's pipe alone is at official level already."

"My world project completely suppressed him."

"Splitting him in two is only natural."

...

The fully bloomed star eating plant began to shrink swiftly and become a very small plant, entering through Luo Feng's shoulder.

Tai Wo and the others were still reeling from the shock.

"Sou." Luo Feng carried the blood shadow blade on his back and flew back.

Looking at the fighter like Luo Feng, the rest of the team couldn’t help but shout out in shock, "Madman, you..."

"We’ll talk later, that demon undying definitely called for help, we have to go." Luo Feng said.

"Hm, let’s go." Tai Wo finally calmed down.

The other members could only hold in all their shock and questions, immediately flying swiftly into a C9 grade ship, becoming a beam of light and tearing through space.

Chapter 775: Going Alone

When the seven elite teams of the demon race had reached the battlefield, all they found were ship remains.

...

The C9 ship was flying at sub light speed in space, within its resting quarters.

The elite team that survived the disaster exchanged glances, occasionally looking at Luo Feng. He however was chatting with Babata.

"Babata, how many points did I get? Don’t tell me I haven’t hit 1 billion yet. Even though I easily defeated that 10,000 hidden snakes member, he’s still a pinnacle general undying. It would be very hard to kill him without official level strength." Luo Feng said to Babata mentally.

"Total points 1.461 billion." Babata said.

"Phew."

Luo Feng let out a sigh of relief. "Not bad, the points that 10,000 hidden snakes demon gave was about a billion, however it’s still very little. He’s already a pinnacle general undying, and yet he only gave one billion points."

"Luo Feng, you are free from the army now, even if you leave the team you won't be punished by the army." Babata said. The army was very strict, as long as he wasn't free, even if he was the disciple of the Primal chaos city leader, he couldn't go against the rules.

"Hm."

Luo Feng nodded.

Right, he was free now. This meant that he could leave the sector lord elite team. Even though he could chat with them in the team, he didn't have a chance to fully unleash his strength. For example...shattered stars system was simply an area too weak for him.

"Madman." The captain Tai Wo finally spoke amidst the silence in the resting quarters.

"Captain." Luo Feng looked at him.

Tai Wo revealed a smile, "I didn't expect to have such a level of warrior in my team, the undying star eating plant instantly killed the four undyings, and you yourself went to kill that Pinnacle general undying demon. I must have been blind all this time. Your strongest moves are that of a fighter, not a spirit reader, it truly makes us...regretful!"

"Madman." Poison stood in the sofa, looking oddly at him. "You are truly absurd, pretending to be a spirit reader and yet you can

already unleash its 9th form A Match against undying. Your true Fighter path, damn...you are only a sector lord and you can kill a pinnacle general undying, you, you are..."

"Mad."

"Even the sector lord core members of the Huge Axe Dojo that I know aren't that strong."

"Only the true core of the five leviathans would have such power."

"Hm."

"The Primal region and Absolute beginning region sector lord members of the Virtual Universe Company are those that have trained for 100s of thousands of years. Hence, many have law comprehension akin to official level undyings. However they still may not be able to kill a pinnacle general undying." Rock spoke, Luo Feng was shocked when he heard that, glancing over at him. Rock was right, the sector lord members of the Absolute beginning region and Primal regions...as long as they become undying, they would normally at least be official level!

For Rock to know this, he must have some background too.

"To be able to join the outer region wars with you is my honor." Rock looked at Luo Feng.

"Respect."

"Madman, against you...I feel inferior." The white armored God lamented. "You are more suited for the title god."

"Damn."

"Don’t be shameless."

The other members all laughed.

Luo Feng couldn’t help but laugh too, he got along well with these brothers and sisters. Actually he could see...the members could all tell from his strength earlier, that even if he wasn’t a core genius of the five leviathans, he would be a disciple of some absolute being. However they didn’t want to dig further.

"My brothers and sisters." Luo Feng looked at the crowd.

The group all went silent as they looked at him.

"My trip here to the outer region wars, other than the quota sent by the army, I still have other missions to accomplish." Luo Feng said, "I believe everybody can guess what I’m about to say."

"One billion points is simply nothing to you Madman." Poison nodded. "You can’t be here simply to finish that one billion points, and its not very likely you are here for money. Because just the

nurturing of that undying plant...is enough to make even an official level undying bankrupt."

Luo Feng smiled and nodded, "And when I killed the five undyings earlier, I had already collected the one billion points, I'm now free from the army."

"You mean?" Tai Wo was stunned.

"You are leaving?" Hammer said seriously.

"Are you leaving?" Demon lady wanted to speak but said nothing.

The group looked at him.

Luo Feng nodded, "Right, I'm leaving."

Tai Wo, Hammer, Poison, Tornado, Demon lady, Wei, Rock, Mad Wu and god all exchanged glances, their expressions were complex. Even though they couldn't bear to lose Luo Feng, they had all guessed...such a level of warrior couldn't possibly stay in such a low level place such as shattered stars with them.

"My apologies." Luo Feng said softly.

"No need." Tai Wo said, "If you stay with us, against the weak, it would be a waste of your time. However against the strong...we would only hold you back, your decision is right."

"Haha, no matter what, I Poison...was once your team mate." Poison laughed, "Madman, you've never revealed your true name, looks like you must have some serious background. Haha, anyway we all have your contact number in the virtual universe, when you eventually wish to reveal your identity, you'll tell us."

"Definitely." Luo Feng nodded.

Demon lady looked enchantingly at Luo Feng, shouting gently, "Genius...when you become a huge figure, don't forget us."

"I knew you'd cling to power." The illusionist Wei rubbed the cat on his lap and shot a glance at her.

"If you were just as strong, I'd do it to you too." She lifted her head, causing the skinny Wei to be speechless.

"Tens of thousands of years later, we may meet again. I'm afraid that, by then you'd shock us completely." Hammer raised his large hand and pat Luo Feng's shoulder. "I await that day, of course I'd have to survive and leave the outer region wars."

...

Luo Feng had afterall chatted with this group for half a year, the separation...had finally come.

"These are the spoils from killing the five undyings earlier." Luo Feng flipped his hand and took out a world ring. Looking at his brothers and sisters before him, "To me, these items...honestly, aren’t very useful. I believe you all need it a lot more than I do."

After which, he used his world energy to control the ring.

"How can we allow this."

"This..."

Tai Wo and the others were completely stunned, this was the wealth of five undyings, and especially with his majesty Meng Wei Na, it was easily akin to tens or even hundreds of one scaled undying Tuo Lu.

"Madman’s perspectives are completely different from ours. That Meng Wei Na...he easily killed him, these items truly don’t mean anything to him, everybody, just accept it." The new recruit Rock said.

"Haha, the bigger the reward the better." Poison laughed, immediately reaching first for the world ring.

"Wow, so many treasures."

"Let me look."

"These have to be worth a few tens of thousands of mixed elements."

"Hm."

"This is akin to our past 1,000 years of goods."

The members all passed the ring around to check it, the captain Tai Wo said excitedly, "This scanning device is much better than the one we use. A good scanning device is very important in the outer region wars, it will allow one to detect your enemy first while remaining hidden to them. This one alone should be worth over 10,000 mixed elements. It's good stuff, Madman, you...you will be exploring the battlefields, you need a good scanning device."

"I have one." Luo Feng nodded.

He already had two good scanning devices.

He bought one himself, which was extremely pricey. It would easily auction for over ten million mixed elements.

The other was the one his teacher Hu Yan Bo used back then, it too was priced at several tens of thousands of mixed elements. However, the one Hu Yan Bo used was more proficient in short distance and somewhat weaker at scanning huge areas like one hundred million km.

"Captain, how much do you know about the contribution points given from killing undyings?" Luo Feng asked, he wanted to ask before but hadn’t found the chance.

"Undyings are separated into generals, officials and emperor level. Of which official levels usually can reach the level of undying body, once that happens, killing them is extremely tough." Tai Wo said, "And those generals without undying bodies are much easier to kill.

Luo Feng nodded.

"Killing a general has the least points, and was usually split between two levels. The lower level general will give one hundred million while the higher level would give one billion. Just these two levels." Tai Wo said, "Official levels and emperor levels both have three levels each."

"Killing a lower level official will give ten billion."

"Killing a higher level official will give hundred billion."

"Killing a pinnacle level official would give one trillion."

"A lower level emperor would give ten trillion."

"A high level emperor would give hundred trillion."

"A pinnacle emperor would give one quadrillion." Tai Wo finished everything in one breath. He had been in the outer region wars for a long time, hence he knew many undyings and also information about them.

Luo Feng nodded as he heard.

"Thanks." He suddenly got up.

Tai Wo and the others looked at him.

"My brothers and sisters, you are considered my life and death partners, we'll meet again when we leave the outer region wars. But, right now...I'll be taking my leave." He said.

"Be careful." Tai Wo emphasized.

"Don't you dare die." Poison shouted, "Be careful, the other races have many tactics, without an undying body...the moment you fall into a trap, it'd be hard to escape."

"I'm waiting to cling on to you." Demon lady winked.

...

Luo Feng said his goodbyes to the group and turned to fly out of the ship.

Sou!

With a flip of his hand, an E9 grade disc shape ship appeared and he flew in.

Two ships, One C9 and another E9...flew in different directions and vanished into the distant space.

Luo Feng finally began his true battle journey in the outer region wars...

Chapter 776: Yan Ji Continent

Luo Feng had killed a good number of sector lords along with five undyings in his half year in Shattered stars. Even though he had given the valuable items from the five undyings to his sector lord elite team, he still kept some things...like the ship!

These other race sector lords and undyings had gone through countless life or death situations too, killing many human and automaton warriors, collecting a lot of ships. However they were killed by Luo Feng and now he owned many of these ships for himself.

When it came to F grade ships, there was just one, the Yun Mo planet ship.

As for the E grade ships, he had 1,821 of them.

For the D grade ships, he had 302.

Also, he had over 800 million C grade ships, it was a pity that they weren't worth much.

Other than that, he got over 1 hundred million different grades of living ships.

"Even the captain Tai Wo, although he's still an undying, he still uses a normal C9 grade ship to fly about in shattered stars, even though he has a whole bunch of E9 ships too. These C9 ships are

cannon fodder. So, who knows how many he’s got." Luo Feng thought. Many warriors spend hundreds of thousands of years in the outer region wars.

Normally, they order a large amount of C grade ships as cannon fodder.

Since it was cheap!

...

Within this E9 ship’s control room, Luo feng lay in the sofa and sipped on a boiling hot cup of tea.

"With this advanced scanning system, I’ll be able to quietly sip tea in the outer region wars, and I wouldn’t have to worry about any surprise attacks." Luo Feng drank his tea as his arm screen displayed the surrounding information of the area about him. 1 billion km around him, the other race warriors couldn’t even detect Luo feng.

Shattered stars system didn’t have any warriors who were able to purchase this device worth over 10 million mixed elements, or those with the channels to do so.

"Luo Feng, there’s mail." Babata shouted.

"Hm?" Luo feng frowned and connected to the virtual universe network. Most warriors were always connected to the network in

the outer region wars, because it allowed them to know where their allies were around them, and in battle, they had to open the synchronized broadcast.

Only that way could the system see the battle and distribute contribution points.

"Send information to my arm quantum computer." Luo Feng ordered, looking at his screen.

The army system immediately gave the order.

"Soldier Luo Feng, you've already completed your point quota and left the team. You have two choices now, one is to continue fighting, and the other is to retire and leave the outer region wars." The worlds immediately appeared on his screen.

"Continue battle." Luo Feng said softly.

The system received his answer and quickly sent another mail.

"Being free from the army, you have the right to exchange for treasures and even for cash. Every 100,000 contribution points equates to one mixed element. And as a Virtual Universe Company member, ever 100,000 contribution points can be exchanged for 1 point in the company. You can use the system to exchange for treasures or exchange them for points to exchange for in the virtual universe treasure trove."

"You chose to continue to fight. Hence, you have two more choices"

"One, you can go alone."

"Two, you can choose to lead a team. This team can have 100 sector lords, 1000 domain lords, and 10,000 universe levels. Your mission is to lead this team into the battles. When you encounter other armies, you will deal with the undying and your army will battle against theirs."

"Pick one, the contribution points distribution is the same."

"Picking the 2nd choice to lead an army, the point distribution will have an extra 50%. For example, when you kill a normal undying you usually get 1 hundred million points. When you lead an army however, killing the same undying will give you 150 million points. Also...when you lead the army, you needn't protect them, you will have to deal with the undyings and stop the other race undyings from massacring."

"Please make your choice."

Luo Feng laughed.

Becoming a nanny?

The benefits seemed good, getting an extra 50% in points, even though it was pretty troublesome, however with the extra points,

many undyings would probably still pick it. However Luo Feng had too many trump cards, especially the golden horned beast. Hence, how could he use them when he led an army?

"I pick the 1st option of going solo." Luo Feng said softly.

"Already recorded. Soldier Luo Feng, you can apply to lead an army anytime you wish. We'll now send you the latest 7th battlefield map. Please accept." The system sent the new map over via the virtual universe and closed the call after.

...

"Map." Luo Feng sat in his sofa and sipped tea, looking up at the map before him.

A 3D virtual map of the area showed up. The entire 7th battlefield seemed very complex in the map with a blur of special areas, like Shattered stars. These areas ranged in the tens of thousands, there were even more lower level places that were in the trillions, these areas had very few strong warriors, normally only sector lords, domain lords and universe levels moved around in those areas.

"Shattered stars has many sector lord teams, there are quite a few undying led teams too, with few official levels." Luo Feng shook his head. "It has no challenge for me, and there are too few undyings. Just looking for them alone is problematic, hunting them would be even harder."

Shattered stars didn’t suit him.

"Then I’ll head to..."

Luo Feng looked at the map.

After zooming in a little, the countless dots had names beside them.

"Yan Ji continent." Luo feng glanced at this spot, "This is one of the high level battle areas within the area of the 26th base."

"Zoom in." Luo Feng ordered.

"Zoom in on Yan Ji continent."

From among the trillions of dots, Yan Ji Continent was enlarged. This was an irregular continent that had large fragments floating about it. Words began to appear beside it, explaining in detail about the area.

"Yan Ji continent: One of the highest level battle areas in the 7th battlefield’s 26th camp area. Those that dare enter are humans along with other race warriors, their elite teams most definitely have undyings and the armies are usually led by undyings."

"Every team has an undying, and there are a large number of official level undyings."

"Amongst the undyings, generals take up 2/3rd of the number, officials take up 1/3 of them, and only very few are at emperor level."

"Here, if one doesn't have an undying body, survival chances are very low."

"..."

"..."

Large amounts of information about the area's dangers were displayed. It finally said, "The Yan Ji continent's largest diameter is 1.8 light years with a few thousands of fragments that float about. These fragments have different diameters, the small ranging in the millions of km while the large in the trillions of km."

...

Luo Feng sat in the sofa and sipped his tea, looking at the 3D map.

"Yan Ji continent is one of the highest level battle areas." Luo Feng said. "However within the 7th battlefield, it's still considered a 2nd class area. Above it, there's still the 1st class, and within camps 22-36, there are even more terrifying areas. However those areas lowest level warriors are all at least official level undyings.

The emperors mostly stay in those areas."

"Hm."

"My human body can rely on the soldier armor, amplifying to 1,000 sector lords' strength...that would be the low level official undying's strength, and my law comprehension is slightly stronger than a lower official. However I don't have an undying body." Luo feng shook his head. "Against normal official level undyings, my earth body would have a lot of difficulty..."

"The most dangerous places are where large amounts of emperor level undyings gather, I'll head there in the future."

"My strength is still insufficient."

Luo Feng nodded, "When I become the most powerful being in Yan Ji continent, only then will I have the right to head to those places."

"Babata, let's head out." Luo Feng ordered.

"Yes."

******

Luo Feng's scanning device had long detected some enemies, and easily dodged them. Hence this E9 ship had never been attacked

even before engaging in universe travel.

"Universe travel."

"50 times light speed."

"Luo Feng, it'll take about two hours to reach the travel point close to Yan Ji continent. After we travel there, it would still take another six days to reach the area. However, we have very advanced scanning devices, the chances of being attacked are very low. Regardless, you cannot get careless. You may get unlucky and meet an emperor level warrior somewhere, that level of warrior would have a device even more advanced than yours. If they discover how advanced your device is, they may very well choose to sneak over and attack you!"

"If you meet an emperor's attack, that would be dangerous."

"Hence you have to be on alert at all times."

"Understood." Luo Feng nodded.

...

Six days later.

The black disc ship that had flown for a few days in the universe finally reached its destination.

Hua!

The alloy door of the control room automatically opened and Luo Feng entered the control room, ordering, "100% simulation." The external scenery was immediately displayed clearly.

"Yan Ji continent." Luo Feng stood in the control room and gazed ahead, "We are finally here."

A vast continent stood before them, and surrounding it were other huge continents floating about.

"My time in the outer region wars may be spent here for the next few thousands of years." Luo Feng pondered on the images of Tai Wo, Poison, Hammer, Demon lady...

"They are probably still in Shattered stars, Tai Wo, let’s hope you will all survive and return."

"Let’s hope I will do so too."

Luo Feng revealed a smile.

Sou!

The E9 ship swiftly flew towards the continent. From today, Tai Wo’s elite team would be fighting within Shattered stars against

the other races. Luo Feng however would be fighting against the stronger warriors of the other races. What the future held, no one truly knew.

Chapter 777: Nuo Lan Shan?

Yan Ji Continent was the main huge continent surrounded by many other large fragments. Even though some of them are called fragments, some of them still require close to two months to completely fly past, one could only imagine how huge they were.

"Sou!" The black disc flew above a fragment.

"It sure is huge."

Luo Feng stood in the control room and gazed at the vast endless continent below, "It's just a fragment and yet I can't see the end of it."

"Luo Feng, according to the marker on the map, the main continent is named number One, we are currently flying over number Nine, and its largest diameter is about 900 billion km. The path we are taking right now is near 700 billion km mark, even if we maintain a speed of 290,000 km per second, it'd still take us a month to pass this area." Babata's voice resounded within the control room.

Luo Feng nodded.

Actually while in shattered stars, Luo Feng's team had always flown about at light speed within a few days' distance. However, this continent number Nine required a month to completely fly through, it was suitable to be a battlefield for warriors.

"An undying led army?"

"Hm? Hehe, this is the dark scarlet race, this is the first time I've seen one, it's as cute as those in my inherited memories. Just from its appearance, it's hard to imagine that they are truly terrifying."

"Hm, an official level undying?"

While flying above continent Nine, through his scanning device, Luo Feng could clearly see the many teams around his 1 billion km area. As he guessed, this continent Nine...even though it was just a fragment, it was huge and had many warriors hidden within.

The many teams of other race warriors, their levels were clearly much stronger than Shattered stars, at least the undyings were frequently seen.

Luo Feng was dazzled by it.

After awhile, he didn't bother to check up on every team, only ordering, "Babata, you'll be in charge of the scanning device, let me know if anything happens." He returned to his resting quarters. That room was made of F9 alloys, of course it was one from his majesty Meng Wei Na after countless years of battle.

...

After flying for half a month over continent Nine.

In the resting quarters.

Luo Feng sat crossed legged.

"Luo Feng, Luo Feng." Babata shouted out urgently from within.

"What’s up?" Luo Feng asked.

"Hurry and come to the control room." Babata said.

"You are purposely hiding something." Luo Feng smiled and walked out towards to control room.

The external simulator was on within the control room. Luo Feng looked down and was shocked, "Babata, why have you stopped the ship? We planned to enter the main continent, but why are you stopping in the air above continent Nine?"

"Hehe." Babata laughed weirdly.

Weng!

A screen appeared before Luo Feng and on it was a human image. He was dressed in a dark green armor with pointy ears, and his eyes were gleaming with red light like a venomous snake, the

image gave others a chill.

"Nuo Lan Shan?" Luo Feng was shocked, "Babata, why are you showing me his picture, don't tell me..."

Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

"Hehe, congratulations, you've guessed right." Babata said proudly.

"You've really found him?" Luo Feng was shocked. Even now he still didn't dare to believe it, how huge was the outer region wars, even though he flew through the large areas and scanned everything, it was still just a small portion of the entire battlefield.

And he actually found Nuo Lan Shan, this was fate!

"The ship was flying in the air above continent Nine with the scanning device turned on. Even though there were few human teams, there was nothing special. Just now however, it suddenly discovered Nuo Lan Shan and I immediately recognized the signal, hence I stopped the ship. Back then in order to get the treasures of earth, he used many underhanded tactics, you and your family almost died at his hands." Babata said. "And now to be able to meet him here, according to what the earthlings say...it's divine intervention!"

"Hm." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed coldly.

Nuo Lan Shan, back then he had sent a star level team to earth to use force to threaten earth, during which many humans had died and he forced the elites of earth out of their bases, and destroying the many bases as threats. Luckily Luo Feng became the leader of earth at the right time and used the Black Dragon Mountain laws to force him away.

The Nuo Lan Shan family was dissatisfied and secretly sent a special elite team to swiftly capture all of earth's leaders along with Luo feng's wife Xu Xin, and his brother Luo Hua as hostages.

His many tactics failed.

He even sent two universe level warriors over, of which one died and another became Luo Feng's soul slave.

Finally, because of the incident in the world within a world, Luo feng had gotten a powerful warrior to kill Nuo Lan Shan. He however had fled in fear and come straight to the outer region wars.

Many things happened back to back, if even one of them had gotten messed up.

If Luo feng had become the earth's leader later, earth would have been reduced to nothing with countless killed or injured.

If Luo Feng hadn't successfully saved his family, they would have probably died tragically.

"Nuo Lan Shan!" Luo Feng was filled with killing intent. "We haven't met in over 4,000 years, I wonder how strong you've gotten."

"Babata." Luo Feng ordered, "Scan where Nuo Lan Shan is and project it."

"Yes."

A screen appeared immediately in mid air and it displayed a shocking battle scene. On one side was humans with two undyings, around 200 sector lords, close to 2,000 domain lords and close to 20,000 universe levels. The other side was the demon race led by one demon undying. It was a completely scaled undying with four thick hooves, it had a layer of thin armor over its body and two malevolent heads, one of which had gold eyes and another had silver.

This powerful demon undying was fighting against and suppressing the two human undyings.

Simultaneously, the sector lords, domain lords and universe levels of the demon race ranging in the thousands had all sorts of appearances. The smallest was at 10m long while the largest reached 32 km. With thousands of them, their power completely suppressed the human side.

Among the close to 200 sector lords on the human side, there was one human silhouette...Nuo Lan Shan!

"Sector lord level 3?"

Luo Feng gazed down from the control room, however he could only see mist and not the battle scene itself, after which he looked up through the projection and mocked. "They had sent a distress signal straight to him."

Distress signals were sent to all surrounding allies within an area of 10 billion km.

Luo Feng realized his distance from the battle wasn't even one hundred million km. However, as his scanning device was advanced, it had blocked off any other party from scanning him... hence they couldn't detect him. However the human side had the army system which informed them of when any allies were close by.

"Luo Feng, an undying from the battle below is requesting a call." Babata said.

"Accept it." Luo Feng nodded. "Send it to my arm quantum computer."

The screen displayed a white robed man who had an urgent expression, "Ally, please help us, my scanners cannot detect you but the army system has detected your marker. You should be stronger than us, and with us two undyings, we should be able to deal with the demon undying. Please come and help us, we can barely hold on. The weaker universe, domain lord and sector lords

are all crumbling and fleeing in all directions, the sector lords may be able to flee but the universe and domain lord levels have very low chances. We are all humans, please help."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

Pa, he closed to call.

"That Nuo Lan Shan sure is crafty." Luo Feng looked at the situation of the battle. "At sector lord level 3, he naturally won't deal with the sector lord pinnacle warriors himself. Naturally the other sector lords will help him, hmm, looks like his relations with the others are not bad."

"If this goes on, he may escape. And many universe and domain lord levels may die." Luo Feng shook his head.

A black armor swiftly extended through his body, a black helmet covered his head and boots covered his feet. Simultaneously, a peculiar half a meter wide stone board appeared beneath his feet, and an exquisite gold beast god shield about 2m tall appeared in his hand.

"The golden horned beast doesn't require the beast god armament, I'll let the human body use it." Luo Feng thought.

Luo Fu Qi board and beast god armament...

This was the set up he was going to use to battle here.

Rumble!

The cabin door opened and he swiftly flew out.

He rushed down.

******

High in the air above the mountain range, the humans and demons clashed. One could see huge ancient statues within the mountain ranges, these were left behind by the original natives of the Yan Ji continent back then. However, over the trillions of years, the natives were no longer there. Even though the statues had some peculiar energies, most were completely destroyed.

"2nd brother, we cannot hold on much longer." Nuo Lan Shan said urgently. "We are about to fall, get ready to flee."

"5th Brother, you hurry and leave."

"5th brother, you are only sector lord level 3, if you meet any sector lord pinnacle you will definitely die. Many of the universe and domain lord levels have dispersed, hurry and flee, we have to give you all enough time."

"2nd brother, you all..."

Nuo Lan Shan was anxious.

"Go on."

"We won’t die."

Amidst the massacre, Nuo Lan Shan gave off a pained expression but thought within, "This is already the 63rd time fleeing in the outer region wars, one truly meets life or death comrades here. Without them, I wouldn’t have been able to survive till now. It’s a pity, over 1,000 years of relationship may just end like that." As Nuo Lan Shan was preparing to flee...

A powerful energy descended from above.

Howl...

A howl resounded throughout the land and skies.

A huge beautiful bird like silhouette rushed down and shocked both sides.

Chapter 778: Nuo Lan Shan's Shock

The beautiful terrifying huge bird silhouette rushed down, it was a black armored silhouette with a gold shield.

"Luo Fu Qi Board!"

"Luo Fu Qi Board! There's hope!"

The two human undyings were gleeful. The malevolent two headed demon undying however howled.

The Luo Fu Qi Board was a renowned flying weapon, it was naturally formed and made special. From a glance it was almost like a bird, especially with its naturally formed mysterious engraving of a bird. The moment it had fully melded with its owner, triggering it fully would produce the silhouette of a bird, causing one's speed to rise greatly.

The price of the board was only about 1 – 2 million mixed elements. But as it was naturally formed, it was extremely rare and hard to buy. Even very few official level undyings had one.

Having a Luo Fu Qi Board alone was a display of status.

"Shu Fan, we can win." The copper armored undying was burning with flames as he communicated excitedly.

"Haha, we may flip the tables." The seemingly weak man was surrounded with water droplets as he smiled.

Howl...the demon undying was extremely cautious too. Even though it was attacking the two human undyings, it was ready to flee the moment anything bad happened.

However in that instant...

"What a joke." Both undyings stared wide eyed, "Sector lord???"

"How could it be a sector lord!"

Howl...the demon undying was incredibly excited.

Their energy detection was incredibly precise, instantly sensing that the black armored man rushing down was a sector lord. Even though his energy was off the charts, even though he stood on a Luo Fu Qi Board...it couldn't change the fact that this black armored man was still only a sector lord.

"How can it be a sector lord?" The two undyings were about to crumble. They thought their savior had come, yet it was just a sector lord...

******

Luo Feng stood on the board and rushed down. After looking at

the malevolent two headed demon undying, naturally he was very clear about what type of demon this was.

Time Space Nightmare: One of the eighteen royal bloodlines of the demon race. At maturity it would naturally reach domain lord level, one head had a silver eye and the other had a gold. The gold eye could affect space while the silver could affect time, the moment both eyes used its strength simultaneously...it would have a strong control of both space and time, combined with a law domain...it could amplify its strength by many times.

And this beast below should be considered the shame of the Time Space nightmare undyings.

As a royal bloodline proficient in time and space, this particular beast had very low achievements in both time and space. Any stronger beast would easily reach official level, simply relying on its natural talents and yet this one only reached pinnacle general level. It was indeed a shame to the bloodline. Otherwise...a royal bloodline family was actually used to lead an army on the battlefield, and not given a undying underlings.

"Time Space nightmare, even though it's far from the Hui Suo beast's time stop, and far from the golden horned beast's natural ability to strengthen...its population is still much more than both the space beasts." Luo Feng thought within. "The twelve pinnacle bloodlines of the space beasts are much more valuable than the eighteen bloodlines of the royal demon bloodlines. However, similarly, the chances of them becoming undyings are much easier than the space beasts."

Time space talent had different levels.

Space binding was a talent too, but its effect was pitiful.

Time flow change was a talent too, normally it could speed or slow down time, its amplitude was very minimal.

Teleportation was a talent too, its effects were heavenly (There were some life forms that were able to teleport from birth).

Time stop was just as heavenly.

...

"The weaker races all have their heroes too, the strong ones would have their weaker warriors. Time space nightmare...die!" Luo Feng rushed down and instantly triggered the gold shield in his hand. Large amounts of rhombus shaped metal plates flaked off, each with complex engravings as they instantly interweaved with countless gold threads.

A total of 999 flakes shot out. As countless threads weaved through, connecting to the universe laws, it almost instantly formed a huge large beast god projection in mid air. The 999 flakes vanished from sight and the beast god projection became clear, every scale on it visible.

Four thick legs with claws, a long scaled tale, one horn that pierced that skies.

The powerful energy that dominated the universe, even though it seemed weak at this moment, it still made others shudder.

"What's this?"

"This..."

The two human undyings were shocked, even the demon undying stared wide eyed at the image. As for the humans and demon sector lords, they all simply went limp in mid air, falling from the skies and flopping on the ground. All of them were filled with fear, just the pressure alone made them crumble.

"Beast god armament 1st form, Beast god descends." The black armored Luo Feng stood on the Luo Fu Qi board and gazed down at the Time Space Nightmare.

Howl...the beast below howled and rushed into the sky, simultaneously using both malevolent eyes to shoot out beams of light. The powerful law domain was affected by the time space control and its power rose greatly, immediately rushing towards the seemingly small and weak black armored sector lord.

"Hmph."

Luo Feng gazed below.

Rumble!

The surrounding space warped and a huge grassland appeared. The powerful world projection immediately clashed with the law domain.

"Rumble..." The two clashed and the law domain was pushed back, finally closing in until it was only 100km around the beast itself. This made the beast give off a look of disbelief. How could his law domain be pushed back by world projection?

"Beast god descends with Sky tearing claw." Luo Feng thought.

The powerful beast god projection let out a howl as it tore through space. This howl seemed to come from an ancient time itself, and as it flew, it rushed downwards and got incredibly close to the beast, after which it unleashed its malevolent claw...

Tear!

This blurry claw instantly tore through one of the beast's heads that was biting at him, tearing through the thin layer of armor. Red and blue spewed in all directions as its head was torn apart, the claw didn't seem to weaken at all as it followed through and slashed straight through the beast's torso.

Howl...the beast's other head let out an enraged howl as countless fragments of its body became undying energy and began to reform.

Tear!

The terrifying claw of the beast god along with countless gold leaves swiftly spread through tens of thousands of km in area, wrapping around the heavily injured and fleeing time space nightmare. Countless gold leaves madly wrapped around it, and in the blink of an eye, nothing was left of the beast at all, it had fallen.

"Dying under my strongest beast god presence and technique, you should be honored." The black armored Luo Feng waved his hand and the undying star eating plant swiftly shrank and entered his shoulder.

Back then Xi Luo Duo had left four great manuals behind.

Beast god Armament, Beast God howl, Beast god transformation and Beast god run. Of which Luo Feng most frequently used the Beast god armament.

The Beast god armament had six levels, matching the seven forms of the Nan Shen 7 forms' six levels.

Luo Feng had finished the 1st scaled form. After studying more, he also learnt the Beast God Descends. One had to know that when Luo Feng spent 900 years in Primal chaos city, his Beast god presence was already at the level of passing the 16th level of the heavenly bridge. As he focused even more on it for another 300 years, it allowed him to reach the point of the 17th level.

And the Beast god armament was a frequently used weapon by the knights. A good spirit weapon had very strong amplification effects. With the beast god armament, his power naturally soared. It became extremely easy for him to unleash the Sky tearing claw, almost as proficient as when the golden horned beast used it. Its power was close to an emperor level undying.

Close to emperor level!

Spirit energy amplitude was over 3,200!

Sector lord pinnacle spirit energy!

This made it so that when Luo Feng unleashed this move, it would have power akin to an official level undying! After including his world projection, he could easily suppress the Space time nightmare's strong law domain...the moment he hit the body, victory was a given.

******

"Flee."

"Flee." The thousands of demons howled and shouted in all languages, dispersing in all directions. The human sector lords, domain lords and universe levels that were originally losing worked together and swiftly killed as many as they could. The two human undyings naturally didn't lower themselves to go chase

them, smiling as they walked towards Luo Feng.

"Thank you brother." The copper armored undying walked over.

"Thanks for the help." The weak looking undying carefully examined Luo feng, saying, "He is Boye and I'm Shu Fan, we are both generals. We believe that you are a majesty from one of the five leviathans."

The black armored Luo Feng with helmet and boots descended, the Beast god armament in his hand and the Luo Fu Qi board beneath his feet entered his internal world.

Hua!

The black armored moved and his helmet vanished, revealing a short haired youth.

"2nd brother, 3rd brother." On the other side, Nuo Lan Shan gathered excitedly with the two other sector lord pinnacle warriors, "We don't have to separate anymore, it's safe."

"Haha...5th brother, we should thank that powerful warrior then."

"That warrior sure is powerful, he should be sector lord level, yet he easily killed that demon race undying. And the gold leaves... should be an undying plant."

Nuo Lan Shan nodded as he heard, thinking within, "A sector lord easily killing a demon undying, that’s powerful. That’s a true absolute genius, who knows what his background is. If I can get close to him, then Luo Feng wouldn’t be a threat anymore." Nuo Lan Shan’s fear of Luo feng drove him to the outer region wars.

"Look, that warrior is revealing his face."

"Hehe, looks like he’s no ordinary person." The 2nd and 3rd brothers’ eyes gleamed. Many sector lords, domain lords and universe levels all looked over.

Nuo Lan Shan turned too.

The usual high and mighty two undyings seemed humble as they welcomed the black armored man and chatted with him. The warrior revealed his face, even though he had changed his appearance slightly, as this person was the reason behind his coming to the outer region wars for 4,000 over years, how could the hate filled Nuo Lan Shan not recognize this face?

"He, he, he..." Nuo Lan Shan looked at the distant black armored man, his eyes staring wide, almost like they were about to pop out.

Chapter 779: Traitor

"Luo Feng, it’s really Luo Feng!" Nuo Lan Shan’s brain was just crumbling from this.

He knew that over 4,000 years ago that if he stayed in the Black Dragon Mountain empire, with Luo Feng’s improvement speed... the distance between him and Luo Feng would only get closer within the human territories. Afterall, he did get the Huge Axe award for universe level, he had madness in his bones, hence he gritted his teeth and headed into the outer region wars to gamble.

Along the way, he had two very dangerous situations.

In the outer region wars, he risked his life over and over, he quickly broke through to domain lord level when he arrived. However, a domain lord level 1 here was just cannon fodder, he continued to struggle...

Overcoming situations over and over until he finally reached sector lord level!

How many years has it been and what did he fight for?

Because he was afraid of Luo Feng, hence he kept improving himself.

However now...

Luo feng actually appeared before him, and he had the strength to kill a pinnacle undying general.

"How did he get so strong, why is he so strong? Didn't he just join the genius competition over 4,000 years ago, and he was only star level 9 then? It's only been 4,000 years, and now he's a sector lord pinnacle. Even a sector lord pinnacle shouldn't be able to kill a pinnacle undying general!"

"It's over."

"It's over." His mind was in a mess, he felt helpless.

*****

The two undyings of this army Shu Fan and Boye had introduced themselves.

Luo Feng smiled and nodded, "I'm called Yang."

"Yang?" The two remembered this name,

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

Luo Feng naturally had formed many connections with others, those closer to him like Tai Wo, demon lady and comrades in life or death, he would ask them to call him Madman! The main thing was to remain anonymous. Actually, the name Madman...was one

he used even back on earth.

This nickname was commonly seen. Out of ten soldiers, there would probably be one with that name, Luo Feng wasn't afraid of revealing his identity through it.

As for Shu Fan and Boye etc...they were bound to be just passing acquaintances, just a quick name for them to call. He had grown up in one of the eight great cities back in Jiang Nan base Yang Zhou city, hence he chose the name Yang.

"Yang, the commotion from the battle earlier was huge. There will be many other powerful warriors rushing over, we had better leave quickly." Shu Fan said.

"Come with us." Boye said.

Luo Feng nodded, "Alright."

"Haha..." The two undyings immediately laughed. What a joke! To be able to kill a pinnacle general undying at sector lord level, it showed that his law comprehension level was at least an official level pinnacle. For such a being...when he became undying, he would almost definitely become an emperor.

Keeping close to such a being was such an honor.

"Gather." Boye ordered and waved his hand, a huge silver disc ship with about 300m in diameter appeared, hua...the middle

portion opened revealing a huge pathway.

"Gather!"

"Gather!" the other sector lord pinnacle warriors ordered, "Hurry onto the ship and we'll leave immediately."

"Yes."

The incredibly excited universe levels, domain lords, sector lord soldiers flew from all directions, all flying into the ship, the pathway allowed up to a thousand at a time.

"5th brother, what are you thinking about?" The furry face tall and sturdy sector lord dragged Nuo Lan Shan, "Hurry into the ship."

"Ah." Nuo Lan Shan awoke, he couldn't help but look into the distance.

There stood Luo Feng who glanced over, and the two of them made eye contact, causing Nuo Lan Shan to feel as though the beast god pressure had landed on him again, he shuddered.

"Coming." Nuo Lan Shan followed the others into the ship.

...

This 300m diameter disc shape ship’s middle portion had a diameter of 200m and there were three cabins within. These three rooms all had a diameter of 200m each and easily housed close to 20,000 soldiers. Of which Nuo Lan Shan was within the middle cabin.

He sat in the corner and held his head.

"Calm down, I have to stay calm." He howled within, as he couldn’t hold it in. Luo Feng’s appearance today had caused all hopes he had for the past 4,000 years to instantly crumble. He struggled between life and death for over 4,000 years because of that fear. This was specifically for the chance to take revenge on Luo Feng.

"Phew."

"Phew."

"Breathe." Nuo Lan shan took deep breaths, perspiration beading from his forehead as he gradually calmed down.

"Over 4,000 years, he actually reached such a level and his strength is so terrifying. He’s definitely heavily respected within the Virtual Universe Company." Nuo Lan Shan thought. With his position, he naturally didn’t know much about Luo Feng’s position in the company.

"Then!"

"My chances of revenge are zero!" He thought, "Using the other races to take revenge is also not possible. First, the moment they see a human they will kill me immediately. Secondly, they won't even believe me. Third, if I work with the other races, I'll be killed immediately. Fourth, even if they know there's a genius here, there are many human geniuses, why would they want to kill Luo Feng? Lastly, if I leave the army, Luo Feng will take the chance to kill me, I'd have no chance to report at all."

In all.

Using the other races to take revenge had a success rate of under 0.000000001%. This was close to zero, and the cost would be his own life.

"I don't want to sacrifice my life."

"Hm."

"Then I'll have to think of a way to survive." Nuo Lan Shan pondered, suddenly his eyes gleamed "Right, the army has its rules in the outer region wars. Allies cannot kill each other, anybody who does so will be deemed a traitor and will be executed..."

"That means as long as I stay within the army, with countless people around me, Luo feng cannot kill me."

"And if I leave the army and go on my own. He'll probably have

his methods to get an automaton puppet etc to easily kill me. And if a puppet kills me...even if the system sees it, it cannot determine its him."

"Right."

"This is what I will do then."

Nuo Lan Shan nodded, making up his mind within. He would stay with this army under the two undyings! At least if Luo Feng did do anything to kill him here...the army would be able to determine his guilt easily and he would be executed.

"I don't believe he would sacrifice his life to kill me." Nuo Lan Shan smiled.

"5th brother, that mysterious sector lord warrior before sure was powerful, he must have a huge background to have an undying plant and such strength."

"Hehe, right, he sure was powerful." Nuo Lan Shan smiled and nodded.

******

Within the ship's control room.

Boye and Shu Fan, the two undying generals were using a

banquet to welcome Luo Feng.

"Yang, if it weren't for you this time, we two brothers may have fallen. This debt...we will always remember. Come, try, this is the Ye Hua wine exchanged from the camp, even though it's not very expensive, it has a unique flavor." Shu Fan lifted his glass.

Luo Feng did so too and took a sip, the wine dripped down his throat and became a shimmering light, making his entire body comfortable.

"Not bad." Luo feng nodded.

"To meet you in such a time of crises, haha, we are blessed." Boye laughed loudly.

"Since we are all allies, I naturally should help if I can." Luo feng said.

As for helping...

One of the reason was because they were human allies, and most importantly, his target was Nuo Lan Shan. Luo Feng hated him to the bone. Right now, he had entered this team...then dealing with Nuo Lan Shan would be much easier, as every action of Nuo Lan Shan could be easily monitored by him.

"He was terrified earlier, now he seems to have calmed down."

"Haha, looks like he realized that I cannot do anything to him in the army."

"Right, within the team, I am unable to make my move. Attacking allies is a serious offence."

"However..."

"You will still die." Luo Feng naturally joined the team with a guarantee of being able to kill Nuo Lan Shan without any consequences.

"If you leave the army and go alone, I'll have ways to kill you."

"If you stay within the army, the moment the army clashes with other races...amidst the chaos, I'll naturally find a way to kill you." Luo Feng was incredibly relaxed.

Whether Nuo Lan Shan stayed in the army or left in fear, he would still die!

Nuo Lan Shan still thought that the army would be safe, because...he didn't know, a warrior as powerful as Luo feng would be able to find ways to kill him no matter what.

"Shu Fan, Boye." Luo Feng smiled, "I want to ask."

"Speak."

The two undyings spoke simultaneously.

Luo Feng smiled, "I just came to Yan Ji continent, and this continent here...should be one of the larger fragments right."

"The space map says this is continent number Nine." Shu Fan smiled, "Actually there are many other races here on this continent. Over the countless years, they've already had their own names for these fragments, this one fragment is called island."

"Island?" Luo Feng was shocked, a continent larger than the sun by many times was called an island?

"Right, other than the main continent, the other fragments are normally called islands. The one we are over right now is Fog island." Shu Fan smiled. "The main continent has many powerful warriors, many official level undyings, even emperor level undyings. Hence it's extremely dangerous. Those that know they are not strong enough...mostly stay on these islands. This Fog island is a larger island with many other races, however the undyings here are mostly at general level. There are about twelve official level undyings here, maybe a little more. In all, we've confirmed twelve of them and these twelve are considered the top power on Fog island."

Chapter 780: Expedition

"There are at least twelve official level undyings?" Luo Feng put down his wine, "I really haven't fought an official level undying yet since coming to the outer region wars."

"Yang, you have to be cautious, otherwise it's really easy to die." The undying general Shu Fan emphasized, "A pinnacle general compared to an official. Even though it may seem like a small difference. However the difference in ability is terrifying...up to tens of thousands of times different. Just in terms of strength, the two may have very little difference, the only difference however is...the undying body!"

"The moment one attains an undying body, the difficulty to beat him will go up tens of thousands of times."

"Like Boye and I, our strength is very close to an official, however if we self destruct, we can completely destroy an official level undying. However, he would still be able to regain his body without any damage. If our self destruct cannot even harm the enemy, what's the point of battle? If we meet an official, there's only one word...Flee!" The undying general shook his head and sighed. "With an undying body, even if we destroy that body thousands of times, he would be undamaged. Only with an undying body would one truly be eternal, otherwise even an undying is just cannon fodder."

Luo Feng frowned.

Normally there were only two ways to kill an undying with an undying body, one was to destroy his soul, another was to simply use brute force. But, both of these options had huge requirements. Like the mission Luo Feng was assigned to by the Virtual Universe Company, killing an official level undying, they naturally sent a team led by an emperor level undying, and it still took a few rounds of battle before the undying was killed.

"Let's not talk about such matters Yang." The general Boye's voice was thick as he said anxiously, "You just came to Fog island, if you don't have a destination in mind, how about...you follow us brothers first."

"Right right right." Shu Fan said beside, "Sticking to us brothers, you can get used to the battle atmosphere here in Yan Ji continent.

The two of them looked with anticipation at Luo Feng.

"Then I'll be bothering you two." Luo Feng smiled.

******

Sticking to this team would allow him to deal with Nuo Lan Shan, naturally this was his best option. The more important reason was...

His battle plan.

Luo Feng would be here on Yan Ji continent for a very long time.

As to exploring such dangerous places, it was better to acquire some experience first and collect information about the place.

...

After flying in the ship for over a day, they entered a mountain range, the clouds engulfed the area. This was the reason the area was called fog island, as over 1/3rd of the island was covered all year in thick fog.

"We've returned."

"Haha, we've survived."

"And we got quite a bit of points this time, it's all thanks to the sudden appearance of the mysterious sector lord warrior."

Nuo Lan Shan followed the other soldiers through a path and entered the camp within the mountain range, its insides had long been dug clean to fit a large base.

"Since Luo Feng joined the army, it seems like he really wants me dead." Nuo Lan Shan glanced at the three silhouettes walking together in the distance, cursing within, "Just wait, I'll just stay in the army, let's see what you can do to me. If you kill me, that would be a huge crime and you'd have to pay the consequences."

...

"Yang." Shu Fan and Boye sent Luo Feng into a quiet palace, "You can stay here for now, we'll give you detailed information about Fog island when we get back. And whatever we understand about the place, we will send to you. We will rest for about 15 days before heading out on another expedition."

After awhile.

Luo Feng received information via the virtual universe network.

There was very little information about Yan Ji main continent, but there was much available about the Fog island.

"Detailed information about the twelve officials of Fog Island." Luo Feng sat and looked at the information on his arm, every one of their pictures and information was displayed.

"Demon race, nickname Wheel Snake?" Luo Feng looked at his picture and shook his head. "This is one of the eighteen royal bloodlines of the demon race, the Wheel oct eye snake. Looks like a lot of the human undyings have very little understanding on how to deal with the other races."

"Belongs to the bug clan, nickname Boulder? The information sure is lacking, this Boulder, he should be one of the races living far on the borders of the universe. He should belong to the Rock life form Ka Wu race."

"Automaton allies, nicknamed Blade flash?"

"Nickname Black mist?"

"Nickname Nightmare?"

Luo Feng looked at the information of the official level undyings, among which the demon race had three, the automaton race had two, the bug clan had four and humans had three. Of course, large amounts them were of the four pinnacle race's allies. After all the subservient races were far from the pinnacle races, however once the numbers added up...they would be much more than the pinnacle race undyings.

****

In the blink of an eye, fifteen days had passed. The general Shu Fan and Boye led their armies in the ship and flew carefully above Fog island, looking for their target. This time however they were very confident...because Luo Feng was on the ship too.

Luo Feng, Shu Fan and Boye stood in the control room.

"We've discovered our target." Shu Fan pulled up his screen and projected it. It was a blur of large amounts of Scaled beings. The Qiu Shi soldiers, from a glance, there were over 10,000 of them. These little scaled beings are very ferocious, even normal domain lords and sector lords can explode and reform. From the looks of it, their scanning device isn't as advanced as ours. They have two

undyings, and these two are not from the twelve officials list, they should be at general level."

"Should we attack?" Shu Fan looked at Boye and Luo Feng.

"Yes." Boye gritted his teeth.

"Yang?" Shu Fan looked at Luo Feng.

"I came here to get points." Luo Feng smiled, "Let’s do it."

"Alright."

Shu Fan immediately gave the order to the three cabins below, "Listen well, the battle will begin in about four minutes, the targets are the disgusting scaled beings."

...

Nuo Lan Shan looked at the pictures of the scaled beings, looking up, "Just some ugly scaled beings, everybody better get more points later."

"Yes captain."

"Understood."

The domain lords and universe levels all replied excitedly.

"Luo Feng, Luo Feng, I will always stay within the army, let’s see what you can do to me. In awhile, I’ll get more points." Nuo Lan Shan was feeling the itch and he suddenly heard a rumble, the cabin doors had opened and a powerful roar rang in his mind, "Listen to my order, battle."

Hua!

The vast army of close to 20,000 soldiers swiftly flew through the spacious cabin pathways, Nuo Lan Shan was naturally amongst them.

"Rumble..." A distant terrifying ripple rushed over, causing the space around to tear apart, the ripple shocked everybody.

"The battle’s already begun."

Nuo Lan Shan glanced at the distance. In mid air, there were three humans. One of them was completely covered in flames, one in ice cold energy and one more with the aura of a huge bird, simultaneously controlling a terrifying huge beast god projection.

They fought against two undyings. One of them was extremely powerful, and every punch tore through space and another with nine blades.

Howl...The countless ugly scaled beings rushed over at them.

"Kill!" The human soldiers all became over 10,000 beams of lights and fought.

"It’s time to get points!" Nuo Lan Shan’s eyes gleamed with excitement. He, who had acquired the Universe level Huge Axe medal before enjoyed killing within. He flashed as fast as lightning at two Qiu Shi Warriors, they were both domain lord level 9 warriors, they howled and tried to surround Nuo Lan Shan.

"Committing suicide." Nuo Lan Shan released his world projection and suppressed them, after which two delicate cicada wing like flashes of blade lit up!

They flashed in eight directions.

The two Qiu Shi warriors were instantly torn to shreds. It made the distant sector lord level nine Qiu Shi warrior howl and rush over, causing Nuo Lan Shan to retreat.

"Fifth brother, be careful."

"Leave that punk to us."

The relationships forged over countless years had made the sector lord pinnacle warriors naturally come help out.

This scene made Nuo Lan Shan happy within. Even though he

was independent of the army already, he didn’t like exploring alone mainly because the army always had others to help him out. Of course...at sector lord level 3, he normally needed other sector lords to help. It would take very long for him to reach sector lord level 9.

Pu chi.

"Die." He once again killed the surrounding domain lord level 9 enemies, flashing back immediately to join with the other humans to kill others. Within this life or death training, he was like a fish in water, he enjoyed it deep in his bones.

"Thrilling." Nuo Lan Shan killed excitedly.

"Ah, this Luo Feng actually didn’t take out his undying plant." Nuo Lan Shan glanced at the distance, discovering that Luo Feng had fought a few rounds with one of the scaled undyings. Even though the enemy was heavily injured, he hadn’t won completely yet, "If he takes out his undying plant, he would definitely win, without it...would be much harder."

Nuo Lan Shan turned back to continue his massacre, rushing straight at a group of weak soldiers, making the sector lord level 9 Qiu Shi warriors rush over angrily.

At this time...

Rumble!

A powerful flash of a blade tore through thousands of km, directly piercing through the area Nuo Lan Shan was in.

"Ah!" He was instantly pierced through by the slash, his entire body exploding to pieces, before he died, he stared wide eyed, raging within, "Luo Feng!!!" The slash had torn through many of the little Qiu Shi warriors surrounding him, they died tragically.

And in the distant air, Luo Feng who was engaged with the undying with the nine blades noticed this scene in the corner of his eye, snorting coldly before continuing to battle.

"I don’t believe I can’t kill you without the undying plant." Luo Feng roared.

Chapter 781: Ants

"Fifth brother."

"Fifth brother!!!"

"Captain!" The distant universe soldiers who witnessed the scene all shouted in pain and agony. Nuo Lan Shan had been a good comrade over these countless years.

"Bastard."

"Despicable punks, go and die." The pain filled soldiers all attacked even more madly at the Qiu Shi scaled warriors. They only thought that he was killed by a ripple of attack from the undying battle, these ripples normally don't kill sector lord. However even a sector lord pinnacle would die without doubt when hit by one of the blade slashes, much less the Sector lord level 3 Nuo Lan Shan.

"Kill." The human soldiers rushed at the enemies, the enemies did the same back at them.

It was war!

...

Nuo Lan Shan's death was indeed within Luo Feng's calculations.

The Qiu Shi undying fighting Luo Feng was a spirit reader too, he controlled nine blades! While Luo Feng was blocking his attacks and the two fought, the Qi Shi's blade clashed with the Beast God's claws. The blade's attack was knocked sidewards and its slash naturally curved. The Beast god projection simply altered its angle and aimed it at a particular direction Luo Feng had intended on.

The Beast god projection's claw blocked and altered the attack's angle...

Even the harsh and extremely strict army system wouldn't be able to determine Luo Feng as the culprit. He was after all simply blocking an attack.

Just like that...

Nuo Lan Shan was dead! He thought that the army would be extremely safe for him, he didn't know...that there would be loopholes in the system. Hence he died unknown in the battlefield, amongst the countless members that had fallen.

******

"Back then I was forced by Nuo Lan Shan to such extremes, almost like it was the end. I felt like he was such a huge presence back then unable to shake. Now however...after 4,000 years of training, he's strength had risen so much, yet he was still nothing but an ant to me. There was no difficulty in killing him at all, just like stepping on an ant." Luo Feng thought. "Strength, this is

strength."

"The outer region wars, is life or death training."

"This training is most importantly to raise one’s strength and not to head out to kill aimlessly over and over. One has to reflect on each battle over and over to acquire more experience." Luo Feng got a strong sense of anticipation after accomplishing his goal of killing Nuo Lan Shan.

Becoming an absolute warrior!

A true warrior with the ability to protect himself, unshaken by any other powerful warriors.

...

"Go!" Luo Feng stood on the Luo Fu Qi board and looked at the distant Qiu Shi undying.

Howl...a formless howl from an ancient time, a powerful Beast god projection that rushed forward, completely suppressing the surrounding space, pushing down on the poor enemy. It could only use its nine blades to block and defend.

Tear!

Its powerful claws immediately hit the nine blades that were used

to defend, after which, the terrifying energy tore right through its body.

Rumble! Its body was torn apart and knocked away.

The shredded body quickly began to regain its form in space as the enraged Qiu Shi undying looked at the distant Luo Feng. He let out an ear piercing scream in human language, "Human sector lord, I don’t believe I can’t kill you." The nine blades quickly became nine beams of light and pierced at Luo Feng!

"Phew!"

The Beast god’s projection used its scaled tail to sweep away seven beams of light, with two remaining.

"You are after all just a sector lord, your body cannot withstand my attack." The Qiu Shi undying gritted his teeth.

Rumble.

Luo Feng wielded the Beast god Armament shield, casually blocking. With the Beast god armament, it gave him the strength of a low level official undying, plus its material itself easily knocked away the two blades.

"So hard to kill, a pinnacle general undying sure is hard to kill. I’ve already shredded his body seven times, however he manages to regain his form over and over. However, from the looks of it,

he’s lost quite a bit of strength." Luo Feng frowned. "Simply using the Beast god armament without the undying star eating plant... sure is hard."

Rumble!

A howl resounded from another direction, the other scaled undying had fallen.

"Yang, Yang."

The distant Shu Fan and Boye looked over at Luo feng, Shu Fan couldn’t help but tell him mentally, "These scaled beings are energy life forms. They are more adept than flesh and blood life forms in regaining their form! Even those without an undying body, as long as they aren’t too weak, they’d still take tens of times to be destroyed before they truly die. Yang, with the undying plant helping...first destroy him and than let the plant swallow his shredded body. Completely swallowing his shredded body will naturally kill him. This is the quickest method."

"I understand." Luo Feng replied, "I want to use him to train myself, please wait awhile."

The distant Shu Fan and Boye exchanged glances, not daring to say anything, immediately heading to the army to swiftly deal with the little enemies.

"Quickly flee."

"Flee."

Howl...

The Qiu Shi soldiers all shouted in different languages, dispersing in all directions. The human soldiers naturally took the chance to kill as many as they could.

The remaining Qiu Shi Undying immediately revealed a look of shock. "The two human undyings are coming, the moment they join hands with this sector lord, I'd be dead. I have to flee now." He couldn't care less anymore, immediately turning to flee.

"Where are you going?" Luo Feng's gaze was cold.

Rumble!

His world projection swiftly increased its binding strength. With it there, the Qiu Shi undying's flying speed was naturally affected, Luo Feng's however was boosted and he swiftly caught up.

"Human, don't force me." The undying turned and shouted angrily, its screech piercing.

"Self destruct?" Luo Feng smiled coldly.

The huge Single horned lizard in space rushed down and pressed

down, its right and left claws grabbing the Qiu Shi undying. It was just like a piece of tofu, madly torn apart by the Huge Beast god projection over and over...however it simply regained its form everytime. But, each time the body was reformed, it did take up a lot of its undying energy.

It didn’t have an undying body afterall, it would lose a large amount of its undying energy everytime it was torn apart.

And it couldn’t escape!

Attacked over and over.

"Ah." The undying howled and wanted to rush at Luo Feng, wanting to self destruct to take him along with is. However it was once again torn apart by the beast god projection.

It felt nothing but pain and hatred.

He wanted to self destruct and yet it couldn’t even get close!

It was forced into a corner with no other way. Its spirit attacks before had no effect whatsoever and it failed in attacking him with its long distance spirit weapons. Now its self destruct abilities were hindered by the distance too. Being torn apart over and over drove him to the brink of madness.

"Tearing me again, you shall be torn too!!!"

"Rumble!" The undying was being torn apart again when it self destructed.

Rumble...

The explosion instantly caused thousands of km of space around to crumble. The pinnacle general undying's explosion was thousands of times its normal attack...this was an undying's final move. Luo Feng's Beast god projection instantly crumbled under the attack with large amounts of metal flakes dispersing in all directions, after which they all curved and returned to Luo Feng and rejoined the Beast god shield.

"Killing a pinnacle general undying sure is troublesome." Luo Feng shook his head.

Sou! Sou!

The distant Shu Fan and Boye flew over.

"Haha, congratulations Yang." Shu Fan smiled, "To be able to kill a pinnacle general undying alone, this is not easy at all. Even us... we have to combine our strengths to do so."

"You must combine strengths?" Luo Feng looked at them.

"Hm."

Shu Fan nodded, "1v1 with the strengths closely matched, it's extremely hard to kill a pinnacle general. Even if he's torn apart, he can reform his body. Even though it would take up undying energy. However, normal generals can maintain their energy to reform at least ten times. This isn't a problem, especially when he ultimately feels like he cannot hold out any longer with no chance to escape and no allies coming in time, he can choose to self destruct at the last moment...1v1, if he self destructs at close distance, the victor would lose his life too."

"Hence normally we work together."

"With the two of us, the moment we gain the advantage and destroy his body, we can immediately use undying energy to bind the shattered fragments, not letting him swiftly reform, and separating the pieces. As these fragments have powerful undying energy within, they will struggle very hard. It takes two of us with our full strengths to control them and destroy each part individually. These fragments would then be separated into two portions. One man will deal with the fragments and continuously destroy them, making those parts get weaker and weaker, wasting the enemy's undying energy. And under such circumstances, he wouldn't be able to self destruct too...finally when all undying energy has been spent, he would die."

"If it was one person alone, one would first separate the fragments and suppress the fragments himself, unless he was very strong, it would be very hard to do..."

"Unless one attacks from a distance like you Yang, you don't have

to fear the self destruct." Shu Fan smiled.

Luo Feng nodded.

When he killed the undyings before, he used the star eating plant to help him, naturally it was much easier.

"Shu Fan, Boye, I think...it’s time I left." Luo Feng said.

"Leave?" The two generals were shocked.

"Right now?" the two of them really wished for Luo Feng to stay in their team. However, they were very clear...the chances of him staying for long was very very low.

"Haha, you two are my first friends here in Yan Ji continent. We will definitely meet again." Luo Feng smiled, "I have my own plan, hence..."

"We all have our own goals, we won’t force you. Yang, live till retirement." Boye said.

"Live till retirement." Shu Fan said too.

"Same, live till retirement." Luo Feng smiled.

Rumble!

After which he became a beam of light and swiftly vanished into the distance.

Chapter 782: Hundred Years

Luo Feng sat in his ship and flew above Fog Island. He had just forced the Qiu Shi undying to self destruct. It however made Luo Feng realize that he didn't have the power to cleanly kill just one pinnacle general undying, he was much weaker than he thought.

"Train, I have to strengthen myself. I'll first train on fog island and when I'm the strongest here, I'll head to the main continent." Luo Feng decided.

"Babata, that mountain range."

Sou!

Luo Feng kept his ship and sneaked alone into the mountain range. It had a huge cave within that seemed like it hadn't been inhabited for a long time. Some large team had probably used it a long time ago.

"From today on, this will be my base." Luo Feng raised his hand, "Star eating plant, fill up every hole and cave in this mountain except for mine!"

The gold star eating plant immediately landed within the cave and followed his orders, swelling up to a huge size. One had to know that this plant had the ability to grow to the size of a sun. Hence, filling up this entire cave was simply too easy, countless leaves spread open and the entire cave became a sea of leaves.

Heavily layered protection!

The scanning device had a diameter of one billion km. It also had a super scanning area of 10,000 km. Luo Feng's device was afterall one of the top end devices, it could maintain a huge area and specialized area simultaneously, naturally its small area was more advanced.

Other than that, there was also the star eating plant's protection.

"At least while I train, I don't want to be ambushed. The scanning device is after all just a device, there will be errors. But, with the star eating plant...it'll be much safer." Luo Feng immediately set up base, this would be where he would stay for long.

******

His training program thus began. According to the survival experiences he found from the virtual universe network, along with his own experiences, Luo Feng had his own rules in regards his training and survival in the outer region wars.

After every hunt and battle, he would return to reflect for ten days to half a month if short, the longest stretching for three to five months.

...

One had to know that the undyings mostly moved in two's or even three's.

Yet, Luo Feng hunted alone!

Simply using the Beast god armament was very taxing. Hence, he was occasionally surrounded and had to unleash his blade work to battle.

Luo Feng's strength using the Beast god armament was only around low official level. But, the main thing was the basics of a sector lord pinnacle world energy was too weak. And his official level strength wasn't at an undying body level yet. Accurately speaking, it was only slightly stronger than a pinnacle general undying.

Using close combat however, he had the strength of a high level official. As he could use the soldier armor which amplified his strength to 1,000 times sector lord, his foundation was much more powerful. That plus his close to emperor level Beast god presence, his blade work...was naturally at a high level official amount of power.

The moment he used his blade work, the other race warriors would immediately begin to flee. Even if Luo Feng used his undying star eating plant...he would normally only be able to catch and kill one.

...

Time passed, any surviving warrior in the outer region wars had usually been around for thousands to tens of thousands of years. In the blink of an eye, a hundred years had passed since Luo Feng came to Fog island.

A hundred years...

Luo Feng had gone hunting hundreds of times. When he first began, he simply relied on the star eating plant when he couldn’t succeed alone to kill his enemies. He had killed quite a few undyings then. However gradually, his reputation spread and the strong warriors on Fog island shared that information about him. They all knew of a human sector lord with an undying star eating plant.

"Despicable human, actually relying on an undying star eating plant."

"He actually has an undying plant."

"Bastard."

"Even my senior, an official level undying doesn’t have an undying plant. The other eleven officials have never owned a plant before! That plant is simply too hard to deal with. With countless leaves, the moment they wrap about and swallow, there’s no place to flee, it’s worse than dealing with an official level undying."

In the past, the undyings of Fog island would move about in two’s or three’s.

However with the news of the Star eating sector lord spreading, with him even being recognized by the twelve officials of Fog island, they all regarded him as the thirteenth most powerful being.

Hence...

The many undyings of Fog island began to form alliances. They were moving in two teams , with four to five undyings in one team, or even six or seven at a go. That way...even if they met Luo Feng, they had the strength to suppress him. The moment he unleashed the star eating plant or blade work, they could all choose to sacrifice 5% of their undying bodies to self destruct the plant and shake his world projection binding before fleeing!

Hence, Luo Feng’s point accumulation gradually decreased.

He had sighed back then: "The undyings, none of them are stupid. Without an undying plant before, they all moved about in twos or threes. But, now with my appearance here...they’ve immediately become four or five, even six or seven moving together, and when they realize things are going south, they self destruct 5% of their undying energy to escape together, all maintaining close to light speed. I can’t even catch up...it makes it extremely hard for me to kill an undying."

"Luckily...my aim right now is to train myself. The contribution

points are secondary, the more undyings there are...the better it is to train myself."

Every battle.

Was a life or death training experience. The other races would easily lose their lives if they got careless, hence they would give their all, making Luo Feng gain more from each battle.

...

Of course over these hundred years, Luo Feng did meet some danger.

There were three times so far that he had come across extremely dangerous situations.

Of which two times, he was surrounded while chasing an undying! Actually even though it was traps set by those undyings, Luo Feng naturally had discovered them long ago. However, in order to train himself, he still rushed straight in.

Such mad killing, using all his strength to survive made him have extra benefits. Even though the two times were dangerous, his earth body still survived.

The third time however was the most dangerous within these hundred years.

That time...

Luo Feng had locked on to a team that had four undyings. Luo Feng didn't even consider them a challenge and sneaked in... suddenly attacking and destroying the living ship. The battle began instantly! The large amounts of sector lords, domain lords and universe levels fled in all directions.

Luo Feng began a mad battle with the four undyings.

At this time!

One of the fleeing sector lords suddenly had a huge bug clan mother nest appear beside him. A blur of sector lord pinnacle bug soldiers accompanied the nest for a total of 300,000 sector lord pinnacle soldiers. Just one combined attack caused his earth body to have no way to escape. He even gave up on using the undying star eating plant, he didn't want the plant to be killed by the blast.

Back then, he did one thing...

He grabbed the 2m tall 1m wide gold shield to block the attack.

Rumble!

The combined attack of 300,000 sector lord pinnacle bug soldiers hit the Beast god armament shield. This was indeed a weapon used

by knights...the attack naturally didn't even damage the shield but it was instantly knocked far away. The powerful force of the attack however instantly shattered the Soldier armored Luo Feng's body behind it!

The shield had already diffused 99% of the attack!

However with his body three times stronger than a normal sector lord's, he was still instantly shattered by the force. Even his internal core, (formed by world energy, not the main core) was instantly shattered.

His earth body died!

In the instant he died.

The mosha body transformed to the earth body's appearance, the shattered body and soldier armor etc were all kept in his world ring. The Mosha body grabbed the world ring and wielded the shield, as he was knocked back, he used the force of the attack to flee.

Sou! Sou!

He later took the Yun Mo planet ship and swiftly fled.

While he fled, his scanning device helped him realized...that the other race undyings and soldiers etc were underlings of the bug clan queen. She hid herself in one sector lord slave's internal

world, normally staying hidden within.

Even the bug clan queen was shocked that the combined attack of 300,000 sector lord pinnacle bug warriors which had the power to heavily injure an emperor level undying didn’t even kill one human.

"He actually didn’t die, hurry and flee." The queen ordered.

"Flee." Luo Feng did so too.

Even if he could win if he fought on against the queen, the cost wouldn’t be small.

...

Other than that one time with the bug clan queen, other times were ok.

Actually, the undyings would adapt according to the situations in the outer region wars. If it was very dangerous, they would team up. If it was pretty safe, they could explore alone. In all...the level of danger Luo Feng encountered was pretty normal.

One extremely dangerous incident in hundred years, it wouldn’t be easy to survive tens of thousands of years.

...

Within another area of the mountain range where Luo feng had his base.

Three beast head human body men and women sat in alloy chairs, it was obvious these were demon race puppets.

"Bu Ci Ya is dead."

"It’s that star eating sector lord."

"How can our luck be this bad. Over these sixty years, we’ve met him three times, that’s simply unlucky. During these three times... the first two times we managed to survive. The third time however, he got rid of Bu Ci Ya. That star eating sector lord’s improvement is too fast, he was much more powerful than the first two times."

"He’s improving too fast, if we meet him again, I’m afraid..." The three demon undyings went silent, the atmosphere within the palace was very subdued. There were thirteen terrifying beings on Fog island.

Twelve official level undyings and one star eating sector lord!

They had a saying...they’d rather face an official than the star eating sector lord!

And yet they bumped into him three times in sixty years...it was just unlucky.

...

In another portion of this mountain range, there lay Luo Feng's training grounds.

"Haha, the effects of my 1,200 years of study in primal chaos city are growing so much more from the fighting and killing." Luo Feng walked out of his palace and stretched, rubbing the star eating leaf that extended over, smiling, "Demon undyings, your base is only 120 million km away from here, it's always under my observation. I've been extremely benevolent to only attack you three times in sixty years."

Chapter 783: Testing His Blade

"If I make some progress with my bladework, it would be too simple to just go kill the three demon undyings. There'd be no challenge, naturally I wouldn't be able to fully test my blade work." Luo Feng's eyes were excited. Even though his rewards from his 1,200 years of study in primal chaos city were huge, however law comprehension...was simply just theory.

Theory was very important.

Usage was just as important.

And the techniques that were used to attack and defend, like the four absolute manuals of Xi Luo Duo were most suitable for himself. As Luo Feng trained in the Beast god path too, these four manuals suited him well! Hence he had already reached a very high level of using the Beast god armament.

However!

His earth body and gold horned beast were strongest at close combat!

His earth body, because of the soldier armor, was naturally strongest when using blade skills. But, Xi Luo Duo's manuals had no such techniques! As for the golden horned beast's close combat...none of its techniques were made with the concept of the Beast god path too.

Hence Luo Feng had to create his own.

"Back then, the illusionary seven blades that I learnt had long reached the creator's level, however the seven blades themselves have no limit theoretically. They are simply seven techniques, Dutchman's pipe, Pensive, Burial, Nightmare, Regret, End of the world. These seven techniques had seven different pathways, however they could be further studied...

"From my many battles these hundred years."

"The experience I got from killing the other races, the practical experience has allowed me to constantly put the Beast god presence into these seven blades, making them stronger. Over the hundred years...I've finally made some progress with these seven techniques. The new seven absolute blade techniques are much more powerful, even though they still aren't as powerful as Xi Luo Duo's creations."

Luo Feng's new blade techniques were very powerful. However, compared to Xi Luo Duo's absolute manuals...Luo Feng only dared to call them mild progress.

Of course...

This mild progress was only in comparison to Xi Luo Duo. Who was he? He was the greatest being in history of the entire gold horn race, a true absolute power of the universe.

"Star eating plant."

Luo Feng smiled and raised his hand, the undying plant swiftly shrank from all the caves of the fragment into a little plant that entered his shoulder.

"Let’s head out to test my blade!" Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed as he flew out.

...

He took a black disc ship and flew at sub light speed over fog island.

"Luo Feng, there’s a team by that mountain range, there are four undyings."

"Too weak." He stood in the control room and gazed at the vast Fog island. Fog engulfed the entire area, he could barely see the mountain ranges along with the statues that were scarred from the trillions of years of battle.

After awhile...

"Luo Feng, there is a team of six undyings 920 hundred million km away."

"Just six? It’s still not enough. It’s best to get an official level undying, batting with one..." Luo Feng shook his head, "It’s been 100 years since I came to Fog island and yet I’ve never bumped into an official level undying."

Babata’s voice resounded in the control room, "Fog Island is incredibly vast. There are only twelve known officials, how could it be so easy to bump into them?"

After awhile...

"This team is not bad, there are eight undyings."

"Barely enough to test my blade, however let’s look for something stronger." Luo Feng replied, "Babata, continue the search."

After awhile...

"Wow, 990 million km away there are twelve undyings gathered together. Twelve undyings, Luo Feng, isn’t this too much?" Babata was hesitant, "You couldn’t even withstand the fight against eight of them back then, and you’ve never encountered so many before. Even though you’ve improved a lot, this time...let’s look for ten undyings."

"Twelve?" Luo Feng looked at the details on his arm quantum computer.

"Ah?"

Looking at the group of undyings, his eyes gleamed. These twelve undyings were split into three races. The Eternal dragon race, the Ka Wu race and the Starlight race.

The Eternal dragon race was a flesh and blood life form. They were about 6-8m tall, and were bloodthirsty and renowned. Its head was somewhat like an alligator, and it had four thick limbs and a scaled tail along with a black shell on its back.

Ka Wu race: This was a rock life form, which was 15-20m tall. From a glance, it looked like it was completely made of alloy, and it had all sorts of appearances. It could look like humans or demons, however it was mainly a rock life form.

Starlight race: They were an energy life form. It was a peculiar life form that could take all forms. It wasn't affected by soul attacks. It was similar to the Mosha clansman...of course it didn't have its heavenly cloning ability. However the moment it reached undying, the starlight clan became very powerful, and its energy crystal within would meld with its undying body. Because of its natural talent, it's regeneration ability was incredible, even more so than the Qiu Shi race. It would probably take destroying its body hundreds of times to kill a normal undying from the starlight race.

These three were all on the bug clan side.

Amongst these twelve undyings, eight of them were from the

Eternal dragon race, three from the Ka Wu and one from the Starlight.

"My blade... will be tested on them." Luo Feng's eyes burned with spirit.

"Yes!" Babata replied loudly.

Rumble!

The disc ship flew swiftly towards the mountain range.

...

About one hour later, the ship finally reached the mountain range. With Luo Feng's scanning device...it was obvious that the team didn't even detect him getting close to them. The twelve undyings still stayed gathered together, discussing battles, allies, law comprehension and so on.

"Star eating sector lord, hmph." The 16m tall Ka Wu undying raged. "You are overestimating him, he only has such strength because of that undying plant life form. Without it, how many undyings can he kill? Compared to the twelve officials...he's far from them!"

"Long Suo." An eternal race undying said solemnly beside, "We all know his true strength is a lot lower than the officials. However even an official level undying would normally find it extremely

hard to kill a normal undying alone. That Star eating sector lord however can rely on his plant to trap his target. In terms of threat level...the star eating sector lord is higher. But a hundred years ago, when he hadn't even come to fog island, the undyings all moved in pairs and three's Now however, they all move in fives or sixes, why is this? It's all because of that star eating sector lord, will you not admit to that?"

"Hmph."

Long Suo snorted angrily, "His luck is just good. If he meets a true official level undying, against their undying body and strong attacks, he will definitely die."

Suddenly...

Rumble!

The side of the mountain immediately blew open with countless amounts of rubble flying about, almost like the entire sky was crashing down on them. Rubble flooded the palace, making the twelve undyings enraged. They all released their powerful law domains, be it fire, lightning etc...to knock away all the rocks, burning them or freezing them.

Once the dust settled, a silhouette appeared.

He was covered in a black armor from head to toe, and was wielding a six edged shield with a blade on his back. Pa! Pa! Pa! He

slowly walked forward, and his boots smashing the rubble below. As he got closer, his silhouette became visible. He stared coldly at the twelve powerful undyings, and the twelve of them all saw his face clearly.

"Star eating sector lord!"

"Star eating sector lord!"

The twelve undyings all felt pressure, as his reputation was renowned, having spread all over Fog island. Which undying wouldn’t know of the star eating sector lord.

"Star eating sector lord." The most beautiful of the twelve with colorful star like long hair and crystal like skin, a lady 6m tall from the starlight race looked at Luo Feng, "We don’t want to be your enemies, but with the twelve of us combined, we are not afraid of you too, please leave."

"We wish you to leave." One eternal dragon undying said hoarsely.

Luo Feng stepped on the rubble. Looking at the messy palace, his gaze sweeping past the twelve of them as he smiled, "What a joke, wouldn’t soldiers from different camps fight the moment they meet. Yet, you are actually asking me to leave, haha...I’m here to kill you all. If you are afraid, just flee now."

"Bastard."

"Despicable human."

"Would twelve undyings fear you?"

The twelve undyings were all angered. Undyings were all prideful creatures,they may bow before the strong warriors but that didn’t mean they would take humiliation.

"Cut the crap." Luo Feng immediately grabbed his blade from his back.

Hua!

He drew it out of its scabbard.

The blade and the six edged shield were both weapons he ordered in primal chaos city. As his strength grew, the level 5 weapons would break easily in a fight with undyings. Hence, he ordered weapons made from materials used to make emperor level weapons, spending six million points.

"Other race warriors, die." Luo Feng shouted.

"Savage human."

"Star eating sector lord, the twelve of us don’t believe that we can’t kill you."

"Kill."

"Kill."

The twelve undyings were raging. In an instant, six eternal dragon race members simultaneously unleashed their undying energy to use soul attacks. Weng! Six soul attacks instantly passed the soldier armor, its special material had already diffused over 99% of the attack, and the remainder hit his core within.

The inner pearl had a little sleeping Beast god that wrapped about it.

Rumble! The soul attacks hit directly on the Beast god.

Howl...the Beast god opened its eyes and roared. These ripples completely diffusing the attacks.

This was one of the four Xi Luo Duo absolute manuals, soul defense...Beast God Howl!

Chapter 784: Slash!

Back then, Luo Feng's Void pagoda was used purely for defense, and it was considered passive defense. The Beast God Howl had formed a Beast god that defended the soul passively. It also allowed it to release an attack that could disperse all attacks, this was the active side. But it's defensive abilities were shocking. It was obviously a lot more powerful than the void pagoda.

"The cave is collapsing!"

"The undyings are clashing."

The large amount of eternal dragon sector lords, domain lords and universe levels all rushed out as fast as they could from the caves, becoming tens of thousands of lights. It looked almost like a meteor shower in space, after which they all stood in space and gazed millions of km away.

Rumble...

Rumble...

Terrifying energy ripples could be felt even millions of km away.

"Who would dare to attack twelve undyings at the same time?"

"No idea."

"The ones capable of doing so in Fog Island would probably only be from the top 13 tyrants, and even those 13...any one of them against twelve undyings could probably survive, but he'd be disadvantaged too, no one is that stupid."

"Who knows."

"We can just watch, they are really going at it there. If we get hit by the ripples, we'd definitely die."

The tens of thousands of soldiers were like a blur of locusts, floating in space and chatting, but not daring to head over.

...

A million km away.

At Luo Feng's level, one dash of movement alone covered a distance of tens of thousands of km. Hence, for a planet like earth...it wasn't suitable for an undying level battle! The moment they unleashed some strength, the entire planet would be destroyed. Only the universe secret regions or special places in space could be considered a good battle ground.

"Howl!...kill him, kill that arrogant and despicable human." The sturdy Ka Wu undying wielded two large Hammers. He emanated a powerful lightning aura around him with lightning surrounding the area, this was a thunder undying!

"Soul attacks are useless, we'll use our weapons to attack instead." An eternal dragon undying emanated icy cold energy, the surrounding hundreds of km became like an ice god country.

"Suppress his world projection."

"Together."

The twelve undyings all released their law domains simultaneously.

Their simultaneous release of the twelve law domains clashed against Luo Feng's world projection. The vast grassland however pushed back their domains, this completely stunned the twelve undyings. They had long heard of his terrifying world projection, where normal undying law domains would instantly collapse. With the twelve of them working together however, they didn't expect to only be able to withstand the pressure without collapsing but they were still unable to force him back.

"Rumble!" A large lightning hammer, was swung at Luo Feng, almost like an asteroid crashing down.

"Xiu!" A colorful beam of light slashed at Luo Feng.

"Hua!" A huge blade slashed through the space at Luo Feng.

...

Twelve undyings surrounding and attacking him.

"Haha!" Luo Feng's eyes were glowing with spirit. Even though he was the smallest in size, with his world projection pressuring the twelve undyings, his basic movement has long exceeded the creator of the illusionary techniques. His shield was also filled with strength and his blade easily withstood the six combined attacks.

Clang!

Clang!

The surrounding space instantly crumbled. Luo Feng's clash with the twelve undyings left the particles floating around madly. They began to fight amidst the shattered fragments of space, and some of the fragments even had some land and ground within them. However, these were instantly shattered from the ripples of the battle. He did have to admit though that the twelve undyings were working well together, unleashing their attacks in perfect combination against Luo Feng.

"Chi!" Luo Feng defended against eight undying's combined attacks. His blade slashed through the space, as a blurred Beast god image appeared and dispersed again.

The soldier armor however wasn't able to completely diffuse the attack.

Normally, any attack below the strength of 1,000 sector lords would completely be diffused, however the moment it exceeded that, the soldier armor would diffuse most of it. The eight undyings' combined attacks had far exceeded that limit. Even if a small part of the attack got through, it was enough to shake Luo Feng hard enough to cause him to spit out blood.

"Luo Feng, battling twelve undyings is definitely above your limit." Babata said nervously.

"Twelve undyings sure is hard. Haha, 10 years ago, I had to flee against eight undyings, yet now I'm able to match twelve undyings." Luo Feng spit out blood. His gaze however was growing more excited, "However, it's still far from my limits."

"He's injured."

"Hurry and kill him."

"Don't give him the chance to recover."

The twelve undyings roared and all of them rushed at him.

"I've tried the first six moves, let's try the strongest one." Luo Feng became a blur. Shua! Shua! Shua! Three Luo Feng's appeared in space, they were exactly like the real body, moving nimbly about in an arc. This was the result of his many years of study in Primal chaos city.

According to the Linear Universe the primal chaos city left and Beast God Runs from Xi Luo Duo, along with the Strike travel from his inherited memories, his movement technique had made some progress that his earth body could use.

The moment he unleashed this movement, he instantly dodged the attacks of the eight undyings.

"Haha, let’s kill one."

Luo Feng wielded his blood shadow blade and gazed at the huge human shaped Ka Wu undying, that sturdy undying waved his two lightning hammers...

Hua!

A beautifully terrifying flash of a blade that stretched over a 1,000 km flashed, along with it was a huge Beast god projection. The edge of the blade was almost like a howling beast god slashing with its claws! The entire Beast god projection was incredibly clear and visible, melding perfectly as one with the blade!

His strongest move of the seven new blade techniques was Burial! Even though all seven moves had been infused with the Beast god presence, Burial was still his strongest. Afterall he had spent the most time and effort on it.

Chi!

The blade instantly slashed at the huge thunder hammer, it slashed right through the metal and lopped off the Ka Wu undyings' head. Following which, it went down the undying's body down to his waist! Hua...his body was instantly slashed in two and during that instant, the blade began to swallow and vibrate. At the same time, countless blade energies shot out and tore through his insides, causing his body to be shredded from within, becoming countless rocks.

"Die." Luo Feng tossed out a little gold plant that swiftly grew. Countless gold leaves extended out...it was the undying star eating plant that made all of the warriors on Fog island shudder in fear.

"Stop him."

"Forget it."

"Despicable."

The other undyings didn't expect that even under their combined attacks, the star eating sector lord was still able to use his terrifying movement to completely cause a powerful Ka Wu undying to be shredded apart, taking out his undying star eating plant to swallow his body fragments.

"No."

"Stop him." The other eleven undyings all gave it their all, madly

pouring energy into their law domains and using their all to attack the undying plant. With a rumble, the powerful attack caused several gold leaves to break off and the plant began to back off.

The shredded rocks of the Ka Wu undying instantly reformed, it was obvious however he had lost quite a bit of energy.

The Ka Wu race was a rock life form. It used strength to win, and splitting its body was very hard. Similarly, it would lose a large amount of energy everytime it broke apart.

"Bastard." The reformed Ka Wu undying howled with rage.

"Twelve of us combined and he still almost killed Long Suo. This is a disgrace to us, let’s work together. Give your all, I’ll stop him and you all kill him." The starlight race undying communicated. A transparent thread shot out from between her eyes, it instantly grew longer.

It rushed straight at Luo Feng.

"Starlight Life thread!" Luo Feng was shocked from the attack. He had inherited memories and thus understood much about the starlight race.

The starlight men and women were all extremely beautiful. They were born with the ability to form a thread from their life core crystal, and the moment they used this...their core crystal would instantly crumble. Hence this was their final move. The moment

one became undying...their core crystal would dissipate and meld with the body.

When this happened, they wouldn’t die even after using this move. It would still heavily damage them however, requiring thousands to tens of thousands of years to recover.

Chi chi...the transparent thread bent and tried to wrap about Luo Feng.

"Take the chance to kill him."

"It’s our last chance."

"Kill him, he definitely has a lot of treasures." The other eleven undyings raged in madness, even burning some of their undying bodies.

Against the Starlight life thread, Luo Feng’s world projection was unable to force it back. Its speed was extremely fast, already reaching close to him. He shouted, "Star eating plant!"

Rumble!

The star eating plant swelled with countless gold leaves extending out. The starlight life thread was incredibly thin as it followed through the slits of the plant to attack Luo Feng. However, he used the countless gold leaves to try and stop the thread as the other twelve undyings including the starlight

undying rushed to attack the undying plant.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

Large amounts of leaves were destroyed and the undying plant was forced to shrink.

"Blood river energy." Luo Feng triggered his blood river energy and his connection with the universe ripples became even clearer.

"Strike travel!" Luo Feng became a blur as he flashed about, his blood shadow blade lit up again and his blade produced a beast god projection.

"Come on, let’s do it."

Luo Feng used the star eating plant to block the starlight life thread and used his body with the blood river energy triggered to fight the twelve undyings. This intense battle was a great test for his new blade techniques.

Chapter 785: Deserve To Die Even More

When the battle first began, Luo Feng was still testing out the power of each of his new blade techniques. Hence, he never once unleashed his strongest Strike Travel movement. Thus it seemed like he was forced into a corner by the twelve undyings. However, that environment allowed him to maximize the usage of his blade work to fight back.

Once he unleashed his Strike travel, he easily destroyed the Ka Wu undying.

"Blood river energy! Strike travel movement!" Luo Feng didn't wish to drag the battle on any longer!

Shua! Shua! Shua!

His image warped as three incredibly realistic images appeared beside him. It caused the twelve undyings to get shocked as the difficulty of surrounding grew. They began to get knocked away from Luo Feng's attacks and being forced to attack individually.

Chi!

The blood shadow blade pierced forward and a huge cavity appeared in the space. Countless fragments flowed madly as he pierced straight at the beautiful starlight undying's forehead.

"Dutchman's pipe." Luo feng's blade was like lightning.

He flashed forward.

One eternal dragon undying was instantly sliced in half.

...

Dutchman's Pipe! Pensive! Nightmare! Reflection! Burial! Hatred! World's End!

He exchanged between the seven techniques. Even though they were helping each other, combined with his exquisite movement and the help of the blood river energy...he managed to fight back against all twelve of the undyings, and was even able to slash one of them apart while they were still being covered by the rest of them.. They were beginning to fall apart.

It was very obvious...they were losing and were being suppressed.

"Not good, the starlight life thread is broken." The starlight undying communicated urgently. The life thread wasn't supposed to appear for too long in the first place.

"Star eating plant." Luo Feng smiled widely.

The undying plant madly expanded and spread over 100,000 km, countless leaves twitched about like teeth and wrapped around the

undyings. The twelve of them roared and madly attacked the undying plant, making it shrink back once again.

However as they were distracted with attacking the undying plant, the disadvantaged undyings...naturally welcomed their 1st tragedy.

Rumble! Rumble! Two eternal dragon undyings were instantly torn to shreds by Luo Feng, their torn fragments were immediately swallowed by the star eating plant.

His blade flashed past brutally!

As the two eternal dragons were torn apart the scene immediately caused the other undyings to try and stop Luo Feng. They were very clear that if they focused on the plant, they would slowly lose more and more and finally fall. The moment some of them were heavily injured, they wouldn’t even be able to hold back the star eating plant anymore and it would swallow all of them.

"Let’s go."

"Quickly flee, disperse."

The undyings knew that the battle would get worse for them as it dragged on, they barely saved one of the eternal dragon undyings before fleeing immediately.

"Chi chi chi..." The undying plant was already swallowing one

undying.

"Flee?"

Luo Feng glanced as the eleven undyings fled in eleven different directions, he had no choice but to pick one.

"Forget it, I'll chase you." Luo Feng waved at the star eating plant and simultaneously unleashed his Strike travel. Within three flashes, his speed reached sub light speed and rushed at the unlucky undying...the sturdy Ka Ww undying, the 1st one that he actually slashed in half.

"Why me?" The Ka Wu undying Long Suo was angry and worried.

"Stop there."

Luo Feng expanded his world projection, what projection was this? An internal world projection...it was a projection of his internal world outside. Normal sector lords could expand their projection up to about 10,000 km. Luo Feng's projection, at its greatest limit was however...able to reach 90 million km. However if he did so...it would be like broadcasting to everybody my internal world has a diameter of 90 million km.

Hence he would never do so.

After all...the Ka Wu undying he was facing was only a few

hundred thousand km away from him.

"Stop there." Luo Feng unleashed his world projection.

It instantly engulfed the Ka Wu undying Long Suo.

"World projection?" Long Suo was surprised. He felt the powerful force around him. He could still fly but his speed had a definite decrease, the star eating plant swiftly caught up from behind.

Hua...

the undying plant once again bloomed with countless gold leaves covering the entire area, naturally it engulfed Long Suo too. With countless teeth surrounding him, it made him madly flail his thunder hammers about. Rumble! The leaves withstood each attack.

Sou! The gold leaves automatically opened a path and Luo Feng entered, appearing before the tall and sturdy Ka Wu undying.

"Human." Long Suo was shocked and angry, but he knew it was over.

"You cannot kill me, you cannot kill me." The Ka Wu undying let out sounds of worry and pain, causing the surrounding space to shake.

"I cannot kill you?" Luo Feng smiled coldly. "Ah, give me a reason, are you a disciple or relative of some Ka Wu knight? Would I be punished if I killed you? Doesn’t seem right...if you had some background, you couldn’t possibly not have any treasure at all."

"I, I..."

Long Suo howled urgently, "The official level undying, the one you call Boulder, is my senior!"

"Ah, Boulder of the twelve officials, he is your senior?" Luo Feng scoffed. Indeed, there was a renowned Ka Wu official undying named Boulder.

"Very good."

"Very very good."

Luo Feng nodded.

Long Suo’s eyes had some hope. Even though he was incredibly huge and this human before him was but a dot, he was clear that this little dot had enough power to kill him easily.

"Then you deserve to die even more." Luo Feng flashed and his blood shadow blade slashed through space, leaving a huge tear in space.

Howl...

The Beast god projection appeared, its claws seemed to meld perfectly with the blade as it passed Long Suo, causing him to howl in despair. As the blade reached him, he wanted to self destruct but his body was instantly reduced to shreds before it could happen. His self destruct naturally failed as countless gold leaves swiftly swallowed the countless rock fragments.

...

There was an ancient palace in the burning deserts of Fog island, no one knew when it was actually built.

A majestic 12m tall Ka Wu undying was sitting in the throne. He was one of the twelve officials of Fog island, Fen Ya, also known by the human undyings as Boulder. On Fog island, he was one of the strongest. He suddenly received a distress signal from his little brother Long Suo.

"Long Suo!"

This Ka Wu undying stood up abruptly.

However, immediately after he received a message, "It’s the star eating sector lord, avenge me!!!" After which, there was no more signal no matter how he tried to contact him.

"Long Suo is dead." Fen Ya’s eyes were enraged.

"Star eating sector lord, Star eating sector lord."

"Human, I want you dead, I want you dead!!!" He howled, and it resounded throughout the entire palace.

He was furious!

Even though they weren't blood brothers, they both came from the same tribe and only one other Ka Wu clansman from the same generation had become undying with him, that was Long Suo. Hence the two of them naturally explored together and they both received orders from the upper race...reach the distant bug clan territory and enter the outer region wars.

On Fog island.

Fen Ya was invincible, Long suo followed closely behind him. Hence, Fen Ya let Long Suo join up with his other teams.

"Star eating sector lord!" Fen Ya grit his teeth.

Undying star eating plant?

It may strike fear in the generals, however a hundred vine undying star eating plant didn't even bother a true official level undying.

"You should die! You WILL die!" He howled, suddenly his eyes gleamed. "Spirit imprint? That's mine! I gave an item to Long Suo and now that he's dead, would that human actually take it with him? If he dared to...he's really looking to die."

He immediately sensed for his spirit imprint.

Sou!

He rushed into the skies and tore through thousands of km of the desert, after which he swiftly took a ship to head towards where he felt the imprint was.

******

After swallowing the undying, the undying star eating plant shrank and entered Luo Feng's arm.

"Special item?" Luo Feng carried the two world rings, the Ka Wu undying's special item was within one of them.

"Luo Feng, he said that his senior was the official Boulder, and Boulder is on Fog island. It's most likely that Boulder left him a spirit imprint item so that he could come help at any time. This item would very likely be within this bunch of stuff." Babata said.

Luo Feng flipped his hand and kept both world rings.

"Having it is good."

Luo Feng smiled, "This Ka Wu undying's senior is Boulder? I've spent 100 years year on Fog island and have yet to meet an official level undying. Now that I have the chance, I'll use it to draw an official to me...this is a good thing. I really want to see the difference between my earth body and an official's. I also want to see...whether my gold horned beast can kill an official."

"I'll look for a random place."

"And wait for half a month, and at most one month."

"If Boulder doesn't show, I'll return." Luo Feng said.

Sou!

With a flash, he flew tens of millions of km, looking for a cave. He entered and began to reflect on the battle before, the battle had given him much inspiration and honed his new seven blade techniques. Afterall, these seven blade techniques would continue to improve as his comprehension grew.

"Strike Travel is afterall something the golden horned beast uses with its wings. "

"Even though I've learnt it, the human body doesn't do it half as well as the golden horned beast."

"I have to continue to refine it."

"To suit the human body's usage." Luo Feng muttered to himself.

...

Time passed and Luo Feng refined his techniques over and over within the cave. At this time, the official level undying Fen Ya was drawing closer and closer using his ship.

Chapter 786: Battle On the Lake

Within the quiet cave, fog engulfed the area.

Luo Feng sat crossed legged. His consciousness was already connected to the virtual universe and he was studying his blade techniques in his own training grounds.

******

Wielding the blood shadow blade, he stood on a vast land and unleashed his blade work over and over, as countless sector lord pinnacle warriors rushed from the sides, madly trying to kill him.

Dutchman’s pipe! Pensive! Nightmare! Illusion! Burial! Hatred! World’s end!

The blade flashed!

Tearing through space!

The many sector lord warriors were killed and the massacre was ongoing.

"This is not right."

"It doesn’t feel right." Luo Feng waved his hand and roared! "Stop!" the countless sector lords rushing over all stopped. This

was after all a simulation in the virtual universe.

He walked to the stopped sector lords and frowned as he pondered, "When I battled the twelve undyings before, I always felt that my blade work was still lacking. Also it has not reached my current level of law comprehension limit."

With a thought, he brandished the Beast god Armament shield.

"The first form of the armament...Beast god Descends." Luo Feng unleashed it and the 999 metal flakes instantly shot out of the shield, connecting with the virtual universe simulated laws, countless gold threads interweaved between them, forming a huge Beast god projection. It’s pressure was engulfing the area.

"This is a true perfect technique."

Luo Feng looked up at the powerful Beast god projection! Even though it was just the first form...with just 999 metal flakes forming the technique, it was perfect and the Beast god projection had its own pressure!

Perfection!

"When I use my blade work, it naturally melds with the Beast god projection, yet it doesn’t have any of the pressure." Luo Feng shook his head. "Maybe compared to my teacher Hu Yan Bo, the techniques I created are already very powerful. However, compared to Xi Luo Duo, these are still too raw. How can I improve

and breakthrough?"

Luo Feng stood there silently.

Under the gaze of countless sector lords, he looked up at the floating Beast god projection.

"Breakthrough."

"How do I do it?"

"My golden horned beast is proficient in close combat. Can it only rely on that one crude sky tearing claw? Is there no absolute technique like Xi Luo Duo's Beast god armament?" Luo Feng gazed at the projection in the sky, trying to feel it thoroughly. Yet, it always seemed like a fog was clouding his view.

...

Time passed.

He pondered hard on how to refine his techniques and the beast's battle techniques. Actually, the golden horned beast's techniques were connected to his blade techniques, they were all considered close combat techniques! One relied on the beast's body itself and another on the blade, and the blade was considered an extension of one's body.

Naturally the two were linked.

However, everything had to be created by himself. During the past 100 years, he did make some progress with his blade work. However, when battle truly ensued, he always felt...his blade work still wasn't perfect enough, it wasn't capable of unleashing the strongest power of the Beast god presence.

"The moment it's perfected..."

"My blade pressure will exceed the Beast god armament, because I'm creating something that fits myself. As for the beast god armament, it only fit Xi Luo Duo."

****

Luo Feng had occasionally gone hunting over the past 100 years. 99% of the time, he still spent time studying the Beast god path and blade work along with battle techniques. Now...Luo Feng was immersed in this state.

In the blink of an eye, twelve days had passed.

Rumble!

A 600m tall pyramid ship tore through the skies and flew. Within that ship.

"Star eating Sector lord. Star eating Sector lord." The Ka Wu undying Fen Ya who was sitting in the alloy chair was burning with rage. Beside him were polygon shaped hammers, it was clear...that he used the same types of weapons as the fallen Long Suo.

"He hasn’t moved at all."

"The position of the item hasn’t moved at all." He said solemnly. "Does he know of Long Suo’s connection with me? Is he afraid of my revenge, hence he tossed it there when he found the item?"

If Luo Feng truly wanted to flee within the vast Fog Island, how could Fen Ya even begin to search for him?

What’s more, if Luo feng simply moved on to the main Yan Ji continent, Fen Ya would have no way to look for him at all.

"No."

"No, he must be there, he must be." Fen Ya was worried and anxious within. He truly wanted to kill that despicable human and avenge his brother. He was afraid that the human would have tossed the item there and left. Then the chances of revenge would be extremely slim.

The distance shrank.

"He must be there." Fen Ya gazed forward. Even with 100%

simulation he could only see the distant fog.

...

"Luo Feng, we've discovered a dangerous target."

"He's flying alone in an automaton ship and is heading towards us. After scanning his appearance, it seems like he's from the Ka Wu race! Undyings mostly move together on Fog island. But, for him to move alone, plus the fact that you killed the Ka Wu undying before...there's a 90% chance that this target is Boulder of the twelve officials."

Babata reported to Luo Feng.

"Ah?"

Luo Feng, who sat crossed legged enshrouded in fog opened his eyes, "He's finally come?"

"It'll take another hour for him to arrive." Babata said.

"I've waited so long for him to finally come. Since my arrival on Fog island 100 years ago, I've yet to fight with an official level undying." Luo Feng nodded. "I have some questions to solve about my blade work and the golden horned beast's battle techniques. Maybe this will be a good chance to clarify everything."

Sou!

He instantly flew out of the cave and flew along the walls of the mountain, quickly reaching a quiet spot in the mountain range. There was a huge lake here, this lake on the peak had a diameter of tens of thousands of km. It was simply unimaginable on earth, however it was normal here on Fog island.

"Water." Luo Feng sat by the lake, feeling the cold air around him. He extended his hand to pick up some water flowers.

The bone chilling cold instantly reached his entire body and he felt the chill, but of course this was something he could easily withstand.

"So cold."

"But it feels good." He sat there and smiled, playing with the water.

After awhile...

Rumble!

The pyramid swiftly tore through the skies and swiftly stopped in the air above the lake. Its high speed caused shockwaves that blew away the sand and rubble around, however the incredibly heavy and ice cold lake simply rippled.

Hua! A fiery red armored 12m tall Ka Wu undying stepped out of the door, and the pyramid vanishing beside him. He stood in the air above the lake, a formless pressure expanding throughout as the air around his body burned in flames that spread and covered over 10,000 km in area.

"Weng!" Luo Feng sat there playing with the water, expanding his world projection too.

It clashed hard with the fire law domain, as his body was unaffected.

"Grrrrr..." The icy cold water suddenly began to bubble. This lake that was over a hundred times larger than all the seas of earth combined began to boil.

"So boring."

Luo Feng stood up.

Rumble!

He expanded his world projection and pushed back the fire law domain. The powerful projection completely suppressed the fire domain, and it was clear to see that the law domain was about to crumble.

"Hmph!" The official undying Fen Ya standing over the lake snorted angrily. The seemingly normal fire domain suddenly began to change from within, almost like a group of straggling soldiers suddenly gaining order and discipline, causing the entire domain to gain more stability.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The world projection clashed over and over against the fire law domain. Even though Luo Feng was still more powerful, it was unable to completely suppress the enemy.

"Hm?" Luo Feng looked shocked at the fire domain. This was the first time someone was able to withstand his world projection alone.

"According to what teacher said, one can put both space and time laws into their law domains. However, those undyings would at least have to have the comprehension of the Nine universe tablet's fourth picture." Luo Feng frowned. "Law domain, it's a gift of the universe laws itself. Natural law energies, when pressured, they are like straggling soldiers. However the moment space laws are infused within, they become much stronger. Official level undyings...they are indeed much stronger than the normal generals."

"You are the star eating sector lord!"

A thick booming voice spoke with human language.

Luo Feng looked up at him, "You are Boulder?"

"Haha...it's really you." Fen Ya's voice rumbled. "My guess was right, you knew long ago I would be coming."

"Right." Luo Feng nodded.

"You've got guts." Fen Ya said seriously. "You killed my tribe brother and guessed I would be coming, yet you dared to stay with the item I gave him. Should I thank you, or laugh at your stupidity? Hmph...you've made me use effort to come and search for you, I'll make your death thrilling."

"Ah?" Luo Feng flipped his hand and brandished his blood shadow blade as well as the six edged shield.

A shield and a blade.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

Both of their world projection and law domain clashed again. Even though Luo Feng's projection had the advantage, it didn't affect the battle too much.

"I've waited here for twelve days just for you. You sure are slow, I hope you don't disappoint me." A black armor appeared over Luo Feng's entire body. This battle would be the first time he got to truly fight against an official level undying, he couldn't help but itch in anticipation.

"I won’t disappoint you." Fen Ya gazed down at the tiny dot, both hands wielding green hammers, the surrounding areas were burning in glaring flames.

Fog islands’ thirteen tyrants.

Star eating sector lord against Boulder, the two of them clashed.

"Strike travel!" Luo Feng’s eyes suddenly gleamed as he flashed, instantly leaving three winding orbits. It was almost like lightning as his speed reached a terrifying level, a glaring light simultaneously lit up with his blade.

"Go and die!" Fen Ya roared too.

The battle began instantly!

Chapter 787: Peculiar Beast

The burning hammer waved about and broke through the space itself. In front of the official level undying Fen Ya, the space itself was too brittle. Hence, the huge hammer...rushed straight at Luo Feng through the countless space fragments.

A resplendent blade flashed.

As it flashed, a huge tear in space occurred.

"I want to see just how strong an official level undying is." Luo Feng wielded his blood shadow blade and clashed head on with the hammer.

Rumble!

The space fragments warped as the powerful force of the shockwave rippled to tens of thousands of km, dispersing all the boiling water up. It seemed like a giant was moving the lake itself.

"Hahaha..." Fen Ya laughed as he stepped through, every step closing in tens of thousands of km, as he swung another fiery hammer.

Luo feng however was knocked hundreds of thousands km away from the clash earlier. His body had gone numb from the shock, and his internal organs were damaged as he spit out blood, after which he flashed and stood far at the tip of the mountain. He was

gazing down at Fen Ya who was rushing at him.

"What a terrifying force, I could withstand eight generals at the same time without being so fatigued." Luo Feng gazed down at the fiery giant rushing at him. "The inherited memories were right, the Ka Wu body advantage is indeed huge. This Fen Ya's law comprehension is only around a basic official level, but his body is already at a high official level. As for that hammer...I cannot withstand it."

Fen Ya took large strides to come over.

"Human!" Fen Ya's voice pierced through the space. "To be able to survive my attack at sector lord level, I respect you. But, it's a pity that I have to kill you, time to die."

"Idiot." Luo Feng snorted coldly.

Shua!

He unleashed his Strike travel movement. He simply wanted to test his opponent's strength earlier, now that he had a grasp of their strengths, he naturally wouldn't go clash head on again. This Fen Ya was obviously weaker in technique, but his undying body was incredibly strong.

Three blurry silhouettes flashed and Luo Feng appeared suddenly behind Fen Ya.

"Dutchman’s pipe!"

His blade flashed, it was beautiful and terrifying.

"Hmph." Fen Ya used the hammer in his right hand and swung it around. The space around it crumbled, it was almost like a road roller going past a little path.

Shua! Shua! Shua! The three silhouettes flashed and Luo Feng appeared at his other side.

Another flash and he appeared in front of Fen Ya.

Another flash and he was behind him!

Chi!

Amidst his mad movement, the blood shadow blade broke through the defense of the hammer, slashing at Fen Ya’s side. Chi chi chi...the blade seemed to cut at the incredibly solid material, but only cutting about half a meter deep in, which was not even a fifth of his hip. There, the blade got stuck and was unable to go deeper.

"What a solid body."

"His strength alone is ridiculous, his body is also super solid." Luo Feng’s expression changed.

Normally, flesh and blood life forms that were able to unleash the same amount of power would naturally still be weaker in terms of how sturdy their body was compared to the rock life forms. And these flesh and blood life forms normally had scales, muscles and so on for defense, the moment it reached past that, the body was soft and weak. The rock life forms however were completely different.

They were naturally adept at defense.

Much less Fen Ya.

In terms of strength, he was at a high official level, however in terms of body sturdiness, he was at least seven to eight times stronger than that of a high official.

"Haha..." Fen Ya looked at Luo Feng and swung his hammer at Luo feng’s head.

Shua! Luo Feng swiftly retreated!

Clang!

While he retreated he used his blade to defend against the heavy hammer. Luckily he was fast enough, allowing only 30% of the hammer force to go through. Even with just that, Luo Feng felt his blood boil within but didn’t have to spit any blood out.

"Star eating sector lord, you are incredibly fast." Fen Ya took a stride over and continued to attack.

"Speed is an advantage too." Luo Feng snorted coldly.

He flashed again!

In an instant...the entire mountain range was going through a disaster. As the two of them passed by, countless amounts of rubble broke apart and the peak collapsed, the universe space crumbling over and over.

Both of them had completely different styles.

Fen Ya was strong and sturdy, his body was a stone fortress, however his law comprehension was weaker and his nimbleness and flexibility were weaker than Luo Feng's.

Luo Feng relied on the soldier armor to raise his strength to roughly an official's level. However, with his close to emperor level Beast god presence and with his strike travel, he could suppress his enemies. In terms of speed and flexibility...Fen Ya could never catch up to him.

Shua! Shua! Shua!

Luo Feng flashed over and over, appearing at different spots and unleashing his cold blade attacks against Fen Ya.

"Fighting with a strong warrior sure is different." Under the barrage of heavy fiery hammers over and over, Luo Feng's movement and blade work were both pushed to their limits. As the enemy pressured him, he once again unleashed his strongest moves, slowly refining them further during the battle.

As time passed.

Luo Feng was initially forced to block some attacks and take some hits. However as his movement got more and more refined and he grew more accustomed to how to deal with the attacks, he began to use his blade to affect the flow of the hammers themselves while he dodged.

Fen Ya was no longer able to attack him!

"Arghhhhh..." Fen Ya stood on the mountain rage and roared loudly, it was obvious that he was frustrated.

When Luo Feng slashed at him, he didn't even block.

He immediately used his hammer to attack Luo Feng!

"Human, go and die." Fen Ya howled enraged.

He no longer cared about Luo Feng's blade and attacks. His eyes were fixed on Luo Feng alone as he swung his heavy hammer, his

two huge arms were waving about. It almost felt like attacks were coming in from all directions! Luo Feng realized that the situation had worsened...when he attacked before, Fen Ya would do his best to defend with his hammers.

With attack and defense, the pressure on Luo Feng wasn't too huge.

Now however!

Fen Ya had lost it, he no longer cared about the attacks, and he focused solely on offense as he swung the two fiery hammers at Luo Feng.

Attack! All out attack!

Luo Feng felt like the skies were crashing down on him with the two fiery hammers that were at least a few times bigger than him.

Rumble! He accidently got hit.

He was instantly knocked tens of thousands of km away, smashing into the mountain, creating a hole in it. Luo Feng rushed out quickly.

Rumble! Countless hammer images madly poured down as Luo Feng was knocked back again.

Fresh blood spewed out.

Knocked over and over!

Over and over!

Luo Feng was like a tragic suicide scene. For him to attack Fen Ya, he'd have to get close to him and when he got close, he would naturally be attacked by the two fiery hammers. Fen Ya didn't even care about being attacked, he simply just swung his hammers madly.

Unless Luo Feng chose to retreat, he would simply just become a target.

Even with his fast movement, against the lightning fast mad hammers, he'd avoid them seven to eight times but would eventually still get hit once in awhile.

Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi!

"Damn."

Luo Feng's body was numb.

He lay on the mountain peak, spitting out fresh blood.

"I can’t fight anymore. Fen Ya’s body is too sturdy, it’s like a F grade metal. Even if it isn’t at F9 grade, it’s still at least at F3 grade...my blade cannot slash through and he doesn’t even need to care about my attacks. He only needs to hit me." Luo Feng smiled and shook his head. The fiery giant took large stride past the space and appeared before him.

"Human!" Fen Ya roared, he was shocked as he saw Luo feng simply lying there, had he given up?

Howl!

A terrifying howl resounded from the mountain range. The formless pressure spread past the surrounding hundred thousand km. Even the fiery stone giant changed his expression, quickly turning to the side, he saw an incredibly huge silhouette rise gradually from the mountain.

It was over 100km in length, and its body was covered in silver scales, which were filled with beauty.

Silver scales, with four silver strong limbs, along with a silver scaled tail, and an incredibly glaring pair of huge scaled wings, This was a completely silver coloured peculiar beast, which had dark gold eyes and a peculiar silver crown on its head.

The crown, its four limbs, scaled tail and huge scaled wings.

In terms of body.

These together made the golden horned beast look bigger than it was.

The powerful pressure spread throughout, even the official Fen Ya felt fear within.

"What's this? What life form is this? In terms of size, it should be a space beast. The demon race isn't that big." The flaming giant looked at the sudden appearance of the beast and was completely shocked. He saw the very calm human on the mountain peak beside him. "This human has the strength to match an official undying, he's definitely a genius of humanity. This mysterious beast...is this his tamed beast? His soul slave? Or...it's a guardian arranged from his teacher? It's very likely that his teacher is some huge being that arranged a guardian for him. Simply relying on his own power shouldn't be enough to tame such a terrifying being."

The sudden appearance of the silver beast made Fen Ya completely ignore Luo Feng.

Fen Ya felt pressure!

To the point...where he didn't even know what beast this was? Completely silver scaled? Such terrifying pressure? It seemed unlike any of the twelve pinnacle bloodlines of the space beasts.

"Howl..." The beast howled again, it's dark gold eyes were staring at Fen Ya.

It unleashed its killing intent.

Luo Feng stood on the peak beside, gazing at Fen Ya and muttering to himself, "I don’t believe that if I unleash Beast God transformation, Deities of the World, Blood river energy, combined with the General armor and mysterious Sha Wu wings... I don’t believe that this rock giant can take a fully unleashed golden horned beast!"

Chapter 788: Luo Feng's Problem

"Terrifying, this beast is much more powerful than the star eating sector lord." The Ka Wu undying Fen Ya was covered in flames as he stood in space. Wielding the two huge hammers and staring at the mountain like silver beast, his countless years of battle experience made him naturally fear this beast before him.

"Howl..." The silver beast let out a howl, its huge silver wings beginning to flap.

Hu!

As fast as teleportation, it instantly passed over 10,000 km in distance and appeared before Fen Ya, after which it slashed forward, the space was like tofu before it.

"So fast, faster than any opponent I've met before, even faster than the emperor I met before!" Fen Ya was in distress. He was clear that the speed was his weakness, against this huge powerful claw...he could only grit his teeth and defend against it with his hammers!

Rumble!

The space around them crumbled...

The two fire hammers clashed with the claw and the over 10km thick limbs of the beast slashed through as easily as stepping on an

ant. It slashed past the two hammers at the official undying's body, the blade like slashes of the claw went through everything.

The two hammers were knocked far away and Fen Ya was completely torn apart, his powerful body had no resistance against the beast's claws whatsoever.

"Howl..."

Immediately after slashing Fen Ya, the silver beast changed from slashing to slamming, pressing down fast on his broken body!

Weng...

Fen Ya was smashed into little pieces.

The powerful official level undying was reduced to powder from a simple slash and slam from the silver beast. However, the powder instantly regained his human form. He looked on with fear at the beast, "Emperor level, emperor level strength."

"Fog island actually has an emperor."

"This beast is actually an emperor." Fen Ya was afraid now. While exchanging blows he could feel it, emperors were incredibly rare and the chances of bumping into one was simply too low.

Luo Feng stood on the distant mountain peak and frowned, "His

energy didn’t decrease at all, he was already reduced to powder earlier, yet it had no effect on his strength! Undying body is indeed an undying body. Even though the golden horned beast isn’t strong now, it’s still around the level of an emperor level."

The silver beast was the golden horned beast.

It was the beast in its strongest form.

The beast was supposed to have five black horns filled with complex gold engravings about it. However, after melding with the general armor, it could take on any form...Luo Feng purposely made the five horns into a crown like look on its head, and as Beast God transformation had some effect on the beast’s body too, after the fusion of the Sha Wu wings.

Hence, it was hard to tell that it was a golden horned beast.

Unleashing Beast god Transformation!

It’s four limbs grew thicker, and its tail was longer, as it became more like the structure of the beast god.

...

After The golden horned beast’s transformation, blood river energy, nameless manual’s first level, it made it 330 times stronger than a human sector lord.

Using the amplification techniques like Beast god Transformation, Deities of the world and its ability Strengthen.

Deities of the world amplified it seven and a half times.

Beast god transformation's first level was simply two times. However, these two were simply body amplification, they would contradict each other. Just like how Deities of the world could reach thirty six times and beast god transformation could reach sixty four However, the two didn't fully add on to each other, simply reaching eighty times was already not bad.

Hence these two techniques added together currently only had an overall effect of about ten times.

Combined with Strengthen.

This natural ability had no conflict with anything, it completely added on to anything.

Hence,

The beast could reach twenty times the max strength just from these techniques.

It's body itself was 330 times.

With everything combined...

6,600 times the sector lord strength!

Finally, with the general armor's 10,000 times sector lord strength! It's final strength was 16,600 times! It was already in the emperor level. It couldn't be helped, Luo Feng's current law comprehension was weaker, even with the fusion laws...it was just about emperor level.

It's entire strength was that of a low emperor level.

Of course with Fen Ya that was two to three times weaker in body structure and comprehension that was much much weaker, it was easy to defeat him.

****

After he reformed from powder, his world ring and hammers flew to his hand and he looked with fear and rage, "I have to flee, otherwise I'll be killed. This Fog island...actually has an emperor, this is seriously bullying."

Sou!

He turned and fled, keeping his weapons in his world ring. He was clear that with or without them, there was no difference against that beast, it would instead affect his speed.

"Flee?" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed coldly at the peak. "I let you reform earlier, let's see how you do so again."

"Star eating."

Luo Feng tossed.

Sou!

A gold light flew swiftly at Fen Ya, it was the golden star eating plant.

Simultaneously, the terrifying pressure from the golden horned beast rushed down from above, with a flap of the Sha Wu wings and the first level of Strike travel, it easily reached above Fen Ya, making him look on with despair.

"Emperor undying, why have you come here." Fen Ya howled with despair.

Right.

Fen Ya hadn't even realized up till now that this beast was actually a sector lord. Luo Feng had discovered this when he first began to meld the Sha Wu wings...the wings were a true treasure. Even the primal chaos city leader, that level of being recognized it as a treasure, enough to make knights go crazy for.

Back then...

After Luo Feng acquired them, he melded it for the first time with the golden horned beast, he felt that the wings were simply too heavy and tiring to use. As time passed, it was just like the Luo Fu Qi board, it gradually became one with the body of the beast, almost just like another part of its body.

After fully melding, the beast's body naturally gave off an aura. This energy...was from the Sha Wu wings and it released it from the body of the beast. Even though it only released a little of it, it was enough to shock any official level undying.

With the fusion of the wings...

There was no way to sense the beast's true strength.

"True Yan emperor had said that Yan Zhu emperor had a special treasure that even knights craved for. The moment it was activated...it would be extremely powerful." Luo Feng had exclaimed back then. "However, I now have this Sha wu wings, it's enough to make the knights go crazy for. Just the pressure I release from it...is just like the pressure an emperor undying releases."

...

Rumble...

Another slash!

The poor Ka Wu undying fleeing hard was instantly reduced to powder, as they regained its form, the beast slashed once again!

Three continuous slashes!

Fen Ya kept reforming, and even after a total of three times, his strength was unaffected. This was an undying body!

Rumble...the fourth time he became powder.

The gold star eating plant madly grew, its speed was naturally not like the golden horned beast. It only managed to catch up after the fourth time Fen Ya was destroyed, countless gold leaves began to swallow the powder.

Chi chi...the powder dispersed from the leaves and vanished.

The undying plant actually didn’t manage to swallow any of the powder.

"Hu." The countless powders reformed in to Fen ya again!

"What’s he using the undying plant for, looks like this star eating sector lord hasn’t fought with an official before, doesn’t he know... that to kill one, he has to either destroy the soul or forcefully annihilate me?" Fen Ya looked on curiously at the distant Luo

Feng, turning to flee again.

Rumble!

Another slash and slam, he became powder again and reformed.

"This emperor beast is another thing, why does it keep attacking me like that?" Fen Ya was growing more suspicious, "Even though it’s emperor level, it’s barely an emperor. Does it think it can kill me without any consequences at all?"

Fen Ya fled again!

The beast slashed again!

...

Luo Feng frowned on the distant peak, "It’s like what I read before, killing an undying with an undying body sure is hard."

Luo Feng’s status was very high, naturally he had read up on this information before.

With his methods, he was naturally unable to destroy his soul, he could only forcefully annihilate him.

And that was extremely tough!

It relied on absolute strength to pressure the enemy and destroy his undying energy! As long as his undying energy was destroyed... the enemy would die.

There were two ways to forcefully annihilating the enemy.

The first was when the difference in strength was huge, like the primal chaos city leader or knights, they could easily kill an official level undying without any consequences. When the difference was that huge...destroying an undying body was easy.

The second was for when the difference wasn't that huge, a low level emperor killing a high level official...even though one can keep destroying his body, the enemy can keep reforming it. One would have to pay some price to kill the enemy then, that was to burn some of his own undying energy, burning some of one's own soul. And this was an eternal loss!

A low level emperor burning some of his undying energy would have an instant increase in strength, enough to reach a pinnacle emperor...naturally he would be able to kill an official.

Annihilating a high official! Even a low level emperor would have to recover for a hundred to thousand years to get this done.

Of course...

For a high level emperor to kill a high level official, even without

burning undying energy, using normal attacks while burning some undying energy could achieve the same effect, and the recovery would only take a few years.

If it was an emperor pinnacle, then one could easily kill Fen Ya.

...

This was forcefully annihilating!

It relied on a definite gap in strength. If the gap wasn't huge, one would have to rely on burning undying energy.

"Barely an emperor and he wishes to kill me without any consequences?" Fen Ya felt the dilemma too.

"How can I kill him?" Luo Feng frowned. "Destroying his body over and over doesn't harm him at all. And forcefully annihilating relies on burning undying energy...the golden horned beast is a sector lord, it has no undying energy to burn."

"What do I do?" Luo feng was stuck.

Chapter 789: Sha Wu Wings

"With the golden horned beast's strength, it's easy to win the fight against that Ka Wu undying. Killing him however, it's not at the level of burning undying energy. The beast doesn't have undying energy...have I reached a dead end?" Luo Feng pondered on the many options within his mind.

Everything was discarded again as none could work.

"There's only one way!"

"Maybe, just maybe." Luo Feng gritted his teeth, "I'll rely on you Sha Wu wings!"

The beast had already unleashed its strongest sky tearing claw, the next strongest move would be the Sha Wu wings! This was a treasure given to him by the primal chaos city leader himself. It was used to flee, and it did have some battle ability too, the leader had told Luo feng back then.

Of course, it was mainly for fleeing and flying.

It only had minimal attacking abilities.

Luo Feng had experimented with it before and felt that it's strongest points were it's speed and sharp feathers. Slashing with them while flying at high speeds was like cutting with a blade.

...

Howl! The silver beast flapped its wings and once again rushed at the fire giant Fen Ya.

"Can you not be so excessive."

"Why?"

Fen Ya was worried and angry, "This silver beast's instantaneous speed, how can it be so absurd? It's only barely an emperor, it shouldn't be that fast. If it was a bit slower...I'd be able to reach sub light speed and then escape."

Fog island's resistance was pretty huge.

Reaching sub light speed was the limit! One had to go to the special Universe travel spot to reach light speed.

As long as one was an undying, with enough time, they could all reach close to light speed. The moment they reached that speed, even if an emperor level was chasing behind, he wouldn't be able to catch up to a normal undying. As everybody's speed was about the same, no one could actually catch anybody.

Unless one had teleportation!

Hence!

The undying battles relied strongly on instantaneous speeds. If the distance was close without sufficient space in between, it would be easy for one to instantly catch up with another ahead! Afterall, it did take awhile to reach close to light speed.

"Sha Wu wing's three forms."

"I can only trigger the first form currently, and my flight is already at a demonic level, the movement speed is shocking." Luo Feng thought. "Even Yan Zhu with his treasure from his father, the moment he triggers it he can fight against a pinnacle emperor. Even though my Sha Wu wings aren't mainly for attack but used for fleeing...the moment I dodge and flee, unless one has teleportation or time stop, even an emperor level undying wouldn't be able to catch me."

Rumble!

The beast flapped its wings and moved fast as lightning as it left a blur in the air. At this point it already reached beside Fen Ya.

Hua!

The feathers were like blades!

As it flew past, the feathers acted like blades and slashed at Fen Ya, almost like slashing through tofu as his body split in half at the waist.

"Ah..." Fen Ya let out a howl of pain as he was slashed in half. Even when he was reduced to powder before, he had never once let out a cry of pain.

Pain, intense pain!

The formless piercing energy acted like water .. melting the ice, his undying energy seemed incredibly weak against it as it was forcefully melted away. However the effect on his body was very minimal, it only instantly destroyed 2% of his undying energy!

This was destruction from the root!

"Ah!" Fen Ya howled in pain.

"I've succeeded." Luo Feng stood on the distant peak and revealed a look of glee. With his sensing abilities, he could feel his enemy instantly lose 2% of his undying energy. This effect surprised Luo Feng, "Haha! This is indeed a treasure even the primal chaos city leader regards as valuable. It's main use is for fleeing, however it still has some attacking ability, and that little bit is this powerful. And this is but a small portion of its true strength."

The Sha Wu wings were incredibly mysterious.

With the trigger of one's body and energy strength, it could trigger mysterious abilities. Luo Feng called this the space energy, and this was the powerful core of the wings.

This particular energy allowed the golden horned beast to fly at shocking demonic speeds.

The second form of the wings allowed for it to completely throw the space into disarray! (One had to reach the third level of Bones to trigger it)

The third form allowed one to control the space tides! (Required fifth level of Horn to trigger)

This all required the space energy from the wings to trigger. This special energy was incredibly powerful, however Luo Feng could only unleash the first form currently. The space energy was from the core of the wings, but Luo Feng could only trigger a very small portion of it currently.

Yet it could already destroy 2% of his undying body!

"Haha, go and die."

"Ka Wu undying, go and die." Luo Feng was extremely happy.

Rumble!

The beast flapped its wings and he once again used them to slash past Fen Ya’s body.

Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua!

Fen Ya had no ability to even dodge. Even though he reformed over and over, as he reformed, the beast would slash past him again and he would lose another 2% of his undying energy. Even with an undying body, it would only take 50 times for it to be over...if he was a normal undying.

Losing 50% of his undying energy was akin to 50% of one's soul, and his consciousness would instantly crumble.

With an undying body, even after losing 99% of his undying body, he still wouldn't die.

However the final 1% could at most hold his memories, he would become a cannon fodder amongst undyings. Relying on this 1% to regain all his past strength would require trillions of years.

"No."

"No." Fen Ya howled in pain.

"Spare me respected emperor, spare me." Fen Ya communicated mentally to the golden horned beast. Against the beast's terrifying speed...he knew that even if he burned his undying energy to flee, he would still be unable to escape. That mysterious silver beast was simply too fast!

Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua!

In an instant, he was attacked over 10 times.

Fen Ya’s undying body was left with only 50%, he lost half of his soul like that.

"Emperor, don’t force me, don’t force me!!!" He howled.

"Force you? Other race…just die!"

The beast’s speed was terrifying, its silver wings slashing over and over at Fen Ya’s body, destroying countless years of energy accumulated within…the undying body was the core.

"No!"

"No!"

Seeing that he was only left with 30% of his energy, he was panicking. Losing half of his strength was too huge a loss, he howled in rage and finally sunk into despair. As the silver beast once again attacked, he let out a howl within.

"Rumble!!!" He instantly self destructed his entire undying body.

Self destruct!

Fen Ya's final decision! Even if he couldn't kill an emperor, he wanted to heavily damage him, this was his revenge.

Rumble...the space about crumbled along with the mountain range, the beast had wrapped itself in the Sha Wu wings as it was extremely close to the explosion. The wings had the ability to disperse the attacks because of its special material.

Before this, out of the trillions of races in the universe, only the primal chaos city leader knew of the existence of the Sha Wu wings.

Destroying it was hard even for universe masters.

This explosion was but a tickle against the wings. It diffused over 99% of the attack with the final remnants of the force landing on the general armor, as long as it didn't exceed the armor's strength...10,000 times that of a sector lord, it would be completely diffused.

Rumble...the universe space crumbled.

The huge beast wrapped in the silver wings flew back tens of thousands of km, before spreading its wings in glory, it's cold gold eyes looking forward.

...

It took all the goods left behind by Fen Ya.

"I have to leave quickly, that battle drew too much attention, there are already some teams rushing over." Luo Feng frowned and looked in the distance, the beast entered his internal world.

Sou!

With a flash, he used his Strike travel. However, it was obvious that his usage, compared to the golden horned beast...was on a completely different level. One was mainly the difference in body and secondly, the beast had the Sha Wu wings.

******

The death of one of the twelve officials of Fog Island, Boulder, was known to very few.

He didn’t send out a distress signal before dying, as there were no other allies who were stronger than him on Fog island. Who could he ask for help from? As for leaving a warning to others? Who would he warn? With the silver beast reaching emperor level strength, only the twelve officials could actually make a move on it.

As for the other eleven officials, none of them were from the Ka Wu race.

"Since I’m dying, some of you will come join me." Fen Ya didn’t care about the others. If they were the same race, he may have

warned them, but towards the other races…he wasn’t that noble.

…

Luo Feng returned to his base.

The star eating plant grew throughout the caves to protect his palace and Luo Feng sat within happily.

"Haha, Sha Wu wings."

"Teacher gave me a true treasure."

His mood was extremely good. He sat and drank his wine as he pondered, "I finally got a sense of fighting a strong warrior. That Yan Zhu has a treasure that would make other emperors jealous. Yet now, I have one too, and it’s even better than his. Even though , its main usage is for fleeing, however it still has some offensive and defensive abilities."

"Hehe."

"Hm?"

A thought struck like lightning within his mind, he muttered softly, "The golden horned beast’s close combat and the blade work of the human body…" After which his eyes gleamed.

Chapter 790: Creating Techniques on Fog Island

Back when he studied in Primal chaos city for 12,00 years, Luo Feng had pondered about his blade work and the golden horned beast's close combat skills. The Virtual Universe Company had lots of techniques, however those techniques were infused with many other laws. Yet, Luo Feng couldn't find anything related to the Beast god path techniques.

Afterall...

No one in humanity had ever reached Xi Luo Duo's level of accomplishment in the Beast god path. Even the blade techniques of some of the knights were simply in the beginning stages, hence those imperfect techniques would naturally not be sold! Selling those imperfect techniques would be a disgrace to the knights.

And as he couldn't find suitable techniques, with only Xi Luo Duo's techniques that were best suited for the Beast god path, yet it was mainly just for spirit readers.

"After troubling over this for so many years."

"I'm still stuck with this even in the outer region wars, even after spending 100 years trying to refine the seven illusionary blades, and creating seven new blade forms. However his level of refining was too low, at least I gained quite a bit of experience from the process." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed. "And I finally found the right path from this battle!"

To improve, one had to first choose a path.

Luo Feng was blind to this before.

And without any experience from anyone else before.

"I’m so silly." He thought. "Beast god...the beast god itself is an embodiment of the fusion of laws itself, and it’s a fusion of the space and gold laws! With my training, the golden horned beast will gradually naturally infuse the Beast god power and become more like it.

"Whether it’s the claws, horn or tail etc, these are all weapons of the Beast god."

"I’ve had too much balance before."

"I couldn’t find the most suitable technique...I didn’t know whether to study claw techniques or tail techniques or any others.

"Now that I think about it...it’s so silly. The strongest thing about the beast is without doubt the Sha Wu wings." Luo Feng was very excited. "But these wings have little use to the universe masters. Naturally as I get stronger, I should create techniques suited for the Sha Wu wings."

"The Sha Wu wings are strong themselves."

"Combined with suitable techniques, and infused with the Beast god path within, it’ll naturally be the strongest method." Luo Feng smiled.

The human will work on blade techniques etc.

Why?

Because his blade work was naturally stronger than his punches and kicks. If it was weaker, warriors would naturally use their fists. In reality, they all mostly used weapons, only few with special techniques used only their fists.

"Human body will work on blade work and spirit weapon techniques"

"The beast will create a scaled wing attack instead."

...

With a certain path ahead, he just needed to spend the time and focus on his goals.

Luo Feng began to madly study techniques such as Strike travel and Linear universe, which were both ways to use his wings, they could also be used in attack. One had to know that the beast originally had scaled wings Hence, there were many winged attack

techniques in its inherited memories, Luo Feng studied them.

And from the Virtual Universe Company’s treasure trove, he had already exchanged for some wing attack techniques. While it may not be as deep as Strike travel or Linear universe, what he needed was references and experience in creating such techniques. Studying many different types would broaden his perspectives and ideas.

******

Studying many different techniques and melding the Beast god presence in, Luo Feng began to create his own battle techniques.

...

Fog island.

"Silver beast, flee."

"Quickly flee."

"It’s speed is too fast, too fast, it should be emperor level."

"Little..."

The four other race warriors fled, however with a flash from the

scaled wings, it felt like a bright light in the sky had descended on them, it was terrifying. After which they were all torn apart, these pinnacle general undyings had no way to withstand the terrifying Sha Wu attack infused with its space energy, they instantly crumbled and fell.

...

"Everybody disperse and flee."

"It’s the silver beast."

"If just one of us can escape."

The poor other race undyings were once again decimated.

...

As time passed, the news of the silver beast on Fog island spread.

During their discussions, the other race undyings determined that this silver beast was at least at pinnacle official power, or even at emperor level. The moment one met it...that would be a tragedy! At least on Fog island, there was no warrior strong enough to fight against it.

No one knew of where it came from.

They only knew...

It was from the human camp. However, each of the four camps all had large amounts of other races under them, and only very few had special races that were that powerful. This silver beast may have come from a desolate part of the universe.

...

"Bastard."

"Even if this beast isn’t an emperor, he should have pinnacle official level strength. And its speed is terrifying. With such strength...why is he staying on Fog island? It should head out to the main continent! The main continent has large amounts of officials, even few emperors! That should be its battleground."

"Right, it’s excessive! I heard that two of the twelve officials have already fallen."

"Don’t say such things, it’s hard to say whether they fell from the silver beast or they fled to the main continent. Even if they left, they wouldn’t let us know."

"Hm."

"Actually, this silver beast is still ok, killing only once every two years. The most terrifying thing is, anyone who meets it is certain to be killed. Hence, it scared off many of the warriors off Fog

island. Fog island clearly has a lot less warriors nowadays."

Bug clan subservient race undyings were discussing on a ship.

******

The reputation of the silver beast had become a nightmare for Fog island.

It exceeded the thirteen tyrants of Fog island from before.

Back then, how could the twelve officials and one star eating sector lord compare to the silver beast!

When meeting the others...the chances of fleeing was still high. But, after meeting the silver beast, even if the six undyings dispersed and fled, they would be lucky if even three of them managed to get away.

...

In the blink of an eye, over a hundred years had passed since he began studying winged techniques. Luo Feng finally managed to get a basic idea of a Sha Wu wing attack technique. Even though it was crude compared to Xi Luo Duo’s absolute manuals, it far exceeded the new seven blade techniques, and there were still many areas to refine it.

"Creating a technique sure isn’t easy."

"Especially creating a top class technique, like soul imprint and Illusionary seven blades..." Luo Feng shook his head. His perspectives had grown, and his law comprehension far exceeding his teacher Hu Yan Bo. Also, having seen many top tier techniques and including his teacher the primal chaos city leader’s guidance, how could his improvement be slow?

"Hm."

"It’s time to go see my teacher." Luo Feng sent a thread of consciousness into the virtual universe network.

****

According to the primal chaos city leader’s request, he would often go to Thunder island, primal chaos shrine to seek guidance.

Virtual universe thunder island.

Within the highest area of Thunder island, there stood a shrine engulfed in primal chaos energy. As the true disciple of the leader, Luo Feng would naturally be allowed here.

Sou! Luo Feng suddenly appeared before the shrine. This shrine had no staff, and it was completely empty. All it had was the omnipresent primal chaos energy.

He stepped in.

Stopping within the shrine, he said respectfully. "Teacher."

"What's the matter?" A voice resounded from the energy.

"I've made some progress in my techniques created for the Sha Wu Wings, I'm here to seek guidance." Luo Feng said respectfully.

"Unleash them." The voice spoke.

"Yes."

Luo Feng said respectfully.

With a thought, he vanished and a over 100km long golden horned beast appeared. This was the virtual universe where everything was simulated, and according to what his teacher said... his shrine had some of the special effects of the training grounds. Whatever he thought off could appear.

Luo Feng naturally transformed into the beast, its wings were more suitable for the Sha Wu Wings (The wings were naturally simulated in the virtual universe too)!

The highest authority in the Virtual Universe Company was the primal chaos city leader. Hence, when he became the golden

horned beast etc, he didn't have to worry about any privacy issues.

Hua!

The beast waved its wings, this wave had the experience of Strike travel, with just a slice during flight, every attack was deep and powerful. The space would be sliced apart like tofu, natural and light.

The feathers slashed past the air and left behind a very feint trace.

Sou!

The beast landed in the shrine and transformed back to Luo Feng.

"Teacher." Luo Feng said respectfully.

Luo Feng was pretty confident within. He was simply using the most basic usage of the Sha Wu wings over 100 years ago, simply borrowing its speed and special features. Now however, it was completely different. It may seem simple, but it's power was much more than before, Luo Feng was naturally elated.

"Hm." The voice spoke from the energies.

"Your wing attacks are already considered at entry level. It's

obvious that they aren’t perfected yet, if you do, they will be much more powerful. However it’s hard for you to find proper opponents to train them against. From today on, stay frequently in your training grounds, I’ll arrange special opponents for your to match you weak points, allowing you to constantly battle them and train your techniques. In about 1,000 to 2,000 years, you’ll have some progress in your first absolute manual."

"Yes teacher." Luo Feng was incredibly respectful.

Chapter 791: 1,000 Years, Progress

"Go on." The voice spoke.

Luo Feng bowed respectfully and vanished.

"It has only been a few thousand years, but Luo Feng is already able to kill an official. Even though its using the Golden horned beast and the Sha Wu wings, it’s already not bad. If this goes on, he will eventually catch up with his senior Ke Di." The city leader sat crossed legged in his shrine, the energies revolved around him, making him look like a blurry silhouette.

"If..."

"If I had given Ke Di a treasure back then, maybe he would still be alive." The city leader sighed.

Ke Di was afterall one that had passed even the sector lord sky mountain. In terms of law comprehension, he naturally reached the 20th level, he was already close to a knight, and was much stronger than Luo Feng. Of course, he had trained longer than Luo Feng too. Even though he was very powerful and had many trump cards, with many survival methods etc, a treasure like the Sha Wu wings was hard even for a knight to acquire, much less geniuses like Ke Di and Luo Feng.

And only a being like the primal chaos city leader, a true absolute warrior of the universe could produce a treasure like that.

******

Virtual universe primal region, Luo Feng’s training grounds. Originally, every primal region’s training grounds were the same size, however with the city leader making the arrangements, Luo Feng’s place became as big as the expensive slaughterhouse, the virtual space within vast and endless.

Within the vast space.

Luo Feng stood there and transformed into the over 100km long silver beast (Golden horned beast).

"Having the primal chaos city leader as your teacher sure is good. Even my personal training grounds has become as large as the slaughter house, it sure is luxurious." His virtual assistant Babata shouted happily. "And he even arranges for special opponents to work on your techniques and weaknesses."

"Even your teacher True Yan doesn’t have such vision and arrangements." Babata said excitedly.

Luo feng nodded.

Right.

Even though he created these techniques, he wasn’t sure on what

their weaknesses were, it was hard to create opponents who were good enough. However, the ones arranged by the city leader were different. The city leader was one of the most pinnacle beings of the universe, looking at Luo Feng's techniques was like looking at little children playing, he could easily see through everything.

Weng!...A blurry silhouette suddenly appeared and formed.

He was a 10m tall body made completely of rocks. It had flames burning between the rocks, and its eyes were burning with purple flames. This god had a powerful energy that emanated throughout, and he wielded a 30km long blood colored pitchfork.

Of course in terms of size.

He was like an infant compared to the golden horned beast.

Howl...The beast howled too.

The first battle began!

...

In the following weeks.

Every opponent the Golden horned beast faced was incredibly terrifying, almost all of them were proficient against his weaknesses. According to the training plan set by the city leader...

he had to defeat each one before another would appear.

"In the virtual universe, the basic structure of the beast is fixed. To get stronger, you can only rely on your law comprehension and powerful techniques."

"The opponents that I have set for you."

"Defeat one and another will appear."

"If you can defeat 500, it means the technique you created is already top class."

"If you can defeat 1,000, it means it has reached a pinnacle level. This is similar to the level of Xi Luo Duo's absolute manuals. Of course to be specific, you'd have to defeat 1,200 opponents to reach his level of techniques."

"Also, if you can defeat 2,000 opponents, it means your technique has reached the extreme level, the level of the techniques I create."

"Work hard my student."

This was what the city leader told him.

These words made Luo Feng's ambition grow, and he was also able to feel just how terrifying his teacher was. Xi Luo Duo's absolute manuals were at the pinnacle level, and his teacher

however was considered an extreme level.

...

Difficult!

Beating each opponent was extremely tough, each battle would make him reflect and refine his techniques more.

The shortest he took with one opponent was about ten days to half a month.

The long ones took about 10 years and he still wouldn't even be able to defeat him!

The hardest of the first 500 was the Hui Suo space beast. This was an undying beast with the natural ability to stop time. It made Luo Feng lose many times. After a few hundred battles with it, taking a total of 18 years, it was the longest he took against an opponent.

...

After spending 200 years, the golden horned beast defeated 500 opponents. Regardless, Luo Feng wasn't satisfied at all.

He continued to fight and study!

It got harder and harder, and the time it took to defeat each opponent grew longer. However, he would constantly study the three ancient pictures from before, the battle scene of the Beast god. This was much more profound than Xi Luo Duo's absolute manuals, it also gave him a much more discerning feeling as he looked at them.

A total of 1,000 years!

He finally defeated the next 500 opponents.

Howl...

On a desolate planet, there were countless green threads flashing in the surrounding ten thousand km, it wrapped the entire planet.

The Golden horned beast waved its wings and left behind a terrifying silver blur of light, not long after, countless green threads were instantly destroyed. Rumble!...The planet was torn apart too, as it was slashed like tofu by the silver wings of the beast.

The 1,000th opponent was the rare life form Green thread Bug, and this opponent had stalled Luo Feng for 102 years. But finally he was able to defeat it.

This bug could produce trillions of green threads, but it was rooted to the planet, it could control life puppets. This particular one the beast fought had no life puppets and could only use its own

body to fight. Battle after battle, the beast kept losing and being killed.

After a hundred years, it finally won once.

Howl...

The beast raised its head and howled.

After which it became a human silhouette.

"Hahahahahaha...I actually created a pinnacle technique. Even though it’s only the first form, it’s too powerful!" Luo Feng was very excited. The Beast god armament had a total of six forms. the first was the Beast god Descends but it was a form from Xi Luo Duo’s absolute manual.

This was very normal.

According to Luo Feng’s plan, before becoming a knight, he would probably only create two to three forms.

"Luo Feng, I have to worship you." Babata mocked him.

"Hehe." Luo Feng smiled, as he was feeling happy within.

"How could he not?

Xi Luo Duo was an absolute being, and the manuals he created were terrifying. Even though he had only created the first form, at least this first form was on the level of pinnacle manuals too. What's more, Luo Feng's law comprehension wasn't exactly very high. This first form was already good for him to use, like the Beast God's second form, he had no way to use it at all. A technique that he cant use was useless.

"Hm, I've succeeded, it's time to visit teacher." Luo Feng thought.

With a flash, he vanished.

...

In the highest regions of thunder island, the shrine lay amidst the chaos energies. There were no staff or anybody around, and only endless chaos energies could be seen and felt.

Luo Feng suddenly appeared and entered the shrine.

"Teacher." Luo Feng bowed with gratitude and respect. A blurry image walked out from the depths of the shrine, and he was dressed in a long gold robe, with green scales on his head. His face was similar to an earth human, and his expression was amiable. Only his eyes seemed profound like an endless ocean or vast space.

It was completely different from the body in primal chaos city.

His gaze however was the same.

"Teacher." Luo Feng bowed respectfully. When he came to the shrine before, he never actually got to see his body.

"You've actually created a pinnacle technique. Even though it's only the first form, its enough for you to use...and its what you created yourself. There are many pinnacle techniques in the universe, but the one you create is most suitable for yourself. Even if you study other extreme level techniques to the highest level, if they don't suit you, their power will never be as strong as your own..." the city leader's eyes were satisfied. "Not bad, not bad."

Luo Feng listened obediently.

Extreme level technique?

Firstly, they were incredibly hard to study, and every one of their creators were universe masters. Even if they didn't suit him... studying them would still be better than normal top class techniques. However, Luo Feng had created a pinnacle level technique, just one level below the extreme level.

And because he created it himself.

It was most suitable for him, and its power naturally huge!

"Do you want to continue on? Attempting the 1001st opponent and moving on?" The city leader joked as he asked.

"I naturally want to continue." Luo Feng replied respectfully.

A soldier that didn’t wish to become general was not a good soldier.

A warrior that didn’t wish to become a universe master wasn’t fit to be one. Luo Feng naturally wanted to attain as much power as he could, hoping for his own technique to reach the extreme level. Even though he knew that the path was tough and the success rate was incredibly low, he would still attempt it!

"Very good." The city leader nodded satisfied. "Does your technique have a name yet?"

"The first form is set, But I still don’t have a name for the entire manual." Luo Feng thought.

"What name?" the city leader asked curiously.

"The first form is called Milky Way Across the Sky." Luo Feng said respectfully.

This technique...

Was a way to use the scaled wings and use it as blades. Like flying and winged blades, the two could interchange easily.

This name came naturally to him when he created it.

"Think of one for the entire set." The city leader smiled. "Even though it’s only the first form, it’s still one of a pinnacle manual, it has to have a name."

Chapter 792: Home, Moon

"Name..." Luo Feng pondered.

The great being Xi Luo Duo's manuals were at the pinnacle level too, such manuals definitely had to be named with careful consideration.

"What shall I call it?"

"This is a scaled wing attack technique that can be used as a blade technique. Wing Blade? Void Blade? Wing Blade six forms? Wing blade seven forms? The main thing is using the Sha Wu wings to fight, hence...Sha Wu manual? But this can also be used with a blade to battle, using the blood shadow blade. Maybe, blood shadow manual then?" Luo Feng thought of many names.

Vetoing each one.

He felt they were lacking.

"What does it lack?" Luo Feng kept thinking.

Looking at Luo Feng ponder, the primal chaos city leader watched silently. A pinnacle manual was the proof of an absolute warrior, even if he were to fall...his manual would be passed on. Hence, every warrior would carefully consider the name, this was also a proof of longevity.

Luo Feng’s eyes suddenly gleamed.

"It lacks a certain strength."

"The strength of the spirit." The thoughts continued in his mind. "When I think of my manual, I get a boundless sense of force and emotion. When I think of it, it fortifies my warrior’s heart, and I understand my own resolve."

"What my resolve is..."

The many scenes appeared in his mind.

...

"I want to stop my parents from suffering, letting them lead a good life." Back during the base era, Luo Feng carried his shield and blade, exploring the wilderness and beginning his warrior’s path.

...

"Dragon egg! Armor!" In wilderness sector 003, a monster leader was fighting with two wargods, Luo Feng rushed in and took away its egg and armor from its nest...

...

"A cornered rabbit will bite back, you really think I won't kill you!" His flying blade lopped of the powerful head. Luo Feng's eyes were filled with madness as he fled madly, at that time, Luo Feng was like a demon.

...

"100 billion?" When offered the huge bounty, he was filled with fear about his teammates divulging the information.

...

"28 billion?" The first time his brother Luo Hua saw the number he was stunned.

"Luo Hua, I told you before, I will let you stand confidently before that lady Xiao Nan, and before her parents. I told you before." Luo Feng promised before his brother.

...

The honor of becoming an investigator of the dojo of limits.

...

The appearance of the Golden horned beast and the apocalypse of earth, the many warriors of earth risking it all to fight the Golden horned beast.

...

Just leaving Earth into the universe, he was very careful and yet decisive, visiting the world within a world and fighting with his life.

...

...

...

Every step of the way, he unleashed his talents, risking it all in missions, and all these came from his heart of resolve! To protect his loved ones! Protect his home!

"Home? Family?" Luo Feng instantly came up with the name... Moon!

Looking at the moon, he would reminisce and miss his family.

Luo Feng had been studying many ancient chinese texts, hence the first thing he thought of was Moon. Countless poems from ancient times spoke of the moon while dreaming of their home, standing alone under the moon and remembering their family.

"Moon!"

"One law alone is simple, but with many others, they form a policy." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed. "I've only created the first form now, there will eventually be the second and third...together they will form a policy."

"My new manual shall be called Moon Policy!"

Luo Feng made the decision.

Moon Policy represented his resolve, the policy also represented his ambition, and his spirit to never give up, but to get stronger.

****

"Done?" The city leader looked at Luo Feng's excited gaze and smiled.

"Yes." Luo Feng replied respectfully.

"Tell me?" The city leader asked.

"It shall be called Moon Policy." Luo Feng answered.

"Moon policy..." The city leader was curious. There wasn't any manual in the universe that used the word policy, most were xx manual, or soul imprint, or linear universe, Strike travel, Nan Shen seven forms etc.

He had never seen a manual called xx policy.

What’s more, the meaning behind Moon, the city leader didn’t fully understand. Even so, he didn’t bother to ask more.

"Moon policy...moon policy...let’s hope this name will cause fear and envy amongst the trillions of races." The city leader smiled.

"I will work hard." Luo Feng said respectfully.

"Hm." The city leader nodded.

"Teacher, I want to ask, what are the levels of a technique?" Luo Feng couldn’t help but ask. He only knew that the top three which were top class, pinnacle and extreme.

The city leader said, "Easy distinction: Low level, normal, top class, pinnacle and extreme."

"The techniques normal sector lords and some normal undyings usually create are normally Low level."

"Like the inheritance you got from Hu Yan Bo, his soul imprint has some special features. It already surpassed the low level category, it should be considered normal! Like the new seven blades you’ve been studying, even though it surpasses the original seven illusionary blades, it’s still within the normal category,

many official level undyings and some sector lord geniuses have normal level techniques too."

"Above that!"

"Is the top class. Usually sector lord absolute geniuses, and emperor level undyings will create such level of technique!"

"Above that is pinnacle."

"Like your other teacher True Yan, who is able to survive even before a knight, he's as powerful as a normal knight. A being like that, or even like your senior Ke Di, who was extremely powerful during sector lord level, they would normally create pinnacle level techniques."

"The knights all mostly create pinnacle techniques. Of course it's just like what I told you, the opponents you face, from the 1,000th to 1,999th, they are all using pinnacle techniques. Hence, even within the pinnacle techniques, there are still huge differences. Even though Xi Luo Duo was strong, he was still only from a normal race like the gold horn race. They don't have the background of humanity, hence the techniques he created cannot compare to ours. This is why, his techniques will only be about the level of the 1200th opponent you will face."

"As for the extreme level!"

"The extreme level...is too far away from you for now." The city

leader smiled, "When you can deal with the 2,000th opponent, then we'll talk."

Luo Feng was shocked within, immediately replying, "Yes teacher."

"Actually, you've already done not bad this time." The city leader said. "With my full support in altering your opponents according to your improvement, while dealing with your weaknesses everytime, under such circumstances, your efficiency in studying has risen hundreds to thousands of times. I still thought that with my help, I'd be able to help you create a top level technique in 2,000 years, but you exceeded my expectations. Creating a pinnacle technique in 1,200 years, your comprehension is very high. At least in the Beast god path, it's extremely high."

Luo Feng felt regretful within.

The creation of a technique was very hard, to have someone specially arrange such opponents for him...even the knights would find hard to do. With such help, how could he not improve fast?

1,200 years, it was akin to his own self study of hundreds of thousands of years!

"How could teacher even know that even though my comprehension of the Beast god path is high, it's not as high as you think." He pondered. "I have the Beast god statue to help me, I'm able to study it personally and understand it, feeling its aura."

One who stays near vermillion is stained red, studying the statue daily made his improvement naturally fast.

...

"Go on." The city leader turned and walked into the energies. "Continue to fight against the warriors in the outer region wars. The life or death training will help you perfect your techniques and help you improve faster."

"Yes."

Luo Feng bowed respectfully and vanished.

******

In the seventh battlefield, Fog Island was shrouded in mist as a living ship flew.

"1,200 years, these 1,200 years, the silver beast has vanished. No one on fog island has seen it since." Four demon undyings in their demon puppets sat separately, as the atmosphere was relaxed.

"It might have gone to the main continent. There are many strong warriors there, many officials and even some emperors. Those emperors have all sorts of techniques, anyone able to become emperor must have huge fortunes, and they are able to buy large amounts of automaton weapons or terrifying items. They aren’t easy to deal with, the silver beast may even be killed by

some emperor there."

"Hm."

"With the disappearance of the beast, Fog island now has many more officials than before. Now there are 18 tyrants, and they are all extremely arrogant."

"Especially the star eating sector lord amongst them, when the silver beast dominated the Fog island, he remained hidden. Now that it's gone, he sure is arrogant. However, to be accurate...he is extremely strong. I heard that even against an official undying, he's able to keep up."

"Hm, his strength improvement is huge."

...

Eight hundred million km away from this living ship, a black disc ship was swiftly leaving Fog island.

Within that ship.

A black armored Luo Feng stood and looked at the undyings chatting eight hundred million km away, he said softly, "The silver beast vanished? It simply can't find any opponent here on Fog island. The main continent is supposed to have a lot more powerful warriors, with many official levels about. One would easily bump into officials everywhere and occasionally the

emperors!"

"I have to be careful."

"Officials are already hard to deal with and emperors have even more wealth than I do, and there will be other race assassins about...they may come up at any time." Luo Feng thought, "On the main continent, I definitely cannot reveal the connection between the star eating sector lord and the silver beast. If the other races don't know my trump cards, my chances of survival would be much higher."

"Battle? Danger?"

"Bring it."

Luo Feng gazed into the distance at the incredibly vast main continent.

That was the Yan Ji main continent, which was tens of thousands of times bigger than Fog island, and many strong warriors were there.

...

The black disc ship continued to head towards the main continent.

Chapter 793: Yan Ji Main Continent

The Main continent had a largest diameter of 1.8 light years. Its surrounding thousands of islands together didn't even add up to a tenth of the main continent.

The main continent had a black disc ship flying at sub light speed above it's desert.

"Luo Feng, 960 million km away there's a team with three undyings and an army of over 10,000. According to the army's conversation, there should be one official undying amongst the three, and he's pretty strong."

After awhile...

"Luo Feng, 980 million km away there's a team stationed in the desert. There are two undyings and twenty three sector lords. According to what they are saying, they should have just finished a battle and lost quite a bit of their strength, their team has just one official."

After awhile...

"...the leader of the team is an official."

"...the leader of the team is an official."

...

...

Luo Feng sat in the sofa of the control room, casually sipping his wine, listening to the reports of Babata.

"Alright Babata, you don’t have to tell me everything in detail." Luo Feng put down his glass. "You don’t even have to scan, I’ll be able to guess...that every team almost definitely has an official!"

"Indeed the master of I, Babata, you are wise." Babata mocked.

When Luo Feng reached domain lord level, according to the living AI’s most basic system, it would automatically regard Luo Feng as its master. However as it was already a living AI...with its own emotions, it still naturally resonated more with its old master Hu Yan Bo. It normally called Luo Feng by name, hardly ever calling him master.

The name was just his way of calling him.

As a living AI, Babata naturally respected Luo Feng as its master.

This was the special quality of a living AI. Like the automaton race, a pinnacle race of the universe, every one of them was a living AI. They had strict limitations about authority within their bodies, and they would never have an incident where the lower ranking warriors would disrespect the higher rankings! It could be

said that they were the most united race of the universe.

"Wise my ass."

"I've been in the Yan Ji main continent for thirty six days, discovering over 800 teams. Whether its other races or human teams, according to what I've seen, there's never been a team without an official." Luo Feng shook his head, "It's obvious that every team here has an official!"

"Strange."

"According to the information I gathered, among the undyings, the generals should take up 2/3rds of the undyings, the officials 1/3rd, and there should be very few emperors."

"With the percentage of officials that high, out of every team of three to five undyings, there would most definitely be one within. A team without an official cannot survive on the main continent." Luo Feng smiled. It was just like when the star eating sector lord appeared on Fog island, it forced the undyings into group in five or six.

One theory was.

The high percentage of officials meant that more teams would have officials, forcing the teams without one to form alliances with another that had at least one official! That way, their chances of survival were much higher. Otherwise, if they were attacked by a

team with an official, they would be massacred.

Official!

They had undying bodies, and it was very rare that officials were killed, unless a particular enemy official was very proficient in soul attacks.

...

"Looks like there are very few emperors. After flying here for thirty six days, I haven't even seen an emperor team." Luo Feng shook his head.

"That is very normal. It takes about two years to fly past the entire continent, and that is flying in a straight line. If we want to search the entire continent, considering that the emperors don't move at all, even searching for 10,000 years wouldn't be enough. You've only flown for thirty six days...do you think it would be that easy to find an emperor."

"Even if you bump into one, his scanning device may be even more advanced than yours. It may completely block off yours, and we wouldn't even be able to discover him!"

Luo Feng shook his head.

"Babata." Luo Feng ordered.

"Activate all abilities of the second scanning device, and maintain number one’s normal state and close off all of its jamming abilities, only maintain it’s protection status." Luo Feng ordered.

"Understood."

Babata immediately did so.

The first device was the one he spent a huge fortune on in primal chaos city to exchange for, this was definitely something an emperor would use.

The second one was the one he got when used the Golden horned beast to kill the official level undying Fen Ya. This one would cost about a few hundred thousand mixed elements too, it was not bad.

Right now, he closed off all jamming systems of the first device.

Then...

As long as the enemy teams had devices better than his second device, they would be able to find Luo Feng. It was hard to find any device better than his first device, however, it was easy to find people with those better than his second.

"Luo Feng, you sure are crafty."

"Not crafty, just bored. I have to catch some fish, luring them to eat my bait."

******

310 million km away, there was a completely black living ship flying.

Within its control room.

"Despicable human, actually having an undying plant, if not for it, I'd long kill them." A scaled wolf head man roared. "The humans are simply too wealthy, even an official human has an undying plant."

"Humans are wealthy." Another undying with large compound eyes and butterfly wings said beside him.

If it was Luo Feng, he could instantly tell.

This was...the Wei Yi race, a powerful race that wasn't subservient to the demons.

Actually there were many other powerful races in the outer region wars that weren't subservient to the four pinnacle races. Some of them sent their members after discussion with the pinnacle races just for experience and training.

Even to the point!

That there were other pinnacle races besides the four.

After all...

Demons, automaton, humans, and bugs, these were but four of the six pinnacle races of the universe. As their territories were close, they often clashed and fought. There were two other pinnacle races in the universe...as they were much further away, naturally they wouldn't get too involved in the big wars.

Otherwise, just the cost of transportation alone would be shocking. However, there were some members of the two pinnacle races that were willing to come fight.

Like the Ka wu race...even though they belonged to the side of the bugs.

In truth, they were subservient to one of the two distant pinnacle races.

"Humans are very adept at machinery and living things." Another Wei Yi undying said with envy. "Combined with the one and only virtual universe network, combining the entire strength of humanity, using their resources most efficiently, it's made it hard for any other race to match them."

"Hmph!"

"Humans have poor body structures. Hence, they are much weaker than us demons. This is why they have to use other tactics to match us." The wolf head man said. "It’s a pity that the space beasts are too proud, not wanting to be part of us demons. Those proud space beasts should think too, they have high intelligence and talents, and they are huge beasts...they should naturally be part of us demons. This is especially true for the pinnacle twelve bloodlines, they are even higher than our royal bloodlines. It’s a pity..."

"The space beasts have powerful strength, but no territories, it sure is peculiar." A Wei Yi lady spoke.

"Even without territories, they are situated throughout the universe." The wolf head man said. "The space beasts are scattered throughout the universe, many sector lord pinnacle beasts never meeting another in their life times. Unless they become undying and have eternal life, only then could they make contact with the space beast core."

"The space beast alliance! That’s one of the super alliances of the universe."

"If that alliance was willing to merge with the demons, our demons would definitely become the top pinnacle race." The wolf head man exclaimed.

The demons and space beasts did have many disputes.

Actually as a whole, the space beasts were like a strengthened demon race! The demons couldn’t be blamed in wanting them to merge.

...

While these three undyings were discussing humans, demons and space beasts...

"Ah?" The wolf head man looked at his arm screen.

The other two Wei Yi undyings looked at him.

"Captain?" The two of them asked curiously.

"We’ve discovered a ship, it’s a human." The wolf head man said seriously.

"What’s special about a human ship." The lady smiled, "Looks like the captain is triggered by humans."

"No...There’s only one human on the ship, and it’s a sector lord!" The scaled wolf head man emphasized.

"Sector lord?"

"How can that be?"

The two Wei Yi undyings were shocked. The main continent was filled with powerful warriors, it was almost certain there would be an official within every team or someone with the abilities of an official! However, there was a human sector lord on the main continent now.

"A humans sector lord actually dares to come to Yan Ji main continent?"

"Is he looking to die?" the other two undyings couldn’t believe this.

"I’ve thought of a person." The wolf head man said suddenly. "Do you remember the star eating sector lord I spoke off on Fog island."

"Fog island’s star eating sector lord?" The two Wei Yi undyings single eyes gleamed.

"I heard that he has the strength of an official and an hundred vine star eating plant." The wolf man revealed a smile. "This human sector lord...could very likely be the start eating sector lord. Maybe he found himself invincible on Fog island and decided to come to the main continent, how stupid! The main continent isn’t like Fog island at all! Let’s kill him...are there any objections?"

"Of course not." The two other undyings laughed.

"Let’s get close." The wolf head man ordered.

Sou!

The living ship swiftly flew towards Luo Feng’s ship.

Chapter 794: Accumulating Contribution Points

The living ship got closer.

"Look, that human sector lord is still casually sipping wine." The leading scaled wolf head man pointed at the screen and mocked.

"If only he knew that he was being watched by the demon clan's pinnacle official warrior from the Gold Fear race...he'd probably be weak in his knees from the fear." The Wei Yi lady laughed. Beside her the Wei Yi man nodded and said coldly, "Ignorance is bliss, let's help him die faster. To have such power at sector lord level, he's definitely an absolute genius by the demon alliance standards, his rewards would be extremely high."

"It is very high."

The wolf head man nodded, "Hence we need to record footage of the battle and keep his body and items to prove our work." Unlike the humans that had the virtual universe, the demon communication system was much more backwards. They could only maintain consciousness communication in the seventh battlefield, and were unable to project images or footage, much less the synchronized broadcast of the virtual universe network.

"Understood." The two Wei Yi undyings were excited.

...

Within the ship.

Luo Feng sat in his control room and sipped his wine, revealing a peculiar smile, muttering to himself, "Ignorance is bliss, right, you guys are right. You are very blissful right now, because you don't know what's about to hit you. Actually, the contribution points I'll get from you will be pretty high, official pinnacle? Hehe, I am much stronger than the Boulder of Fog island, the Golden horned beast should have no problems getting rid of you."

"Five minutes...four minutes..."

"Countdown 30 seconds."

"30, 29, 28..." Luo Feng's first scanner clearly recorded the distance between his ship and the living ship.

Sou!

An undying light ball that was being condensed instantly shot through tens of thousands of km, hitting the black disc ship Luo Feng was in. The E9 ship was instantly torn apart with large amounts of alloy remains shooting in all directions. The entire ship was exploded open along with the space itself, as countless space fragments shook.

After awhile, the fragments regained their form.

Amidst the ripples...a black silhouette stood in space, he held a shield and had a blade on his back.

"Little punk, you sure got some guts coming to Yan Ji main continent." A sharp voice resounded from the butterfly winged undying with compound eyes. The Wei Yi lady spoke, "Only at a sector lord level, you must be an absolute genius of humanity, how can you be so stupid."

"His stupidity gives us points." The Wei Yi man said from the other side.

"Don’t waste time, hurry and kill him." The wolf head man said from the distance.

The three undyings surrounded Luo Feng from all sides.

"So noisy." Luo Feng brandished his blade from the scabbard on his back, his gaze gleaming coldly at the three undyings.

"Poor little..." The Wei Yi lady had just begun to speak.

Hu! Hu!

The two Wei Yi undyings simultaneously became blurs, leaving a s curve as they flew towards Luo Feng. They shot out large amounts of white threads from both hands, seemingly like spider web. Luo Feng however saw through it easily.

The threads shot through the distance, slashing the space and creating a thin slit.

The two undyings released over ten million threads that wrapped around Luo Feng from all about, wanting to trap him within.

"The Wei Yi race sure is powerful, their methods aren’t ordinary at all. However these two are obviously still too weak." Luo Feng shook his head.

Hua hua...

Countless white threads wrapped about him.

"What an idiot, he doesn’t even block it" The Wei Yi undying male mocked.

"Even though the two of us are weaker, however even if the captain was caught by us, he wouldn’t be able to break free immediately." The lady’s compound eyes sneered, after which however their smiles vanished. Because, just as the white threads began to form their cocoon around Luo Feng, they were shocked to realize that...

The black silhouette was already thousands of km away.

"How can that be."

"How can his dodging speed be even faster than us?" The two undyings were shocked.

Luo Feng simply glanced at them. While creating his techniques, the 182nd opponent set by his teacher the primal chaos city leader was a Wei Yi undying, back then the Golden horned beast fought against that undying...that opponent was emperor level, and his power and skills were at a much higher level.

The Wei Yi race were well known in speed and dodging, and they could naturally spit threads.

The threads they made were incredibly flexible and sturdy. The moment they formed a cocoon, they would trap their opponents. Even if the enemy had his body completely shattered, he wouldn't be able to escape...this was like a cage that was almost impossible to escape from in a short time!

It was a pity...

Luo Feng had detailed information about them within his inherited memories, and with battle experience against an emperor level Wei Yi undying, how could he be bothered with these two barely official punks.

...

"Die!" Luo Feng flashed three times, leaving behind warps within

the 10,000 km area, almost like lightning that was warping.

Strike travel!

The Wei Yi man immediately hurriedly tried to dodge and use his threads to stop Luo Feng. But, it couldn't be helped, Luo Feng was faster than him by a large margin.

Hua!

The blood shadow blade instantly left behind a terrifying flash. This silver flash was invincible, slashing through space itself, leaving behind torn fragments of space and creating a silver milky way...the flash of the blade formed a milky way!

With that milky way...

It couldn't be stopped!

Rumble! The shocked Wei Yi undying was instantly torn to shreds.

Moon Policy first form...Milky Way Across the sky!

Hua!

Hua!

Another two flashes and two more milky ways appeared in the space, one tearing apart the Wei Yi lady and another rushing straight at the wolf head demon.

Three Milky ways!

Attacking three undyings!

Howl...

The body of the wolf head man instantly broke apart, a powerful howl erupted as a huge gold scaled beast with a wolf head but with a horn on top appeared. Its head's scales had incomparably complex engravings.

One of the royal demon empires, the Gold Fear race!

They were renowned for swallowing, they were somewhat similar to a weakened Golden horned beast.

"Captain, I lost 3% of my undying body."

"I lost 2% of my undying body."

The two Wei Yi undyings reformed their bodies in mid air, as their eyes filled with rage and shock. They had just recently completed their undying bodies, hence they weren't fully stable

yet. However they were barely official level. To damage their undying bodies...one had to at least have barely emperor strength or close to emperor ability!

Indeed.

The current Luo Feng and his human body did have close to emperor strength.

His basic strength was 1,000 times that of a normal sector lord, which was at a low official level.

In terms of skill, over 1,000 years of creating his techniques and studying the Beast god statue, with it in hand, it allowed him to reach the beast god presence of passing the Heavenly bridge's 18th level. This was already at the emperor level.

As for his usage of the blade, he had created the pinnacle technique Moon Policy!

The three had combined!

Skill and bladework with the increase in body strength, this allowed him to have close to emperor level strength. Afterall, the true pinnacle emperors...like Bloodthirst emperor, Fantasy spirit etc, the techniques they created were only Top class level. But, Luo Feng's blade work was indeed very intrepid.

"A human sector lord with close to emperor level strength? If we

kill him, how much points would we get? He may be slightly stronger than me, but it can't be by that much. The two Wei Yi idiots just finished their undying bodies, and they have yet to stabilize it. Even I have the ability to damage 1% of their bodies at a time." The Gold Fear race demon's eyes were burning, "And this human is just a sector lord, he doesn't even have an undying body. The worst case scenario...I'll burn some of my undying energy and give it my all to kill him. Such a genius, his points should be akin to an emperor."

Killing a sector lord genius had a much higher reward than killing a similar level undying.

Sector lord with the strength of an emperor.

Killing him would give indeed give him the points akin to actually killing an emperor.

"The two of them actually got injured, and their undying bodies were damaged?" Luo Feng glanced at the two Wei yi undyings, "So weak, my earth body only has close to emperor strength! And not even a true emperor!"

Howl...

The distant Gold fear demon rushed over and opened its mouth. A terrifying suction strength immediately acted on Luo Feng's body. He probably wouldn't dare forcefully swallow a similar level pinnacle official, but a human sector lord, even if he was strong, he was still human without an undying body.

He immediately attempted to swallow him!

The sky and land grew dark as the powerful space energy acted on his body.

"Hmph." Luo Feng instantly took out the undying star eating plant that instantly swelled and covered 100,000 km of space."

"Let’s see how you swallow this." Luo Feng’s other body was the Golden horned beast. Naturally he was clear on the weakness of this ability. The swallowing area had a limit. A 100,000 km diameter plant was something the demon had no way of swallowing.

Howl...

The demon was forced to stop abruptly as it howled, countless gold lights appeared in the surrounding space, and within this gold domain...the demon rushed at Luo Feng.

"Be my training partner. Once I’m done, the Golden horned beast will kill you and get the points."

Luo Feng wielded his blood shadow blade and instantly rushed at him.

Chapter 795: Eliminate Early

In the air above the vast desert, a huge terrifying Gold Fear demon was battling against a black armored man. The battle was intense as the both of them were fighting at close combat.

Pu Chi!

The Slash that left behind slits in the space only managed to slice through the scales and skin of the Gold fear demon. Even though gold blood spewed out, with his undying energy flowing within his body, such injuries meant nothing to him.

Howl...the demon clawed at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng flashed about, instantly dodging his attacks while attacking again.

His blade flashed!

Across the skies!

"Despicable human!" The demon howled after fighting for awhile. "He’s too cunning, he’s dodging and hiding abilities are simply too good, I cannot even hurt him." He had initially thought he’d engage in close combat with the advantage of his undying body, thinking it would be incredibly easy to kill him. However, he realized that the human was simply too fast. Even after so many exchanges, he only managed to clash blades once in awhile,

without even harming him once.

Anxious, rage!

"Killing this human will be very hard, unless I burn my undying body." The beast recognized the fact.

"I have to report to the alliance." It thought. "A human sector lord with strength close to an emperor, he’s definitely an absolute genius. Even with just the report, if confirmed, I will get quite some points."

The beast immediately began his report via his device in his world ring.

"I’m on Yan Ji main continent, my coordinates are..."

"I’ve discovered a human sector lord proficient in blade work. I believe that he’s the star eating sector lord from Fog island. His true strength is a little stronger than a pinnacle official, and closer to emperor. My two Wei Yi underlings had just gotten their undying bodies, and his attack actually damaged their undying bodies." The gold fear beast reported.

A pity.

The communication systems of the demon race was simply too weak. It was unable to even send images, and was only capable of mental communication. Even the confirmation of the contribution

points will be taken care of only after the report reached the base. The human virtual universe network's synchronized broadcast on the other hand could easily confirm the battle situation, sending points immediately.

"My blade is actually able to pressure this Gold fear demon. Combined with my movement skill, it's perfect." Luo Feng was excited as he battled, "The feeling of battling in the outer region wars sure is different from the virtual universe."

In the virtual universe, one would subconsciously recognize.

It was all simulated.

All of them were fake.

This was a natural instinct.

Even if it did have the ability to train his techniques, it was unable to produce the feeling of fear and caution within Luo Feng. The outer region wars however were different. The enemy may produce surprise tactics at any time, he didn't dare get careless at any time. Like this Gold Fear beast, the moment he burned his undying body, he would instantly have emperor level strength. Of course that was akin to burning his soul, and unless it was truly necessary, he wouldn't do so.

"Training complete."

"Time to let the Golden horned beast appear." Luo Feng immediately used his first scanning device to jam the enemy's devices. Simultaneously from afar, a huge silver silhouette appeared. It's high speed movement made it seem like a blur, it rushed straight at the two Wei Yi undyings.

...

"They are actually in a stalemate."

"Accurately speaking, the captain is losing." The two Wei Yi undyings watching the fight from the distance were both stunned.

"No problem, the captain has an undying body. Even though he's losing, there's no danger, and the moment he burns 2-5% of his undying body, he'll settle the human quickly. Even though almost all of the points will go to him, as long as we get a little, that's still something."

The two Wei Yi undyings were chatting when they suddenly felt a terrifying pressure.

"What!"

They turned fiercely and their compound eyes saw an incredibly glaring silver light tearing past space. It slashed past space like it was tofu, they didn't even have time to react as the silver light sliced past them!

This wasn’t some silver light, it was the silver beast’s Sha Wu wings.

Wings like a blade, sturdy and piercing, slashing past everything!

Weng...

Weng...

The two low officials had already lost some of the undying bodies when the human Luo Feng slashed them. As the Sha Wu wings sliced them apart, the space energy from the wings instantly caused their bodies to degrade and get reduced to nothing.

The beast flapped its wings and headed straight for Luo Feng and the Gold fear demon.

******

The gold fear demon had discovered the silver beast the moment it attacked the two Wei Yi undyings. However, when it discovered they were instantly destroyed, the demon was completely shocked.

"What."

"Emperor undying."

"Definitely an emperor. Since it’s so relaxed, it’s definitely not a low emperor, at least a high level emperor!" The demon was filled with fear. "No wonder the scanning device couldn’t detect it, its scanning device must be much more advanced than mine, damn, what beast is this."

"Flee, flee, flee!"

The Gold fear demon couldn’t care about the human genius anymore, immediately fleeing.

"Flee!" Luo Feng pretended to be shocked too as he turned and fled.

One human and one demon, were both fleeing.

"Hope that emperor undying chases that human." The demon thought within. "Go chase that human, ah, why are you chasing me? He’s caught up!"

Hu!

The Sha Wu wings flapped and the golden horned beast instantly caught up with the demon.

Hua La! The wings acted like blades. Moon Policy was firstly created as a winged attack, and was especially used with the Sha Wu wings. Even though it was altered to be used as a blade technique, it was obviously much more wanton and carefree as a

winged attack.

The silver light slashed past he space.

The Gold fear demon was sliced in half, fresh blood along with its organs could be clearly seen. The blood and organs seemed to be held by a formless power, as the two bodies quickly rejoined.

"I lost 6% of my undying body?"

The demon was extremely shocked, "This is a pinnacle emperor, pinnacle emperor!"

It was a pinnacle official.

To easily harm a pinnacle official's body, one had to have a pinnacle emperor's strength.

"Spare me, spare me." The demon immediately communicated.

Pu chi!

Pu Chi!

The golden horned beast flashed over and over, slashing the demon countless times. Its speed was simply too fast. The moment his body reformed, he was sliced apart again, instantly losing 50%

of his undying body.

"Spare me senior, don’t force me!" The demon was worried.

Hua!

The beast attacked again and it made the demon fall into despair.

"Go and die!!!" The demon howled and used the remaining energy within to self destruct. The countless years of accumulation of his undying body, it held terrifying amounts of energy. It instantly exploded and the force of the explosion instantly reached the level of a pinnacle emperor’s level of attack.

Rumble...

Hundreds of thousands of km of the space above the desert was instantly torn apart, countless space fragments were shredded.

The Golden horned beast had immediately flashed away the moment it discovered the undying demon was about to self destruct, simultaneously hiding behind the Sha Wu wings. The wings grew in size and completely covered the beast as it was knocked back a few hundred km before stopping.

The Sha Wu wings had diffused over 90% of the force. Even though the remaining force exceeded the 10,000 sector lord limit of its general armor, the armor still diffused 90% of the remaining force. That little force remaining was only about over 6,000 sector

lord strength, it was but a tickle to the golden horned beast.

...

Luo feng, who was pretending to flee stopped too, it quickly let the beast collect the items left behind and put him back in his internal world.

"Powerful."

"My Beast god presence is already at the 18th level, and with my pinnacle technique." Luo Feng thought. "However, my body structure side is only still at the basic emperor level, with the 3 together...it gives me a high emperor strength."

"The Sha Wu wings are simply too powerful, the space energy it produces sure is terrifying."

"It’s able to harm even a pinnacle official’s body."

Luo Feng was extremely happy.

He took the items from the three officials and produced another ship, swiftly leaving.

******

Within the management department of the demons in the outer region wars.

"Confirmed report."

"A human sector lord with close to emperor level strength has been discovered on Yan Ji main continent. He should be an absolute genius of humanity, ranking among the top 100 of human sector lord geniuses."

Looking at the result produced by the AI.

Two completely black colored puppets sat there.

"Having close to emperor strength, he should be a core genius of one of the five leviathans, like the primal region sector lords of the Virtual Universe Company. Even though there are a 100 of them, only 1/3rd of them are probably able to reach close to emperor level strength." A completely black bodied man with a lion head said seriously.

Indeed.

There were indeed over a hundred human geniuses that had close to emperor level! Those sector lords that have trained for up to millions of years, their law comprehension would at least reach up to the 18th level. Combined with their trump cards and techniques, they could produce close to emperor level strength. However...

Close to emperor level, just that alone was very difficult to kill a low level official.

"I didn’t expect the star eating sector lord of Fog island to have such strength. He had only killed normal undyings back then, battling with the weak officials of Fog island. Now he actually has close to emperor level strength." Another black bodied puppet with 99 miniature heads spoke.

"The human geniuses are all well hidden, it’s hard to find one. For such a genius, to be that powerful at sector lord level, the moment he becomes undying, he’s set to become an emperor. And he could very likely be a high emperor, or even pinnacle emperor. When he gets an undying body, killing him would cost tens of millions of times more. Even though his strength is not weak now, he still doesn’t have an undying body, and killing him is still easy. Such a threat...should be eliminated as early as possible." The lion head demon said.

"Hm." The puppet with 99 heads nodded, "I’ll immediately report this and let the upper management give the order."

Chapter 796: Vanishing Without a Trace

In the desolate regions of Yan Ji main continent, there was an ancient palace that lay amidst endless ice mountains. No one knew when it was built, however it had become Purple Sky Emperor of the demon race's territory.

"The captain's mood hasn't been too good recently. I just heard her scolding the vice captain earlier. We've been on the Yan Ji main continent for close to 10,000 years, and yet I've never seen her so troubled."

"Right, however I heard that she's this troubled because of a human genius."

"Really?"

"I'm not sure, I just heard that."

Two demon undyings in their puppet bodies were discussing secretly, they were both members of the renowned Purple sky team of Yan Ji main continent.

Purple sky team!

It was one of the teams that was well known,and its captain Purple sky emperor was an emperor undying of the demon race, who had the ability to teleport. The vice captain was also a low level emperor, and almost all of the other members were pinnacle

official. The weakest was at high level official level!

Such a team, naturally it was renowned within the main continent.

Even though it was powerful, it couldn’t be called invincible!

…

Within the depths of the palace.

A lady with an incredibly beautiful fox head wore a black robe. Her puppet body wasn’t too different from her real body, her expression and gaze were also incredibly alluring.

"Bastard."

"Plaus that bastard, he actually dares to provoke me." The wolf head lady was incredibly angry. "Luckily the upper echelon are wise, can they blame me? It’s been a year since I got the mission and none of the members in the entire demon alliance in Yan Ji continent have even seen the human sector lord. If they cant even find him…how will I kill him? How will I do it?"

"Plaus, he dares to call me useless."

"Can they blame me?"

"This idiot, he's definitely enticed by the contribution points. By killing a human sector lord who's points given were akin to an emperor, it's hard to blame him."

"It's a pity that you wont get it, idiot."

Purple sky emperor cursed.

Within, she was sullen...

Even though she was an emperor with teleportation, normally official and emperor levels all had undying bodies. With her ability, she could at most kill a pinnacle official, as for emperor warriors...there wasn't a single emperor on the entire Yan Ji continent that could have a 100% guarantee of killing one!

A low level emperor was incredibly hard to kill!

A high level emperor was naturally even harder.

Hence...

To kill a human sector lord and still get points akin to an emperor, this was naturally incredibly lucrative! Her close to 10,000 years of points probably didn't even add up to a tenth of this mission! Hence when she got the mission...she was extremely excited!

One had to know that even though they were on Yan Ji main continent, the demon race had only two emperors. However there were a total of 329 emperors in the demon alliance!

The demon race had a lot of subservient races afterall. Along with some others that weren't subservient...but those who come along form a distant location to be part of the demon race to take part in the outer region wars added up to the 329 emperors on the main continent under the demon alliance.

This mission was one that everybody eyed!

However, the internal department of the demons naturally passed off such missions to their own. Since Purple sky emperor had teleportation, hence she got the job. Back then, it had made many others jealous, but it was useless as this was an order from the top.

Purple sky was very happy, she couldn't wait to go kill the human sector lord.

All of the members in the demon alliance on Yan Ji continent were given the order to immediately report if they discovered the human sector lord with strength akin to an official!

The moment they determined the location, Purple sky emperor would immediately teleport over.

One or two light years of distance was very easy to teleport to.

It could be said...

That the entirety of Yan Ji main continent was within her teleportation range, she could instantly reach any location within the continent. The moment she got a report...she would immediately teleport over to kill the human sector lord and acquire the huge amount of points.

What a simple job!

"Useless."

"The information department sure is lousy. It’s been a year and no reports have come over, no one has even discovered the human sector lord." She raged within. Being able to see the prize and yet not get it was hard to swallow. The upper echelon gave her the opportunity to get so many points and yet there hadn’t been a single report.

"Human sector lord!"

"I don’t believe that you’ll stay hidden forever. Our demon alliance takes up a quarter of the main continent. Hence, I don’t believe no one will bump into you. As long as you reveal yourself, you’ll be dead! Dead." Purple sky grit her teeth. She was waiting in anticipation while not knowing when it would happen was hard to bear.

****

At this time, Luo Feng didn’t even know he had become an important target for the demon race.

"Die!"

A glaring silver flash slashed past the air above the ocean, the space was instantly torn apart as a milky way covered the skies. The short half a meter tall other race undying was instantly slashed in two He was still relaxed before, but after reforming, he was filled with fear and shock as he discovered he lost 18% of his undying body.

"How can this be? How can this be?" The official undying was extremely shocked.

Hua!

Hua!

A few more silver slashes, the undying couldn’t even escape, only managing to self destruct at the last moment...the battle had ended.

"Hu!" Amidst the ripples, Luo Feng floated in space, a black pair of wings flapping behind him.

"Undying bodies are sure hard to kill."

"The first time I came to Yan Ji main continent, the earth body had hurt the Wei Yi undyings, that was truly lucky. Those two undying bodies were probably still very weak and new. Now however... I am coming across the stronger basic officials, and I'm unable to hurt them relying on my blade alone." Luo Feng shook his head. "Using my blade is ineffective against them, I have to rely on the Sha Wu wings! The Sha Wu wings sure are powerful, even though the earth body is much weaker and can only trigger a pitiful amount of its space energy, I am still able to kill a low level official already."

"Hm."

"Time to leave."

Luo Feng collected the goods and sat in his ship, leaving far from the battlefield.

Within the ship.

Luo Feng sat in the control room. Same old rules applied, he closed off his first device's jamming abilities and using his second device normally.

"The Sha Wu wings sure are useful."

"With it, the earth body that could only kill an undying general

before can now kill a low level official. And the Golden horned beast...can kill a pinnacle official."

"And the wings also make the enemies unable to sense my power level accurately."

"Hehe..."

He laughed happily.

When he first came to the main continent, clashing with the Gold fear demon and Wei Yi undyings, Luo Feng realized a problem... "There were too many powerful warriors on the main continent, totally unlike Fog island. There, a low official can become a tyrant, with only ten or so of them. In this main continent however... I heard there are over a 1,000 emperors."

These were facts.

Even though the humans only had three emperors on the main continent! However there were many other subservient races under humanity and its alliances. Together, they had a few hundred emperors. Afterall, this included tens of thousands of races. With one emperor for every ten races on the main continent, this made the number of emperors very high.

In total, the main continent had over a 1,000 emperors.

Naturally...

Compared to the large amounts of generals and officials, the emperor numbers were incredibly pitiful.

"There are many powerful warriors on Yan Ji continent."

"I could still mess around on Fog island, however on the main continent, battling over and over with official pinnacles with the chance of meeting a low emperor. This could result in the other races targeting me, Teacher had warned me of this before, what can I do?" Luo Feng had pondered back then.

He quickly came up with an idea!

The Sha Wu wings!

The wings were a true treasure, and when used on the Golden horned beast, it completely hid the beast's energy levels. The natural pressure it released...made the enemy think it was a powerful warrior.

One theory was.

The wings on the earth body could naturally hide his energy.

"I'm so smart."

"Combining the earth body with the wings and controlling the

pressure released, acting as a pinnacle official."

The Golden horned beast with the wings can release more strength."

"Hehe..."

"That way, a pinnacle official human becomes extremely normal here." Luo Feng was very happy.

After which, he acted according to his plan.

Exploring the main continent, the beast and his human body would never appear simultaneously.

Some battles were for his earth body to train, and the beast would never reveal itself unless an unexpected danger presented itself. These battles were for him to work on his bladework and study Moon policy.

During some other battles, the human body wouldn’t even show himself, and used the Golden horned beast from the beginning combined with the Sha Wu wings. These battles were mainly for accumulating contribution points. Afterall, the efficiency of the beast in collecting points was much higher.

...

These were the two types of battles.

One was for training and the other was for points.

Luo Feng was having a blast on the main continent. It had been a year since his battle with the Wei Yi undyings. There had been six battles and he had encountered ten other undyings. During which, he used his earth body to battle three of them and three for the Golden horned beast. He killed a total of five officials and three generals.

The efficiency was very high.

"A low official is not even worth me training my blade work. I have to find powerful warriors, like a high official to give me a good challenge." Luo Feng was very excited. Battling the many other races along with their many techniques and methods gave him an excitement from the hunt.

Chapter 797: Walking Alongside the River

Time passed, and in the blink of an eye, Luo Feng had been on the Yan Ji main continent for three years now.

He had had a very fulfilling three years, battling and training as he improved. Most of his time was spent studying the battles, laws and Beast god presence, while studying his techniques and so on. He had a total of fifteen battles over these three years, killing twenty two official undyings and nineteen generals.

Of which eighteen officials and thirteen generals were killed by the Golden horned beast, while the human body only killed four officials and nine generals. He had relied on the Sha Wu wings to kill the officials.

This made Luo Feng feel that...

He was still very weak!

Even though his comprehension speed was fast, having only trained for a few thousands years, the other primal region sector lords couldn't hold a candle to his efficiency. However, those that had trained for up to a million years were close to his level of comprehension, they were all official level standard.

And the top twenty three were close to emperor level standard.

The top few all had comprehension levels reaching the

eighteenth level of the heavenly bridge.

However, they were all still extremely far from Ke Di's level. As the law comprehension got harder and harder the more one trained, True Yan was stuck on the 20th level, spending trillions of years and yet still being unable to pass the twenty first level. The levels towards the end were much harder. Breaking through from the eighteenth to the nineteenth was almost akin to the difficulty of the first to eighteenth levels added together.

The difficulty compounded as it grew.

Hence, even though the eighteenth to the twentieth may seem short, almost every generation of primal region sector lords all reach the eighteenth However, to reach the twentieth...it probably took ten million eras for one.

...

These three years, Luo Feng had made a name for himself.

The golden horned beast had killed pinnacle officials. Even though only two out of the eighteen were pinnacle officials, the name of the beast had spread wide. Afterall, many of the 18 were high officials, this was something only a high level emperor could do.

The strong were numerous on the main continent, with countless races, yet there were only over a thousand emperors.

Every one of them had their own reputation.

The Golden horned beast always appeared as the silver beast, and since its winged attacks were terrifying, naturally it got the nickname silver winged emperor. As for the earth body? He was considered a very normal standard on the main continent, naturally it didn’t attract any attention.

******

The fourth year Luo Feng was on the main continent, within the automaton virtual base.

"Ci Wei Ka." In the streets, a tall automaton youth suddenly shouted.

"Senior."

His body was mainly silver, and there was some gold at its waist and shoulder areas. From a glance, it looked like a handsome alloy automaton youth was lowering its head in respect.

"Ci Wei Ka, how are your gains in the outer region wars?" The tall youth smiled and asked.

"I’ve already completed 51.2% of the master’s mission, I’m currently in the seventh battlefield’s Yan Ji main continent. There

are many other powerful warriors here, my efficiency will keep rising, killing over a thousand more almost official levels will probably help me accomplish the goal." The handsome youth smiled. The automaton race had very unique differences from the other races because every one of them were born as living AIs, as living AIs...

They were born recognizing their master.

Within the race, a knight would naturally make some undyings recognize it as their master!

The powerful leader of the automaton race, who was comparable to the primal chaos city leader would naturally make some knights recognize it as their master! These processes were carried out much earlier. Unless their strengths were to some day exceed their master's, only then would the master remove the binding, if not they were bound by their roles forever.

The entire automaton race had this pyramid hierarchy.

One universe master controlled large amount of knights, the knights controlled even more undyings!

They had emotions, they could feel rage, jealousy, excited, happiness and so on. However, the master binding was something within their core, the moment their masters were picked, they would definitely abide by them, without a single thought of betrayal. While they may feel jealous of some other comrades, they would remain completely loyal to their master!

The pyramid hierarchy ruled all!

This was the automaton race, a definite level of strictness, without even a single thought of betrayal. This was a terrifying race.

"Completed 51.2%? Ci Wei Ka, you sure are exceptional. It’s no wonder the master pampers you." The tall youth laughed oddly.

"My debt to the master, I will naturally give it my all in return." The handsome youth remained humble, maintaining his respect.

"Very good, keep up the good work, hurry and become an emperor." The tall youth ordered.

"Yes senior, I will definitely work hard and learn from you." The handsome youth lowered his head.

"Hm."

The tall automaton youth replied, leaving the youth Ci Wei Ka alone after. Inside however he was indignant, "Hmph, isn’t he just a weak ship living AI that accompanied the master back then, having life or death experiences with the master. Now he’s only an official pinnacle, yet the master pampers him more than me! Hmph...if the master hadn’t helped you out that much, how could you kill so many officials? You make it sound so easy, finishing your mission after killing another thousand or so more, hmph...

let’s hope you fall in the battlefield!"

The handsome youth glanced at his senior leaving, his eyes gleaming coldly.

"These followers the master collected, especially the emperors, they are all stronger than me, and give me guidance. But, what a bunch of idiots. When I was going through life or death situations with the master, where were you all! Hmph, you are jealous of the relationship I have with the master? If it weren’t for the race rules, forcing me to show respect to the higher level comrades, I wouldn’t even be bothered with you all." Ci Wei Ka was unsatisfied within.

He looked down on these emperors.

The master treated him like a brother, why would he bother with the emperors.

"I can meet the master and report straight to him. Hmph, these punks...they probably have to wait just to meet the master." Ci Wei Ka rubbed his nose and looked up, heading towards where his master was.

The virtual world created by the automaton race could spread within a star region.

Hence every one of the hundreds of regions the race had, they each had one virtual world.

Even though they were scattered in different regions, everyone was able to communicate with the main base. With that as the main coordinator, naturally...this was all very complicated, and the normal automaton warriors didn’t have the right to enter. Ci Wei Ka, through the special virtual world set up in the outer region wars by the automaton race, he could use his consciousness to enter the main base.

Only then could it communicated with his master.

The automaton virtual main base was called Indigo world.

...

A pyramid ship flew in the air above Yan Ji main continent.

"Ha!"

The automaton youth dressed in his jade green armor opened his eyes and smiled, "The master treats me well. I only have to complete 80% of the mission for him to give me a treasure. If the other jealous seniors knew about this, they would probably erupt in rage. However, so what?"

"Idiots."

"Even though in terms of strength alone, I cannot match them.

However in true battle...our automaton race is afterall known for its usage of treasures and methods. With the many treasures and trump cards the master gave me, I can even deal with emperors. If forced into a corner, I can even harm a pinnacle emperor."

Ci Wei Ka was that confident.

Because he had killed many officials these past year years, he naturally formed a sense of confidence from his experience.

"Ah?"

"This human sector lord...scanning device, project!"

Ci Wei Ka ordered.

Immediately, he could see the 3D image projected, and in it was a black armored human sector lord seated there crossed legged.

"Human sector lord? Yan Ji main continent actually has a human sector lord?" He rubbed his alloy nose, frowning. "His scanning device is pretty advanced, even only the pinnacle officials of our race will have such a device. If it’s the other races...normally only emperors would have such."

"A weak human sector lord actually has such an advanced device."

"Luckily..."

"My device was given to me from my master. It’s much more advanced than even the emperors of our automaton race!" Ci Wei Ka slapped his alloy chair, standing up, "This punk is still training, he hasn’t detected me...his background must be huge."

"He may have special human treasures on him!"

"And he may very likely be an absolute genius of humanity. Even if that is not the case, his background alone must be huge. However the bigger the better, that means his wealth would be even more shocking. The more of a genius he is...the higher the contribution points will be." His eyes gleamed, other race warriors didn’t care about their backgrounds at all.

"Get close!"

"I want to kill this human sector lord." Ci Wei Ka ordered.

The low cost pyramid ship immediately headed to where Luo Feng was training.

...

There was a saying, walking alongside the river for long periods of time, how could one’s shoes not get wet.

Luo Feng had relied on his scanning device to fight whoever he wanted these past three years, jamming whoever he didn't want to fight. However...when the enemy's device was more advanced than his, that power naturally belonged to the enemy.

******

At this time, Luo Feng didn't even know about the danger, and part of his consciousness was in the virtual universe.

Virtual universe, Black Dragon Mountain, nine star bay, within his residence, a private movie hall.

Luo feng and Xu Xin were enjoying a movie.

There were just the two of them.

"This is much better than the movies of earth." Xu Xin said softly. Luo Feng held his wife's hand and smiled, "The geniuses of the universe creating movies, whether it's the story line or the virtual effects etc, they are all much more exciting. Naturally it gives a more thrilling experience."

The couple chatted softly while watching.

This was their way of maintaining their relationship.

"Hm?" Luo Feng's expression suddenly changed.

"What’s the matter?" Xu Xin was shocked.

"Sorry my wife." Luo Feng smiled apologetically and vanished, returning to reality. He had encountered a dangerous situation.

Xu Xin suddenly stood up, nervous.

She knew Luo Feng was in the outer region wars, naturally she was incredibly worried.

Chapter 798: Trouble

Yan Ji main continent, within an ancient underground palace.

The walls of this palace had ancient sacrificial pictures, and they had faint law ripples. Over trillions of years, they had yet to be fully destroyed. Luo Feng was shocked when he first saw them. Who knew what life forms lived here countless years ago.

He sat crossed legged in the palace.

Suddenly...

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

Nine light pillars simultaneously pierced through the thick stone layer, hitting the palace directly. The brute force of the lasers instantly broke part the palace, even the space around was ripped apart as large amount of rubble flew about.

Luo Feng only awoke when the nine pillars were hit.

"Not good!"

Black armor extended over his body, protecting his entire body as he swiftly lifted the Beast god shield. A powerful glaring beam of light rippled onto Luo Feng as it shot through the palace. The power of the lasers were already reduced by half after piercing

through the stone layer. It first hit was on Luo Feng's beast god shield, allowing him to dodge in time.

Darkness ensued, the underground palace crumbled.

Luo Feng flew backwards too.

"Where is it from?" Luo Feng immediately adjusted and flew through the torn space. Hua la la! He pierced through the deep caves and surfacing out of the cave.

He looked up and was shocked!

In all directions...

There were a total of nine pyramid ships. It was clear from their positions that the nine laser beams were shot from these nine ships.

"Automaton ships?" Luo Feng frowned. "Automaton ships, Babata, can the scanning device detect these nine ships."

"Luo Feng, the scanners are unable to determine the target. They are probably totally jammed, the enemy has a more advanced scanner than ours." Babata communicated mentally back, "Someone with a device more advanced than ours. Luo Feng, you need to be very careful, his strength could very likely be emperor level."

Luo Feng was very calm.

Luo Feng could tell from the surface energy barriers of the nine pyramid ships that every one of them was much more expensive than his Yun Mo planet ship.

"Where is he from?" Luo Feng was shocked. "Just these nine ships are all better than my Yun Mo planet ship? From the feel of it...the energy barriers are very strong, maybe only if I let the golden horned beast out will I be able to harm the nine ships."

Strong warrior.

A true strong warrior of the automaton race, this wasn't the same automaton warrior that went after the same treasure as Hu Yan Bo, that undying back then was only at general level. He wasn't that powerful, and his ship was only a pinnacle E grade. How could it compare to this warrior that could so easily brandish nine extremely expensive pyramid ships?

"Bastard, I can't find a trace of him." Luo Feng was worried.

This was the first time...

He had the taste of having an opponent with a better scanning device than himself. He had always toyed with the other opponents before, fighting and fleeing as he felt like. Now that power was completely in the hands of the enemy,

"Sou!"

Luo Feng paused for a short 0.01 seconds in mid air before swiftly fleeing.

...

"Little punk, trying to flee?"

"Hahaha, toying with a human sector lord that dared to come to the main continent sure is fun." Millions of km away from Luo Feng, Ci Wei Ka watched the scene in his control room with interest. When Luo Feng tried to flee, he instantly ordered, "Attack!"

The nine dormant ships suddenly rumbled and their bottom parts tore open, revealing a few hundred meter wide cabin doors.

Hua hua hua...

Almost like locusts flying out, black automaton puppets shot out like lightning. The nine ships simultaneously shot out large amounts of black puppets. Theoretically, these nine ships were all 1,800m tall, and with the engine within the ship, it was unable to fit too many puppets. However, at this moment, they flew out continuously. Almost in a blink of an eye, over a million black puppets had flown out of each ship.

"Nine million!"

Looking at the nine directions, a blur of countless black puppets covered the skies. Luo Feng was stunned.

These puppets were all 10m tall, and completely black. They carried axes, blades etc on their backs, all sorts of weapons.

"Just where is this guy from, this, is too absurd."

"Nine million F9 grade puppets, and everyone of them is completely made of F9 grade metal Black Swan essence. Even if the costs are economized, every one of them is still made of so much metal, a single one alone should be worth ten mixed elements."

"Nine million would be ninety million mixed elements!"

"Spending such a huge fortune to buy a sea of puppets, this, this is too extravagant. Just where is this guy from?" There was a saying that a sharp blade worked better. Similarly, ninety million mixed elements worth of wealth would do better being spent on precious treasures or weapons.

But for ninety million puppets?

Truly controlling each with precision, normally one million was the limit, and anymore would definitely be a waste.

Weng! The nine ships that shot out one million F9 puppets each. The closest one to Luo Feng had its puppets simultaneously gather energy within their chests.

Rumble!

A million light beams shot at Luo Feng, they formed a huge 100m in diameter pillar of light.

Sou!" Luo Feng wielded the beast god shield and swiftly dodged.

Weng... Weng... Weng... Weng... Weng... Weng... Weng... Weng...

Nine ships took turns to gather energy and attack in turns. As the distance got closer, from the 3rd attack on, Luo Feng was unable to dodge no matter how fast he was. He could only rely on the Beast god shield and his soldier armor to defend, blocking the terrifying attacks.

Luo Feng immediately unleashed his movement techniques, flying straight towards a group of the puppets.

The puppets however dispersed simultaneously. The other eight armies pressed in close. No matter how he escaped, the nine groups all maintained a suitable distance. Whichever way he fled, the army there would disperse and the others would close in.

As such, Luo Feng was trapped.

"Bastard."

"This too vulgar."Luo Feng was worried.

The distance between him and the armies allowed them to hit him over and over.

...

"Hm?" He actually consecutively blocked twenty of my energy attacks? Every one of them is akin to full blast from a pinnacle official." Ci Wei Ka, who was controlling the puppets from a distance was stunned, "This human sector lord sure isn’t ordinary. The shield he uses to deflect my attacks is completely undamaged, it even disperses a large amount of the force, hehe..."

"Begin the three army combined attacks." Ci Wei Ka ordered casually.

******

When the nine armies began surrounding Luo Feng, they attacked in turns one by one, Luo Feng was unable to escape and was trapped.

After withstanding twenty attacks, the nine armies began to combine three armies together and attack. The force of the attack

was too huge, actually this was probably the limit of the nine armies. Afterall they were all in different positions, they could only at most gather three armies to attack at once.

However, Luo Feng once again withstood the attacks.

"Trigger the energy!"

"Flame simulation, Trap formation." Ci Wei Ka ordered again. "Even a true pinnacle official would be trapped, much less this punk. To waste so much of my energy, you should be proud."

The originally countless dumb automaton puppets instantly lit up with a glaring red light, the powerful energies of the ninety million puppets made Luo Feng's expression change. "This, this... what powerful energy. These aren't cheap metal lumps, and their energy cores are very advanced. Just one of them alone would be worth a few hundred mixed elements. Altogether, this will be...at least a few billion mixed elements!"

Luo Feng was stunned.

Passing the domain lord primal region sky mountain before and getting three billion points in reward, he had thought was already very impressive.

However the scene before him.

Ninety million F9 grade puppets, and every one of them was

highly advanced, and they were not simply metal lumps. Just like back when he was in Tai Wo and Poison's team, being attacked by the automaton warrior before, the enemy simply used puppets that had simple cores that relied on the thunder hell for energy. Compared to these ninety million, they were pitiful.

"Spending billions of mixed elements so easily?" Luo Feng was stunned, he understood too, "Since he's poured so much wealth into it, these nine armies definitely have more than simple combined attacks."

Weng!

900 puppets burned with flames on their surface. Hua! they gathered as one, all of them brandished the weapons from their back, be it axes, blades etc.

Suddenly one army of the nine had its puppets all rush straight at Luo Feng with their weapons.

Di!

The flame energy passed through their blades and swiftly formed a huge red beam of light, rushing at Luo Feng.

A million red lights gathered as one, shooting from all directions, it formed a net like structure, stretching around Luo Feng.

"Terrifying." Luo Feng shuddered within, clearly feeling the

countless red light net surrounding him.

He couldn’t match its strength!

If he fought back, he would be trapped and wouldn’t be able to escape, this was what he felt.

Rumble!

Luo Feng vanished.

Howl...a huge silver winged beast appeared in mid air, a terrifying pressure emanating throughout.

This scene caused the distant Ci Wei Ka to change his expression, "Silver wing emperor? This human sector lord is actually a puppet controlled by the silver wing emperor? Or is this emperor his guardian?"

Chapter 799: Nine Absolute God Country

Over the three years, since the Golden horned beast created a name for itself as the Silver winged emperor, it became quite a renowned being on the main continent. The automaton youth Ci Wei Ka frowned, "A human who is able to withstand the attacks of my armies, he’s definitely an absolute genius, and is not one to become another’s soul puppet. There’s a higher possibility of this silver winged emperor being his bodyguard. This human’s background must be huge."

Indeed.

His teacher had given him the Beast god Armament and the Sha Wu wings, even the cheaper Beast god armament was a weapon the knights used, it was still extremely pricey. Much less the Sha Wu wings...a trillion races in the universe, the only other person who knew of the wonders of this item other than the user Luo Feng was the primal chaos city leader himself.

Such a treasure, if its power was divulged, it was enough to make even knights go crazy for. Even the entire wealth of a knight wouldn’t be able to afford it.

Of course Ci Wei Ka didn’t know Luo Feng had such a treasure, he only guessed that with his background, he had many treasures. Such an absolute genius was worth a lot of contribution points.

"Contribution points and the treasures he has." Ci Wei Ka gritted his teeth, "I’ll give it my all."

"Even if the cost is huge, it’ll be worth it."

...

Luo Feng was being cornered too. Against the nine million F9 grade puppets attacking in formation, it was something the earth body couldn’t hold up against for long. And his other trump card, the bug army was suppressed too. Even though its attack was extremely powerful, these puppets were F9 grade and their strongest point was their defense!

One attack from the bug army!

May cause chaos amongst one million of the puppets and even problems within 10,000 of their cores. However there would be little loss of their F9 armors.

In comparison...

The moment the bug army was attacked by the other eight armies, the bug army was only sector lord pinnacle, their defense was not even comparable to a normal undying. Naturally they couldn’t compare to the defenses of the F9 metal. The losses would be tragic and heavy.

"The bug clan strength is their powerful attack, a million sector lord kings...can even heavily damage a pinnacle emperor!"

"Against a normal automaton army, it’s powerful attack can damage their internal cores."

"However!"

"These F9 grade puppets are advanced both outside and inside. They are all extremely expensive to make. Every one of them costs more than a sector lord pinnacle king, they are extremely sturdy. I’m unable to disrupt their core from the outside. It would be a tragedy." Luo Feng was very clear on this.

Different methods had their pros and cons.

Against the nine armies surrounding him, Luo Feng only had one way out, and that was to let the Golden horned beast appear. He had no other choice.

****

"I’ve been in the outer region wars for over 1,000 years, yet I’ve never been in such a situation before. Automaton scum, cry in despair." Luo Feng raged and rushed into the sky. The Golden horned beast appeared in the air above the vast land. With a flap of its wings, it suddenly flashed and dodged the countless red threads.

With the help of the Sha Wu wings, plus its own physical abilities, its speed with strike travel was absurd.

Howl!

It let out an enraged howl.

It flapped its wings and rushed straight towards one of the million strong F9 puppet army. The army immediately began to flee while the other eight pushed forward instead, maintaining optimum position to surround and attack the beast.

Chi! Chi! Chi!

Leaving behind three warps in mid air, the beast had reached sub light speed, simultaneously accelerating more, reaching close to light speed.

The million F9 puppets' acceleration was much slower, they couldn't even compare to Luo Feng's earth body's speed. They were only relying on the distance and support from the other armies, reaching sub light speed before the earth body could catch up. The Golden horned beast however was completely different!

Strike travel was originally a movement technique for wings.

The Sha Wu wings were adept at fleeing and dodging!

Even a pinnacle emperor, without teleportation wouldn't be able to keep up with the beast!

Hua!

The million F9 puppets were just accelerating, before reaching sub light speed, the extremely fast Golden horned beast had already caught up. With a flash of its wings...spreading over a 100km area, it instantly covered the skies.

Howl! The beast howled.

It’s wings acted like blades!

It instantly clashed against the fleeing puppets. Just how huge were its wings, a few hundred km in area! Every one of the puppets was only 10m tall, even with a million gathered with some distance between them, it would at most spread over 1,000km.

Rumble...The beast rushed past the army.

Countless F9 puppets waved their weapons, clashing against the beast’s body. However, the weapons were simply knocked away, almost like play things being thrown about. The most peculiar thing was...with the attack of the Sha Wu wings, large amounts of the puppets actually lost the ability to move, swiftly falling from the sky.

...

"How can this be?"

"These are exceptional grade F class puppets, their energy cores are extremely sturdy. How can it lose its mobility after just one clash? One clash can actually make over 10,000 puppets stop moving?" Ci Wei Ka watched in disbelief at the scene.

...

The Golden horned beast let out an ear piercing howl and flapped its wings.

Luo Feng, who had initially thought it was not bad that one clash allowed him to damage over a 100 puppets was surprised to discover that as long as the Sha Wu wings flashed past the puppets, their F9 bodies may still be undamaged, but their cores would all be destroyed.

The reason was that the Sha Wu wing's special space energy, that energy sent out threads of energy into the puppets.

Those threads...

As long as they touched the F9 puppets, it was over.

"Regret."

"Regret with pain for attacking me." The beast let out an excited howl, continuing to flap the Sha Wu wings, rushing over and over

against the million strong army. A large amount of them fell from the sky, all losing their mobility. While rushing past them...the beast had continuously collected the puppets that had lost their mobility into its world ring.

Even though they couldn’t move, with repair, they could still be fixed.

A plaything worth a few hundred mixed elements each, even a damaged one would be worth tens of mixed elements.

In the blink of an eye...

The beast had collected hundreds of thousands of F9 puppets. The other puppets all fled madly in all directions, even the other eight million began to swiftly flee, flying towards the nine pyramid ships.

"Howl..." the beast flapped its wings and left three more warps in mid air, rushing to another army.

This time however he only got few tens of thousands of puppets, the rest had managed to flee.

...

The prerequisite to collecting them in his world ring was that they couldn’t resist. The moment there was resistance, the collection wouldn’t be successful. This was also why the beast

could only collect those with damaged cores.

Of course, there were methods to forcefully collect them, like... its natural ability swallow.

Forcefully swallowing them all.

That was very dangerous, those with ability to resist, once that resistance grew too powerful, it may damage and ultimately collapse the beast's internal world.

****

"Ya..." In the distance space, the automaton youth Ci Wei Ka grit his teeth and smiled coldly in his control room, "To take away so many of my puppets, Silver wing emperor, silver wing emperor, indeed an emperor undying and is very powerful. However, my property isn't so easy to devour, I will make you spit everything out."

"Nine absolute god country!"

"Activate!"

He gritted his teeth and ordered.

His master was an absolute automaton warrior that had explored the universe for countless years with him as a ship AI. The master

treated him like a true brother and specially built a terrifying automaton weapon for him. Normally such weapons had incredibly high prerequisites to controlling them. Even the Sha Wu wings' first form required Luo Feng to master the first level of the Nan Shen seven forms before he could use it.

To make it possible for Ci Wei Ka to use and manipulate the formidable power.

His master had spent a lot of money and energy to personally make this nine Absolute God country.

...

In mid air.

"Just where is the enemy hiding?" The Beast's golden eyes gazed about. The countless F9 automaton puppets had all rushed back into the nine pyramids. In mid air, only the nine pyramid ships floated, the beast couldn't find the true body of the automaton undying.

"Hu."

It flapped its wings.

Rushing at one of the nine pyramids.

"This is the first time I've been so pressured in the outer region wars, and am unable to even find the enemy. However, I won't let you go easy." The beast flew towards the pyramid.

Weng! Weng! Weng! Weng! Weng! Weng! Weng! Weng! Weng!

The nine pyramids simultaneously shot out glaring purple lights.

Hu! A blur of purple lights shot out from the bottoms, almost like a special weapon. However before the beast could see everything clearly, the purple lights spread and countless beams shot in all directions, covering everything in light.

As they interweaved, parts of them trapped the Golden horned beast.

Howl...howl...The beast flapped its wings and struggled madly, slashing large amounts of the lights, however even more appeared.

The instant it was trapped, the pyramids had all connected.

Rumble!

The land and skies changed, everything before them vanished, leaving behind a purple space. The beast had totally been caught in the nine absolute god country.

Chapter 800: Pressured

When the Golden horned beast had fallen into the nine Absolute God country.

Virtual universe, Back Dragon Mountain, nine star bay. Xu Xin was praying for Luo Feng. "He has been in the outer region wars for over a thousand years and yet I've never seen him leave so hurriedly before...god, please protect Luo Feng." Everytime Luo Feng experienced danger, his family would be most worried for him. This was also why he hardly ever told them when he was in danger.

...

At the same time.

The the dark universe, a completely black blade like ship was swiftly flying.

"Your majesty, we are still a day away from the travel point."

"Your majesty, this is our first time to the outer region wars and we are heading straight to Yan Ji main continent? There are many powerful warriors there, your majesty just became an emperor, you are still a low emperor, there are even pinnacle emperors there..."

With a cold snort, the two underlings shut up.

This was a tall black armored youth. His appearance was like a stone statue, and he was completely hairless. The most eye catching thing about his look was his eyes, they were like red gems, they gave off a mysterious glow. His entire being emanated a powerful demonic black energy.

"It was hard for me to get the chance. While my relationship with the demon race is good, using their identity to enter the craziest battlefield in the primal universe...now that I'm here, how can I back down?" The black armored youth said coldly.

"Yes."

"Yes." The two official undyings replied respectfully.

"Hmph, relax, I'm afterall a low level emperor. Even if the other races have special techniques, they may be able to defeat me, but it's impossible for them to kill me." The youth shook his head confidently. "This is my opportunity to enter the upper echelon of the race, I cannot slack off."

The two underlings listened obediently.

"Yan Ji main continent..." The black armored youth gazed at the vast dark universe, muttering.

****

When Xu Xin was praying for Luo Feng, the mysterious black armored youth was heading towards Yan Ji Main continent...

Luo Feng was trapped in a dangerous predicament.

...

A vast purple space gave off terrifying energy. The nine pyramids before had shot out large amounts of special weapons that floated in different positions. These special weapons, some were half meter tall puppets while another was a 100m long huge blade, another was a 0.1m tall special shaped puppet.

All sorts of shapes and forms!

Scattered in the corners of the purple space, swiftly gathering, the huge energy within the space underwent a huge shocking change.

A million special weapons instantly formed eighty one fully armored giants!

Eighty one giants, standing in the corners of the purple space, surrounding the Golden horned beast.

The shortest giant was 8m while the tallest was 80m.

"This is..." The beast floated in space. Its dark gold eyes were

calmly analyzing the situtaion. He felt shocked within, "The countless weapons that gathered earlier, they seem to be made of G grade metals. These eighty one giants...they use G grade metals. Even if they aren't pinnacle G grade, they would still be worth over ten billion mixed elements."

G grade metal was very expensive.

Like the blood shadow blade and six edged shield he specially ordered, they were both made of G grade metals. Emperor level warriors normally used G grade metals. Afterall, F grade metals couldn't withstand an emperor's battle. To actually fight properly at that level...one had to use top level G grade metals.

Naturally, Luo Feng only bought a blade and shield. With his discounts, he only spent about six million points.

Just a blade and shield was more expensive than the Yun Mo planet ship.

G grade was obviously much more expensive than F9 grade metals.

Emperor undyings normally only used G grade for little items, as they couldn't afford to make a ship out of it. That would be something only the knights and above could afford. These eighty one giants before him, even if they were low grade G metals, they'd still be worth over ten billion mixed elements! This was comparable to an emperor's wealth.

"Just where is this enemy from?" Luo Feng was shocked. Smiling coldly within, "No matter what, when I kill him, all these will become mine. This is worth much more than accumulating points."

"Silver wing emperor!"

A booming voice resounded from the tallest purple giant, it spoke common automaton language.

The golden horned beast turned to face that purple giant. Compared to the over 100km long beast, that 80m tall giant was but a little person.

"Speak." The beast spoke automaton language.

"You've collected 530,000 of my puppets. If you return them to me, I'm willing to release you." The purple giant looked up at the huge beast. "You should know that my scanning device's capabilities far exceeds yours. You won't be able to detect me, but I can easily find you."

The Beast was silent, its dark gold eyes gazing coldly at the giant.

"My eighty one giants...they are my final trump card, the nine Absolute god country's eighty one gods." The giant continued. "Why call them gods, because within this god country...every one of them has low level emperor strength, and this is individually. If I unleash my techniques within here, even if you were an emperor

with an undying body, you'd still be heavily injured. You'd lose part of your undying body and it would take millions to tens of millions of years to recover."

"If we fight it out."

"It's not worth it."

"As long as you return the puppets, I will release you from the nine Absolute god country and let you leave safely." The purple giant said.

The beast stared at the eighty one giants.

Gods?

Low emperor level strength?

"Whether we have a truce or fight it out, it's up to you silver wing emperor." The giant said.

...

In the distant control room, the automaton youth Ci Wei Ka revealed a demonic smile. "Stupid punk, when you return the puppets to me, I'll teach you a good lesson. While destroying your body, I'll break your world ring and chase that human sector lord out. Getting his treasures is my goal."

"However, the 530,000 puppets are top class puppets. I spent eight hundred million indigo gems. It would take over ten million indigo gems to repair them as well. Afterall they are slightly damaged, their core body should still be ok. These top level puppets in the hands of a beast, it's an absolute waste."

Indigo gems were the highest currency of the automaton race.

Compared to the human currency.

Two indigo gems were about the price of one mixed element.

Naturally, as the enemy was from another race, each currency couldn't work with each other. Some warriors may barter in private, two indigo gems for one mixed element, this was just a rough estimate of the amount. When they truly bartered... naturally many other factors were involved.

******

The beast observed.

This nine absolute god country was not a true god country. It was only in name, and its core was still the nine floating pyramids.

Howl...the beast roared and the eighty one automaton gods moved to surround it.

Big trouble.

Every one of them had low emperor level strength. With eighty one of them pressuring him, it was akin to a pinnacle emperor. What's more, would they not have special abilities hidden? The controller had even said there were special techniques he could use.

"Fight or truce..." The largest god looked at the Golden horned beast.

"Automaton undying, do you think I'll be as stupid as you." The beast let out a roar.

"Your answer has disappointed me."

"So...Enjoy the nine absolute god country."

"You are the first one to make me use this, you should feel honored." The purple giant spoke. As it finished speaking, the eighty one gods immediately gave off terrifying energies, each becoming beams of light and shooting at the beast from all directions.

The beast looked up and howled.

Hua!

Flapping the Sha Wu wings, it left three warps in space and instantly dodged the twelve gods attacking it, rushing straight to the corner of the god country.

"Automaton idiot, do you really think I will clash head on with them? Would I be that stupid to fight against G grade metal gods. My advantage is my speed, even a pinnacle emperor, without teleportation will never match the Golden horned beast." While chatting with the automaton undying earlier, Luo Feng had devised a plan.

Dodge! Dodge! And keep dodging!

The eighty one gods were obviously clumsy and stupid, and were unable to surround the nimble beast.

"Let’s first tear apart this god country."

The beast unleashed its wings and flew to the side of the god country, immediately unleashing Moon policy’s first form. Its wings acted like blades and slashed through anything in its path, the space itself was torn apart and a silver flash slashed at the sides of the purple space.

...

"God country...Trap!" The distant Ci Wei Ka muttered softly, mocking, "This is a powerful weapon the master created, you can

dream on about destroying that easily."

Within the god country.

As the beast slashed at the sides, large amounts of purple threads shot out suddenly within the space. Countless threads wrapped about...at close distance, even the beast couldn't avoid them.

Howl...The beast howled and struggled.

The Sha Wu wings flapped and slashed large amounts of the threads, it just began to flee when more threads appeared.

...

"God country...Tear!" Ci Wei Ka muttered, controlling the eighty one gods.

Within the nine Absolute god country.

The eighty one gods waved their arms like blades. Even though it seemed like a simple slash...with eighty one slashes ripping through the space itself and rushing at the beast. While in flight, the eighty one slashes began to meld together, forming one huge blurry blade. Also, endless amounts of purple energy poured into the slash from the space itself, causing it to get clearer.

Finally, it formed a 300m long true blade slash.

As it flew, very thin tears appeared in the space itself.

"What is this?" The Golden horned best was feeling rage and helpless against the countless purple threads. However, after seeing that 300m normal looking blade fly at it, its eyes revealed a look of seriousness, it quickly closed its wings and wrapped itself within.

Table of Contents

- Swallowed Star
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 701: Mad Explosions
  - Chapter 702: Luo Ke Holy Water
  - Chapter 703: Knight's Visit
  - Chapter 704: Delivery
  - Chapter 705: Earth! Earth!
  - Chapter 706: Discussion
  - Chapter 707: A Letter
  - Chapter 708: Mobilization
  - Chapter 709: Arrival
  - Chapter 710: Knight's Punishment
  - Chapter 711: Unstable Situation
  - Chapter 712: 9 Blade Knight
  - Chapter 713: Hong's Encounters
  - Chapter 714: Earth's Secret
  - Chapter 715: Luo Feng's Choice
  - Chapter 716: Hong Alliance?
  - Chapter 717: Struggle
  - Chapter 718: La Peter
  - Chapter 719: Mission Completion Rate
  - Chapter 720: 3rd Level
  - Chapter 721: Demon Blood Emperor and Luo Feng
  - Chapter 722: Luo Feng's Judgment
  - Chapter 723: 4th Level Mission
  - Chapter 724: Grey Snow World
  - Chapter 725: Family Leader Luo Feng
  - Chapter 726: End of Show
  - Chapter 727: Of All Virtues, Filial Piety is First
  - Chapter 728: Safe Haven Primal Chaos City
  - Chapter 729: Teacher's Gift
  - Chapter 730: Beast God 7 Techniques
  - Chapter 731: Training Way of Life
  - Chapter 732: Attempting The Heavenly Bridge
  - Chapter 733: Explode! Explode! Explode!

Chapter 734: Huge Shocks
Chapter 735: Storm
Chapter 736: Thirst for Talents
Chapter 737: Primal Chaos City Leader
Chapter 738: Completion
Chapter 739: Domain Lord Qualification Battles
Chapter 740: Star Eating Plant
Chapter 741: 800 years
Chapter 742: True Disciple
Chapter 743: Sector Lord Resource Rewards
Chapter 744: Primal Region Sector Lord
Chapter 745: Secret
Chapter 746: Shi Wu Wing
Chapter 747: Universe Limit
Chapter 748: A Long 300 Years
Chapter 749: Leaving Primal Chaos City
Chapter 750: Luo Feng's Bug Army
Chapter 751: Wu Long Starfield
Chapter 752: Silver Armor
Chapter 753: Cang Bird Star
Chapter 754: Sector Lord General
Chapter 755: Secrets of the Territory
Chapter 756: Integration
Chapter 757: AAA God Base
Chapter 758: Collapse
Chapter 759: Danger
Chapter 760: Kicking a Metal Board?
Chapter 761: Luo Feng's Blade
Chapter 762: Contribution Points
Chapter 763: Shattered Star System
Chapter 764: Lei Quan Race
Chapter 765: 1st Batch of Contribution Points
Chapter 766: Half a Year
Chapter 767: Sworn Enemy
Chapter 768: Annihilation
Chapter 769: Sinister Tactics
Chapter 770: Invitation
Chapter 771: Special Reward from Demon Race
Chapter 772: Prey

Chapter 773: The Blooming Star Eating Plant
Chapter 774: Quick End
Chapter 775: Going Alone
Chapter 776: Yan Ji Continent
Chapter 777: Nuo Lan Shan?
Chapter 778: Nuo Lan Shan's Shock
Chapter 779: Traitor
Chapter 780: Expedition
Chapter 781: Ants
Chapter 782: Hundred Years
Chapter 783: Testing His Blade
Chapter 784: Slash!
Chapter 785: Deserve To Die Even More
Chapter 786: Battle On the Lake
Chapter 787: Peculiar Beast
Chapter 788: Luo Feng's Problem
Chapter 789: Sha Wu Wings
Chapter 790: Creating Techniques on Fog Island
Chapter 791: 1,000 Years, Progress
Chapter 792: Home, Moon
Chapter 793: Yan Ji Main Continent
Chapter 794: Accumulating Contribution Points
Chapter 795: Eliminate Early
Chapter 796: Vanishing Without a Trace
Chapter 797: Walking Alongside the River
Chapter 798: Trouble
Chapter 799: Nine Absolute God Country
Chapter 800: Pressured